

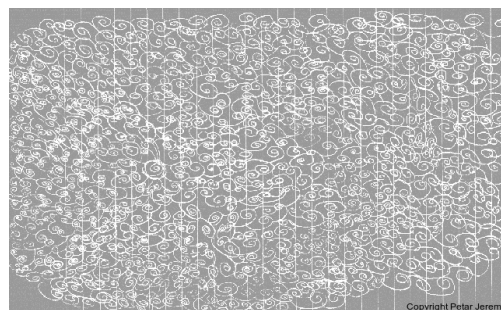
Nonlinear Finite Elements: Modeling and Simulation of Earthquakes, Soils, Structures and their Interaction

Prof. Dr. **Boris Jeremić**; Борис Јерemiћ

University of California, Davis, USA

with significant contributions, as noted in Chapters, by:

Prof. Dr. Zhaohui Yang 杨朝晖 University of Alaska, USA	Dr. Zhao Cheng 程昭 Itasca International Inc., USA	Dr. Guanzhou Jie 揭冠周 Wells Fargo Securities, USA
Dr. Nima Tafazzoli نیما تفضلی Tetra Tech EBA, CAN	Dr. Matthias Preisig GeoMod, CHE	Dr. Panagiota Tasiopoulou Παναγιώτα Τασιπούλου Fugro, GRC
Dr. Federico Pisanò NGI, USA	Prof. Dr. José Abell <i>José Abell</i> University of the Andes, CHL	Mr. Kohei Watanabe 渡邊 航平 Shimizu Corporation, JPN
Dr. Yuan Feng 冯源 TuSimple, USA	Prof. Dr. Sumeet Kumar Sinha सुमित कुमार सिन्हा University of New Delhi, IND	Ms. Fatemah Behbehani فاطمة بهبهاني UC, San Diego, USA
Prof. Dr. Han Yang 杨涵 University of Tianjin, CHN	Dr. Hexiang Wang 王和祥 Berkshire Hathaway Inc., USA	Dr. Katarzyna Staszewska Gdańsk UT, POL



Version: 3Jul2025, 10:19

Copyright by Boris Jeremić

ISBN: 978-0-692-19875-9

Typeset in L^AT_EX

<http://sokocalo.engr.ucdavis.edu/~jeremic/LectureNotes/>



Motivation and Inspiration

The main motivation for development of the Ξ system, comprised of these lecture notes and accompanying modeling tools, computational libraries and visualization tools, is to help research and teach modeling and simulation for civil engineering mechanics problems. Focus is on development and use of methods that reduce Kolmogorov complexity and modeling uncertainty. In other words, focus is on development and use of methods that predict and inform rather than fit. These lecture notes, in particular, are being developed to document research, teaching and practical problem solving work for Real-ESSI problems (Realistic modeling and simulation of Earthquakes, Soils, Structures and their Interaction). Almost all of the theories, formulations and algorithms described here can be directly analyzed using Real-ESSI Simulator system (<http://real-essi.info/> ; <http://real-essi.us/>) on local computers or on Cloud Computers (Amazon Web Services, AWS, on Marketplace, search for ESSI). A number of theories and formulations, related to Real-ESSI problems, developed by us and others, as referenced, are collected within these Lecture Notes in order to have one location, one write-up, with all/most necessary material for the analysis of ESSI problems. These Lecture Notes are in perpetual development, and chapters and sections are being edited and added as you read this. In that sense, these Lecture Notes are not "polished" and there are some rough edges, however improvement work is underway.

Work on these lecture notes was inspired by a number of books and lecture notes that I have enjoyed over many years, (Bathe, 1982), (Bathe and Wilson, 1976), (Felippa, 1992b, 1989, 1993; Felippa and Park, 1995), (Willam, 1993), (Sture, 1993), (Lubliner, 1990), (Crisfield, 1991), (Chen and Han, 1988a), (Zienkiewicz and Taylor, 1991a,b), (Argyris and Mlejnek, 1991), (Malvern, 1969), (Saouma, 1992-2013), (Dunica and Kolundžija, 1986), (Kojić, 1997), (Hjelmstad, 1997), (Oberkampf et al., 2002). I particularly enjoyed book by Bathe (1982), the only one I had partial access to in the late '80s, with all the examples that could be worked out on paper. In '89 I managed to purchase a used book by Zienkiewicz (1977) for US\$50, from my first salary as a young engineer in Energoprojekt Company, from a colleague. In the early '90s, I was lucky to get exposed to early, draft versions of books by Kojić (1993); Kojić (1997). Few years later, I enjoyed lectures and lecture notes by Felippa (1992b, 1989, 1993); Felippa and Park (1995), Willam (1993), and Sture (1993).

Current version of lecture notes, the one in front of you, aims to extend concepts described by my Teachers and Professors. Presented formulations and implementations are available within the Real-ESSI Simulator <http://real-essi.info/>, <http://real-essi.us/>. A number of available, provided models, some very simple, some more sophisticated, and some very sophisticated, can be analyzed and results visualized using Real-ESSI Simulator on local computers or on Cloud Computers (Amazon Web Services, AWS).

Dedication

This book is dedicated to friends, colleagues, supporters, promoters that I had a privilege to know and work with over last many years, and that are not with us anymore.

May they rest in peace!

Robert P. Kennedy, 1939-2018

"Response of a soil structure system is nonlinear, and I would really like to know what that response is!"

"There are engineers and then there are Engineers!"



Nebojša Orbović, Небојша Орбовић, 1962-2021

"As an engineer, I have to know, with good accuracy, what will happen to the structure during loading, and will use modeling and analysis to find out, hence verification and validation for modeling and analysis is really important"

"As an engineer, I have to know what are response sensitivities to modeling parameters."



Contributions

Useful contributions were also made by the following students, colleagues and collaborators (other than those listed on the front page): Mr. Babak Kamranimoghadam (بابک کامرانی), Mr. Chang-Gyun Jeong (정창균), Mr. Chao Luo (罗超), Mr. Max Sieber, Mr. Antonio Felipe Salazar, and Mr. Borko Miladinović (Борко Миладиновић).

Comments

Comments, corrections, edits &c. are much appreciated! Special thanks to (in chronological order): Miroslav Živković (Мирослав Живковић), Dmitry J. Nicolsky, Andrzej Niemunis, Robbie Jaeger, Yiorgos Perikleous (Γιώργος Περικλέους), Robert Roche, Viktor Vlaski, Edison Lam, Dr. Sukumar Baishya, Marco Andreini, Francisco "Paco" Beltran.

The best way to send a comment on these lecture notes is by email, however please read the following [NOTE](#) about sending an email to me. It would be great if you can place the following in the subject line of your email: Draft CompMech Lecture Notes. This will be much appreciated as it will help me filter your email and place it in Draft_CompMech_Lecture_Notes email-box that I regularly read.

Acknowledgement

Many developments described in these lecture notes, developed over many years, were made possible in collaborators with, and with financial support from the: US-DOE, US-NRC, CNSC/CCSN, US-NSF, CalTrans, CH-ENSI/IFSN, ATC/US-FEMA, UN-IAEA, US-ACE, and NASA. Their support and collaboration is much appreciated!

Software

Theoretical and computational developments described in these lecture notes are implemented in a program Real-ESSI Simulator (<http://real-essi.info/>; (<http://real-essi.us/>; http://sokocalo.engr.ucdavis.edu/~jeremic/Real_ESSI_Simulator/). The Real ESSI Simulator (Realistic Modeling and Simulation of Earthquakes, Soils, Structures and their Interaction), (pronunciation of ESSI is similar to easy, as in "as easy as pie") is a software, hardware and documentation system for select level of fidelity (high, low, intermediate), high performance, time domain, nonlinear/inelastic, deterministic or probabilistic, 3D, finite element modeling and simulation of

- statics and dynamics of soil,
- statics and dynamics of rock,
- statics and dynamics of structures,
- statics of soil-structure systems, and
- dynamics of earthquake-soil-structure system interaction.

The Real-ESSI Simulator systems is used for the analysis, design and assessment of static and dynamic behavior of infrastructure objects, including buildings, bridges, dams, nuclear energy installations, tunnels, etc. The Real-ESSI Simulator develops modeling and simulations that inform and predict.

The Real-ESSI Simulator program is available in source, in executable form and as debian package at <http://real-essi.info/>, <http://real-essi.us/>. The Real ESSI Simulator system is also available for use on [Amazon Web Services Market Place](#), search for "Real ESSI" or "MS ESSI".

The name Real-ESSI, is explained in some detail in section 201.2.6 on page 710.

Distribution?

These Lecture Notes can be downloaded and distributed worldwide. If you use these Lecture Notes, please cite them as:

Boris Jeremić, Zhaohui Yang, Zhao Cheng, Guanzhou Jie, Nima Tafazzoli, Matthias Preisig, Panagiota Tasiopoulou, Federico Pisanò, José Abell, Kohei Watanabe, Yuan Feng, Sumeet Kumar Sinha, Fatemah Behbehani, Han Yang, and Hexiang Wang. *Nonlinear Finite Elements: Modeling and Simulation of Earthquakes, Soils, Structures and their Interaction*. University of California, Davis, CA, USA; 2021. ISBN: 978-0-692-19875-9

or

Jeremić et al. *Nonlinear Finite Elements: Modeling and Simulation of Earthquakes, Soils, Structures and their Interaction*. UCD, CA, USA, 2021. ISBN: 978-0-692-19875-9

Overview Table of Contents

100	Theoretical and Computational Formulations
101	Introduction
	(1996-2003-2016-2017-2018-2019-2020-2021-)
102	Finite Elements Formulation
	(1989-1994-1999-2005-2010-2011-2012-2013-2015-2016-2017-2018-2019-2020-2021-)
103	Micromechanical Origins of Elasto-Plasticity
	(1994-2002-2010-2019-2021-)
104	Small Deformation Elasto-Plasticity
	(1991-1994-2002-2006-2010-2016-2017-2018-2019-2020-2021-)
105	Probabilistic Elasto-Plasticity and Stochastic Elastic-Plastic Finite Element Method
	(2004-2006-2009-2014-2016-2017-2019-2021-)
106	Large Deformation Elasto-Plasticity
	(1996-2004-)
107	Solution of Static Equilibrium Equations
	(1994-2016-)
108	Solution of Dynamic Equations of Motion
	(1989-2006-2016-2018-2019-)
109	Earthquake Soil Structure Interaction, Theoretical Aspects
	(1989-2001-2006-2016-2018-2019-2020-2021-)
110	Parallel Computing in Computational Mechanics
	(1998-2000-2005-2015-2016-2017-2018-2019-2021-)
111	Solid, Structure – Fluid Interaction
	(2017-2019-2021-)

200	Software and Hardware Platform: Design, Development, Procurement and Use	
201	The Real ESSI Simulator System	(1986-1989-1993-1994-1996-1999-2003-2007-2019-2020-2021-)
202	Object Oriented Software Platform Design	(1992-1993-1994-1996-1999-2003-2005-2007-2008-2009-2010-2011-2015-2016-2019-)
203	Library Centric Software Platform Design	(1993-1994-1996-2005-2009-2010-2011-2019-)
204	Application Programming Interface	(2005-2009-2010-2011-2017-2019-)
205	Input, Domain Specific Language	(1991-2005-2010-2011-2012-2015-2016-2017-2018-2019-2020-2021-)
206	Output Formats	(2012-2014-2017-2019-2021-)
207	Real-ESSI Pre Processing and Model Development Methods	(2010-2015-2017-2020-2021-)
208	Real-ESSI Post Processing Methods	(2010-2014-2016-2017-2018-2019-2020-2021-)
209	Software Platform Build Process	(1993-1994-1996-1999-2003-2005-2007-2008-2009-2010-2011-2015-2017-2018-2019-2020-2021-)
210	Software Platform Procurement, Distribution	(2019-2020-2021-)
211	Cloud Computing	(2017-2018-2019-2021-2023)
212	Hardware Platform Design and Development	(1996-1999-2009-2011-)
300	Verification and Validation	
301	Verification and Validation Introduction	(2003-2007-2009-2017-)
302	Source Code Verification	(1989-1990-1994-1995-2002-2005-2007-2009-2010-2017-2019-2021-)
303	Code Stability Verification	(2002-2016-2017-2019-2021-)

Jeremić et al., Real-ESSI

304

Validation Experiments

(2021-)

305

Verification and Validation for Constitutive Problems

(1989-1991-1992-1994-1999-2003-2007-2009-2010-2017-2018-2019-2021-)

306

Verification and Validation for Static and Dynamic Finite Element Level Solution Advancement Algorithms

(1994-2003-2009-2012-2015-2017-2019-)

307

Verification and Validation for Static and Dynamic Behavior of Single Phase, Solid Elements

(1989-1994-2011-2015-2017-2019-)

308

Verification and Validation for Static and Dynamic Behavior of Structural Elements

(1986-2011-2015-2017-2019-2021-)

309

Verification and Validation for Static and Dynamic Behavior of Special Elements (Contacts/Interfaces/Joints, Gap/Frictional, Isolators)

(2010-2011-2016-2017-2019-2021-)

310

Verification and Validation for Coupled, Porous Solid – Pore Fluid Problems

(2000-2003-2007-2009-2010-2016-2017-2020-2021-)

311

Verification and Validation for Seismic Wave Propagation Problems

(1989-2000-2004-2005-2008-2009-2010-2011-2017-2018-2019-2021-)

312

Verification and Validation for Static and Dynamic Behavior of Soil-Structure-Interaction

(2012-2017-2018-2019-2021-)

313

Verification and Validation for Dynamic Solid-Fluid Interaction

(2017-2018-2019-2020-2021-)

314

Quality Management System

(2002-2005-2018-2019-2020-2021-)

315

Comparison with Other Programs

(2016-2017-2020-2021-)

400 Education, Training and Modeling, Simulation Examples

- 401 Ten Section Course on Nonlinear Finite Element Methods for Realistic Modeling and Simulation of Earthquakes, and Soils, and Structures, and their Interaction, Real-ESSI

(1998-2021-)

- 402 Ten Section Course on Dynamic Finite Element Methods for Realistic Modeling and Simulation of Earthquakes, and Soils, and Structures, and their Interaction, Real-ESSI

(1998-2021-)

- 403 Nonlinear ESSI for Professional Practice, A Short Course

(2017-2022-)

- 404 Online Education and Training

(2019-2020-2021-)

- 405 Constitutive, Material Behaviour Examples

(2016-2017-2019-2023-)

- 406 Static Examples

(2016-2017-2019-2021-)

- 407 Dynamic Examples

(2016-2017-2018-2019-2021-)

- 408 Stochastic Examples

(2018-2019-2020-2021-)

- 409 Large Scale, Realistic Examples

(2016-2018-)

- 410 Short Course Examples

(2017-2023-)

500 Application to Practical Engineering Problems

- 501 Static Soil-Pile and Soil-Pile Group Interaction in Single Phase Soils

(1999-2002-)

- 502 Earthquake Soil Structure Interaction, General Aspects

(1989-2002-2009-2010-2011-2017-2018-2019-2020-2021-)

- 503 Earthquake-Soil-Structure Interaction, Bridge Structures

(2003-2007-2011-)

504	Earthquake-Soil-Structure Interaction, Nuclear Power Plants	(2010-2011-2012-2017-2018-2019-2020-2021-2023-)
505	Liquefaction and Cyclic Mobility	(2002-2006-2009-2021-)
506	Slope Stability in 2D and 3D	(1999-2010-)
507	Concrete Structures	(1989-2017-2018-2019-2020-2021-)
508	ESSI for Concrete Dams	(2019-2020-2021-)
509	ESSI for Buildings	(2018-2019-2020-2021-)
510	Guidebook: Modeling and Simulation of Earthquake-Soil-Structure Interaction for Nuclear Energy Installations, Dams, Buildings, Bridges, Tunnels, &c.	(2016-2017-2018-2019-2020-2021-)
511	ASCE-4, Chapter on Nonlinear ESSI analysis	(2016-2020-2021-)
512	Earthquake-Soil-Structure Interaction, Core Functionality	(2017-2018-2019-2021-)
600	References	
700	Appendix	
701	Useful Formulae	(1985-1989-1993-2021-)
702	The nDarray Programming Tool	(1993-1995-1996-1999-)
703	Closed Form Gradients to the Plastic Potential Function	(1993-1994-)
704	Hyperelasticity, Detailed Derivations	(1995-1996-)
705	Body and Surface Wave Analytic Solutions	(2005-2001-2010-2011-2018-2019-2021-)

706

Body and Surface Wave Numerical Modeling

(2010-2012-2018-2019-2021-)

707

Real-ESSI Illustrative Examples

(2015-2016-2017-2018-2019-2021-)

708

Brief History of the Real-ESSI Simulator Development

(1986-)

709

Computer Programs for ESSI Analysis

(2019-)

710

Work Organization

(1989-)

711

Collected Bibliography

Contents

100	Theoretical and Computational Formulations	90
101	Introduction	
	(1996-2003-2016-2017-2018-2019-2020-2021-)	91
101.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	92
101.2	On Modeling	92
101.2.1	The Performance Challenge	93
101.2.2	Analysis Governance	93
101.3	Specialization to Computational Mechanics	95
101.3.1	Mechanics	95
101.3.2	Continuum Mechanics	95
101.3.3	Statics and Dynamics	95
101.3.4	Discretization Methods	96
101.3.5	The Solution Morass	96
101.3.6	Smooth Nonlinearities.	96
101.3.7	Rough Nonlinearities	97
101.4	Tour of Computational Mechanics	97
101.4.1	Equilibrium Path.	97
101.4.2	Special Equilibrium Points	97
101.4.2.1	Critical Points	97
101.4.2.2	Turning Points	97
101.4.2.3	Failure Points.	97
101.4.3	Generalized Response	97
101.4.4	Sources of Nonlinearities.	97
101.4.5	Simulation Process: Loading Stages, Increments and Iterations	97

102	Finite Elements Formulation	
	(1989-1994-1999-2005-2010-2011-2012-2013-2015-2016-2017-2018-2019-2020-2021-)	99
102.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	100
102.2	Formulation of the Continuum Mechanics Incremental Equations of Motion	100
102.3	Finite Element Discretization	104
102.3.1	Static Analysis: Internal and External Loads.	112
102.4	Isoparametric Solid Finite Elements.	114
102.4.1	8 Node Brick	114
102.4.2	Collapsed 8 Node Brick	115
102.4.3	20 Node Brick	116
102.4.4	27 Node Brick	118
102.4.5	Isoparametric 8 – 20 Node Finite Element	119
102.4.6	Isoparametric 8 - 27 Node Finite Element	122
102.4.7	Surface Loads for Solid Bricks	124
102.5	Numerical Integration for Solid Brick Elements	126
102.6	Two Node, 3D Truss Finite Element	126
102.7	3D Beam-Column Finite Element, 12 Degrees of Freedom	126
102.8	3D Beam-Column Finite Element, 9 Degrees of Freedom.	129
102.9	Shear Beam Finite Element.	135
102.10	Quadrilateral Shell Finite Element with 6DOFs per Node	135
102.11	Seismic Isolator and Dissipator Finite Elements	136
102.11.1	Base Isolation Systems	136
102.11.2	Base Dissipator Systems.	137
102.11.3	Two Node, 3D, Rubber Isolator Finite Element	137
102.11.4	Two Node, 3D, Frictional Pendulum Finite Element	137
102.12	Fully Coupled, Porous Solid – Pore Fluid Finite Elements	137
102.12.1	u-p-U Formulation	137
102.12.1.1	Background	137
102.12.1.2	Governing Equations of Porous Media	138
102.12.1.3	Modified Governing Equations.	140
102.12.1.4	Numerical Solution of the u-p-U Governing Equations	143
102.12.1.5	Matrix form of the governing equations..	148
102.12.1.6	Choice of shape functions	150
102.12.1.7	8 Node $u-p-U$ Brick	152

102.12.1.8	20 Node $u-p-U$ Brick.	152
102.12.1.9	27 Node $u-p-U$ Brick.	152
102.12.2	$u-p-U$ Formulation for Partially Saturated, Unsaturated Material	152
102.12.3	$u-p$ Formulation	152
102.12.3.1	Governing Equations of Porous Media	152
102.12.3.2	Numerical Solutions of the Governing Equations	153
102.12.3.3	8 Node $u-p$ Brick.	156
102.13	Material and Geometric Non-Linear Finite Element Formulation	156
102.13.1	Introduction	156
102.13.2	Equilibrium Equations.	156
102.13.3	Formulation of Non-Linear Finite Element Equations	158
102.13.4	Computational Domain in Incremental Analysis	159
102.13.4.1	Total Lagrangian Format	163
102.13.5	Finite Element Formulations	164
102.13.5.1	Strong Form	164
102.13.5.2	Weak Form	164
102.13.5.3	Linearized Form	165
102.13.5.4	Finite Element Form	166
102.14	Cosserat Continuum Finite Element Formulation	166
102.14.1	Introduction	166
102.14.1.1	3D Finite Element Formulation for Cosserat Continua	166
102.14.1.2	Cosserat Elastoplastic Algorithm	167
102.14.2	Cosserat Elasticity	167
102.14.2.1	Stress.	167
102.14.2.2	Couple Stress.	167
102.14.2.3	Generalized Stress	168
102.14.2.4	Cosserat Strain	169
102.14.2.5	Curvature	169
102.14.2.6	Generalized Strain	169
102.14.2.7	Constitutive Equations	169
102.14.2.8	Relation to the classical elasticity tangent	170
102.14.2.9	Flatten the tensor of force tangent and curvature tangent	170
102.14.3	3D Finite Element Formulation	171
102.14.3.1	Force Equilibrium	171

102.14.4	Momentum Equilibrium	171
102.14.4.1	Illustration in 2D	171
102.14.4.2	Strain-Displacement Relationship	172
102.14.4.3	Isoparametric 8 Node Brick	174
103	Micromechanical Origins of Elasto-Plasticity	
	(1994-2002-2010-2019-2021-)	176
103.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	177
103.2	Friction	177
103.2.1	Early Works	177
103.3	Particle Contact Mechanics	177
103.3.1	Particle Contact Mechanics, Axial Behavior	177
103.3.2	Particle Contact Mechanics, Shear Behavior	178
103.4	Dilatancy.	178
104	Small Deformation Elasto-Plasticity	
	(1991-1994-2002-2006-2010-2016-2017-2018-2019-2020-2021-)	179
104.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	180
104.2	Elasto-plasticity	180
104.2.1	Constitutive Relations for Infinitesimal Plasticity.	180
104.2.2	On Integration Algorithms	182
104.2.3	Midpoint Rule Algorithm	183
104.2.3.1	Accuracy Analysis	184
104.2.3.2	Numerical Stability Analysis	191
104.2.4	Crossing the Yield Surface	199
104.2.5	Singularities in the Yield Surface.	201
104.2.5.1	Corner Problem	201
104.2.5.2	Apex Problem	203
104.2.5.3	Influence Regions in Meridian Plane	204
104.3	A Forward Euler (Explicit) Algorithm	206
104.3.1	Continuum Tangent Stiffness Tensor.	206
104.4	A Backward Euler (Implicit) Algorithm	207
104.4.1	Single Vector Return Algorithm.	207
104.4.2	Backward Euler Algorithms: Starting Points	210
104.4.2.1	Single Vector Return Algorithm Starting Point.	211

104.4.3	Consistent Tangent Stiffness Tensor	212
104.4.3.1	Single Vector Return Algorithm.. . . .	213
104.4.4	Gradients to the Potential Function	215
104.4.4.1	Analytical Gradients	216
104.4.4.2	Finite Difference Gradients.	218
104.5	Line Search Technique for Constitutive Elastic-Plastic Integration	220
104.6	Elastic and Elastic–Plastic Material Models for Solids	220
104.6.1	Elasticity.	220
104.6.1.1	Elastic Model.	222
104.6.1.2	Non–linear Elastic Model #1	223
104.6.1.3	Non–linear Elastic Model #2	223
104.6.1.4	Lade's Non–linear Elastic Model	223
104.6.1.5	Cross Anisotropic Linear Elastic Model	223
104.6.2	Yield Functions	223
104.6.3	Plastic Flow Directions	224
104.6.4	Hardening–Softening Evolution Laws	225
104.6.5	Tresca Model	226
104.6.6	von Mises Model	226
104.6.6.1	Yield and Plastic Potential Functions: von Mises Model (form I)	229
104.6.6.2	Yield and Plastic Potential Functions: von Mises Model (form II)	230
104.6.6.3	Hardening and Softening Functions: von Mises Model	231
104.6.7	Drucker-Prager Model	232
104.6.7.1	Yield and Plastic Potential Functions: Drucker-Prager Model (form I) . .	234
104.6.7.2	Yield and Plastic Potential Functions: Drucker-Prager Model (form II) . .	235
104.6.7.3	Hardening and Softening Functions: Drucker-Prager Model	237
104.6.7.4	Federico's Description of a Drucker–Prager Kinematic Hardenig Model . .	239
104.6.7.5	Han's Description of Drucker–Prager Model with Armstrong–Frederick Kinematic Hardening	241
104.6.8	Hyperbolic Drucker Prager Model	243
104.6.8.1	Original Yield Function and Hyperbolic Function	243
104.6.8.2	Hyperbolic Drucker Prager Model	244
104.6.8.3	Modified Hyperbolic Drucker Prager	244
104.6.8.4	The Non-Associative Plastic Potential Function.	246

104.6.8.5	Han's Description of Hyperbolic Drucker–Prager Model with Armstrong–Frederick Kinematic Hardening	247
104.6.9	Rounded Mohr-Coulomb Model	250
104.6.10	Modified Cam-Clay Model	251
104.6.10.1	Critical State	252
104.6.10.2	Elasticity	252
104.6.10.3	Yield Function	253
104.6.10.4	Plastic Flow	253
104.6.10.5	Evolution Law	254
104.6.10.6	Yield and Plastic Potential Functions: Cam-Clay Model.	254
104.6.11	SaniSand2004 (aka Dafalias-Manzari) Model	255
104.6.11.1	Critical State	255
104.6.11.2	Elasticity	256
104.6.11.3	Yield Function	256
104.6.11.4	Plastic Flow	258
104.6.11.5	Evolution Laws	258
104.6.11.6	Analytical Derivatives for the Implicit Algorithm	259
104.6.12	SaniSand2008 (aka SANISAND) Model	262
104.6.13	SANICLAY Model	262
104.6.14	G/G_{max} Modeling	262
104.6.15	Pisanò Elastic-Plastic Model with Vanishing Elastic Region (for G/G_{max} Modeling)	262
104.6.15.1	Frictional and viscous dissipative mechanisms	265
104.6.15.2	Bounding surface frictional model with vanishing elastic domain	266
104.6.15.3	The role of linear viscous damping	273
104.6.15.4	Model performance and calibration	275
104.6.15.5	Parametric analysis	280
104.6.15.6	Concluding remarks	284
104.6.15.7	Derivations of Various Equations	285
104.6.16	Cosserat Elastoplasticity	287
104.6.16.1	Elasticity Law	287
104.6.16.2	Yield Criterion	287
104.6.16.3	Plastic Flow	288
104.6.16.4	Hardening Rule	288

104.6.16.5	Forward Euler Algorithm	289
104.6.16.6	Explicit Formulation	289
104.6.16.7	Backward Euler, Implicit Algorithm	290
104.6.17	Cosserat von-Mises Elastoplastic Model	290
104.6.17.1	Cosserat Plastic Model	290
104.6.17.2	Analysis of Cosserat Elastoplastic Solids.	292
104.6.18	Accelerated Constitutive Models.	292
104.6.18.1	Elasto-plasticity	294
104.6.18.2	Elastic-Plastic Constitutive Models	294
104.6.18.3	von Mises Model	295
104.6.18.4	Nonlinear Elastic Model in 1D based on Armstrong Frederick Equation .	299
104.6.18.5	Drucker-Prager Model	299
104.6.18.6	Modified Cam-Clay Model	303
104.6.18.7	Comparison of Computational Time of Accelerated Constitutive Models with NewTemplate3Dep.	305
104.7	Elastic-Plastic Models for Contacts, Joints and Interfaces	306
104.7.1	Experimental Data	306
104.7.2	Axial Contact, Joint, Interface	311
104.7.2.1	Penalty Method	311
104.7.2.2	Hard Contact/Joint/Interface	315
104.7.2.3	Soft Contact/Joint/Interface	316
104.7.3	Shear Contact/Joint/Interface	319
104.7.3.1	Interface Shear Zone	319
104.7.3.2	Elastic Perfectly Plastic Shear (EPPS) Model	321
104.7.3.3	Nonlinear Hardening Shear (NLHS) Model	321
104.7.3.4	Nonlinear Hardening Softening Shear (NLHSS) Model	324
104.7.3.5	EPPS Model	327
104.7.3.6	NLHS Model	328
104.7.3.7	NLHSS Model	328
104.8	Inelastic Behavior and Models for Rock	329
104.8.1	Overview of Intact Rock Behavior	329
104.8.1.1	Pressure Sensitivity	331
104.8.1.2	Dilative and Compactive Response.	337
104.8.1.3	Anisotropy	339

104.8.1.4	High Rate Elastic-Plastic Loading	344
104.8.1.5	Coupling with Pore Fluid Pressure and Temperature	348
104.8.2	Uncertainty and Variability of Rock Behavior	353
104.8.3	Effects of Shock Loading on Intact Rock Behavior	354
104.8.3.1	Shock Waves of First and Second Kind	355
104.8.3.2	Hugoniot	357
104.8.4	Material Modeling of Rock	358
104.8.4.1	Lawrence Livermore National Laboratory Models	358
104.8.4.2	Hoek and Brown Model	358
104.8.4.3	Other Models.	359
104.8.5	Model Calibration / Testing Devices	361
104.8.6	Influence of Pore Fluid Pressure and Temperature on Rock Response	363
104.9	Inelastic Behavior and Models for Concrete Beams, Walls and Shells	363
104.9.1	Uniaxial Material Model for Steel	363
104.9.2	3D Plastic Damage Concrete Material Model, Faria-Oliver-Cervera.	365
104.10	Calibration of Elastic-Plastic Material Models	368
104.10.1	Calibration of Elastic-Plastic Material Models, Soil	368
104.10.2	Calibration of Elastic-Plastic Material Models, Rock	368
104.10.3	Calibration of Elastic-Plastic Material Models, Contact/Joint/Interface	368
104.10.4	Calibration of Elastic-Plastic Material Models, Concrete	368
104.10.5	Calibration of Elastic-Plastic Material Models, Steel	368
104.11	Energy Dissipation Calculations for Solids	368
104.11.1	Introduction	368
104.11.2	Theoretical and Computational Formulations	371
104.11.2.1	Thermo-Mechanical Theory	371
104.11.2.2	Plastic Free Energy	372
104.11.2.3	Plastic Dissipation	375
104.11.2.4	Energy Computation in Finite Elements	377
104.11.3	Numerical Studies	379
104.11.3.1	Elastic Material	379
104.11.3.2	von Mises Plasticity	381
104.11.3.3	Drucker–Prager Plasticity	387
104.11.4	Conclusions	391

104.12	Energy Dissipation Calculations for Structures	393
104.12.1	Introduction	393
104.12.2	Theoretical and Computational Formulations	395
104.12.2.1	Thermomechanical Framework	395
104.12.2.2	Plastic Free Energy	397
104.12.2.3	Energy Dissipation in Beam-Column Element.	398
104.12.3	Numerical Studies	406
104.12.3.1	Steel Column	406
104.12.3.2	Plain Concrete Column	409
104.12.3.3	Reinforced Concrete Column	411
104.12.3.4	Steel Frame	414
104.12.4	Conclusions	415
104.13	Localization of Deformation	417
105	Probabilistic Elasto-Plasticity and Stochastic Elastic-Plastic Finite Element Method	
	(2004-2006-2009-2014-2016-2017-2019-2021-)	418
105.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	419
105.2	Probabilistic Elasto-Plasticity, 1D FPK Formulation	419
105.2.1	Probabilistic Elasto-Plasticity: Introduction	419
105.2.2	Probabilistic Elasto-Plasticity: General Formulation	423
105.2.3	Probabilistic Elasto-Plasticity: Elastic-Plastic Probabilistic 1-D Constitutive Incremental Equation	429
105.2.4	Probabilistic Elasto-Plasticity: Initial and Boundary Conditions for the Prob- abilistic Elastic-Plastic PDE	432
105.2.5	Probabilistic Elasto-Plasticity: Fokker-Planck-Kolmogorov Equation for Prob- abilistic Elasticity and Elasto-Plasticity in 1-D	433
105.2.6	Probabilistic Elasto-Plasticity: Example Problem Statements	434
105.2.7	Probabilistic Elasto-Plasticity: Determination of Coefficients for Fokker- Planck-Kolmogorov Equation	435
105.2.8	Probabilistic Elasto-Plasticity: Results and Verifications of Example Problems 437	
105.2.9	Problem I	438
105.2.10	Problem II	440
105.2.11	Problem III	442

105.3	Probabilistic Yielding and Cyclic Loading, 1D FPK Formulation	444
105.3.1	Fokker–Planck–Kolmogorov Approach to Probabilistic Elasto–Plasticity . .	451
105.3.2	Elastic–Perfectly Plastic Material	455
105.3.2.1	Probability Density Function	456
105.3.2.2	Case of Increasing Strain Loops	458
105.3.2.3	Case of Constant Strain Loops	459
105.3.2.4	Monotonic Loading	459
105.3.2.5	Hardening Material	462
105.3.2.6	Isotropic Hardening	464
105.3.2.7	Kinematic Hardening	466
105.4	Hermite Polynomial Chaos Karhunen–Loève Expansion	469
105.5	Galerkin Stochastic Elastoplastic Finite Element Formulations.	471
105.5.1	Stochastic Elastoplastic Finite Element Method	471
105.5.2	Stochastic Elastoplastic Finite Element Method, 1D Polynomial Chaos Formulation	472
105.5.3	Probabilistic Elastoplastic Constitutive Modeling, 1D Polynomial Chaos Formulation	474
105.5.4	Stochastic Elastoplastic Finite Element Method, 3D Polynomial Chaos Formulation	476
105.5.5	Probabilistic Elastoplastic Constitutive Modeling, 3D Polynomial Chaos Formulation	476
105.6	Sobol' Indices Computation Using Polynomial Chaos Expansion	476
106	Large Deformation Elasto-Plasticity	
	(1996-2004-)	482
106.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	483
106.2	Continuum Mechanics Preliminaries: Kinematics.	483
106.2.1	Deformation	483
106.2.2	Deformation Gradient	484
106.2.3	Strain Tensors, Deformation Tensors and Stretch	486
106.2.4	Rate of Deformation Tensor	489
106.3	Constitutive Relations: Hyperelasticity.	492
106.3.1	Introduction	492
106.3.2	Isotropic Hyperelasticity	493
106.3.3	Volumetric–Isochoric Decomposition of Deformation	496

106.3.4	Simo–Serrin’s Formulation	496
106.3.5	Stress Measures	498
106.3.6	Tangent Stiffness Operator	499
106.3.7	Isotropic Hyperelastic Models	500
106.3.7.1	Ogden Model	501
106.3.7.2	Neo–Hookean Model	502
106.3.7.3	Mooney–Rivlin Model	502
106.3.7.4	Logarithmic Model	503
106.3.7.5	Simo–Pister Model	504
106.4	Finite Deformation Hyperelasto–Plasticity	504
106.4.1	Introduction	504
106.4.2	Kinematics	505
106.4.3	Constitutive Relations	507
106.4.4	Implicit Integration Algorithm	508
106.4.5	Algorithmic Tangent Stiffness Tensor	518
107	Solution of Static Equilibrium Equations	
	(1994–2016–)	522
107.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	523
107.2	The Residual Force Equations	523
107.3	Constraining the Residual Force Equations	523
107.4	Load Control	526
107.5	Displacement Control	526
107.6	Generalized, Hyper–Spherical Arc–Length Control	526
107.6.1	Traversing Equilibrium Path in Positive Sense	529
107.6.1.1	Positive External Work	529
107.6.1.2	Angle Criterion	530
107.6.2	Predictor step	531
107.6.3	Automatic Increments	532
107.6.4	Convergence Criteria	532
107.6.5	The Algorithm Progress	536
108	Solution of Dynamic Equations of Motion	
	(1989–2006–2016–2018–2019–)	537
108.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	538
108.2	The Principle of Virtual Displacements in Dynamics	538

108.3	Direct Integration Methods for the Equations of Dynamic Equilibrium.	538
108.3.1	Newmark Integrator	538
108.3.2	HHT Integrator	539
108.4	Synthetic Viscous Damping for Solids and Structures	540
108.4.1	Synthetic Viscous Damping Approaches	540
108.4.2	Caughey Damping 2 nd Order, aka Rayleigh Damping	541
108.4.3	Caughey Damping 3 rd Order	543
108.4.4	Caughey Damping 4 th Order	544
109	Earthquake Soil Structure Interaction, Theoretical Aspects	
	(1989-2001-2006-2016-2018-2019-2020-2021-)	546
109.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	547
109.2	Seismic Energy Propagation and Dissipation	547
109.2.1	Seismic energy input into SSI system	547
109.2.2	Seismic Energy Dissipation in SSI System	547
109.2.2.1	Energy Dissipation by Plasticity	548
109.2.2.2	Energy Dissipation by Viscous Coupling	552
109.2.2.3	Numerical Energy Dissipation and Production	552
109.2.2.4	Energy Dissipation by Nonlinearities in Soil/Rock	552
109.2.2.5	Energy Dissipation by Nonlinearities in Soil/Rock – Foundation Interface Zone	553
109.2.2.6	Energy Dissipation by Nonlinearities in Seismic Isolators	553
109.2.2.7	Energy Dissipation by Nonlinearities in Structures, Systems and Components 553	
109.2.2.8	Numerical Energy Dissipation and Production	553
109.2.3	Seismic Motions: Empirical Models	553
109.2.4	1D/1C Wave Propagation Modeling	554
109.2.5	Seismic Motions: 3D/3C Analytic Wave Propagation Modeling	557
109.2.6	Seismic Motions: Large Scale Geophysical Models	561
109.2.6.1	Regional Seismic Motion Modeling using Serpentine Wave Propagation, SW4	561
109.2.7	Site Response	562
109.2.8	Seismic Motion Incoherence	562
109.2.8.1	Lack of Correlation Modeling and Simulation.	563
109.2.9	Lack of Volume Change Data for Soil.	564

109.3	Earthquake Soil Structure Interaction	566
109.4	Earthquake Soil Structure Interaction Modeling Details	568
109.4.1	Seismic Motions Input into Finite Element Model	568
109.4.1.1	The Domain Reduction Method (DRM) Development	569
110	Parallel Computing in Computational Mechanics	
	(1998-2000-2005-2015-2016-2017-2018-2019-2021-)	579
110.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	580
110.2	Introduction	580
110.2.1	High Performance Computing on DMPs, SMPs, GPGPUs, FPGA	580
110.2.1.1	Distributed Memory Parallel (SMP) Computations.	580
110.2.1.2	Shared Memory Parallel (SMP) Computations	580
110.2.1.3	General Purpose Graphical Processing Units (GPGPUs)	580
110.2.1.4	Fast Programmable Gate Arrays (FPGAs)	580
110.2.2	Parallel Computing for Elastic-Plastic Solids and Structures	580
110.2.3	Problem Requirements	580
110.2.3.1	Finite Element Computations in Geomechanics	580
110.2.3.2	Adaptive Computation	582
110.2.3.3	Multi-phase Computation	583
110.2.4	Parallel Computing Hardware	583
110.2.4.1	DMPs and SMPs	583
110.2.5	Parallel Computing Software	584
110.2.5.1	Amdahl's Law	584
110.2.5.2	Static and Dynamic Graph Partitioning	584
110.2.5.3	Real parallel and embarrassingly parallel.	584
110.2.5.4	Parallel Computing for Elastic-Plastic FEM	585
110.2.5.5	Plastic Domain Decomposition	585
110.2.5.6	Template Meta-programs	586
110.3	Plastic Domain Decomposition Algorithm	586
110.3.1	Introduction	586
110.3.2	Inelastic Parallel Finite Element	588
110.3.2.1	Adaptive Computation	590
110.3.2.2	Multiphase Computation	591
110.3.2.3	Multiconstraint Graph Partitioning.	591
110.3.2.4	Adaptive PDD Algorithm	593

110.3.3	Adaptive Multilevel Graph Partitioning Algorithm	593
110.3.3.1	Unified Repartitioning Algorithm	598
110.3.3.2	Study of ITR in ParMETIS	599
110.4	Performance Studies on PDD Algorithm	600
110.4.1	Introduction	600
110.4.2	Parallel Computers	600
110.4.3	Soil-Foundation Interaction Model	601
110.4.4	Numerical Study for ITR.	603
110.4.5	Parallel Performance Analysis	613
110.4.5.1	Soil-Foundation Model with 4,035 DOFs	614
110.4.5.2	Soil-Foundation Model with 4,938 Elements, 17,604 DOFs	619
110.4.5.3	Soil-Foundation Model with 9,297 Elements, 32,091 DOFs	624
110.4.6	Algorithm Fine-Tuning	630
110.4.7	Fine Tuning on Load Imbalance Tolerance	631
110.4.8	Globally Adaptive PDD Algorithm	635
110.4.8.1	Implementations	637
110.4.8.2	Performance Results	638
110.4.9	Scalability Study on Prototype Model.	643
110.4.9.1	3 Bent SFSI Finite Element Models	643
110.4.9.2	Scalability Runs	645
110.4.10	Conclusions	646
110.5	Application of Project-Based Iterative Methods in SFSI Problems	653
110.5.1	Introduction	653
110.5.2	Projection-Based Iterative Methods	653
110.5.2.1	Conjugate Gradient Algorithm	654
110.5.2.2	GMRES	655
110.5.2.3	BiCGStab and QMR	657
110.5.3	Preconditioning Techniques	657
110.5.4	Preconditioners	659
110.5.4.1	Jacobi Preconditioner.	659
110.5.4.2	Incomplete Cholesky Preconditioner	659
110.5.4.3	Robust Incomplete Factorization	660
110.5.5	Numerical Experiments	663
110.5.6	Conclusion and Future Work	671

110.6	Performance Study on Parallel Direct/Iterative Solving in SFSI	672
110.6.1	Parallel Sparse Direct Equation Solvers	675
110.6.1.1	General Techniques – SPOOLES	675
110.6.1.2	Frontal and Multifrontal Methods – MUMPS.	675
110.6.1.3	Supernodal Algorithm – SuperLU	678
110.6.2	Performance Study on SFSI Systems	680
110.6.2.1	Equation System	680
110.6.2.2	Performance Results	682
110.6.3	Conclusion	682
111	Solid, Structure – Fluid Interaction	
	(2017-2019-2021-)	684
111.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	685
111.2	Introduction	685
111.3	Theoretical Formulation	687
111.3.1	Solid Fluid Interaction	687
111.3.2	Finite Volume Discretization	688
111.3.3	Volume of Fluid Method.	691
111.3.4	Pressure-velocity coupling: PISO algorithm.	692
111.3.5	Explicit transient algorithm	695
111.4	Implementation Details	697
111.4.1	Installation of OpenFoam	697
111.4.2	Integrated Preprocessor-gmFoam	697
111.4.3	Interface Domain-SSFI	699
111.4.4	Geometric Mapping	700
111.4.5	SFI Interpolation.	701
111.4.6	Mass Conservation	704
200	Software and Hardware Platform: Design, Development, Procurement and Use	706
201	The Real ESSI Simulator System	
	(1986-1989-1993-1994-1996-1999-2003-2007-2019-2020-2021-)	707
201.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	708
201.2	Introduction to the Real-ESSI Simulator System	708
201.2.1	Real-ESSI Program.	708

201.2.2	Real-ESSI Pre-Processing tools	709
201.2.3	Real-ESSI Post-Processing tools	709
201.2.4	Real-ESSI Computer	709
201.2.5	Real-ESSI Notes	709
201.2.6	Real-ESSI Name	710
202	Object Oriented Software Platform Design	
	(1992-1993-1994-1996-1999-2003-2005-2007-2008-2009-2010-2011-2015-2016-2019-)	711
202.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	712
202.2	Object-Oriented Design Basics	712
202.3	Object-Oriented Design of the Plastic Domain Decomposition (PDD).	712
202.3.1	Introduction	712
202.3.2	Object-Oriented Parallel Finite Element Algorithm	712
202.3.2.1	Modeling Classes	715
202.3.2.2	Finite Element Model Class	715
202.3.2.3	Analysis	717
202.3.2.4	Object-Oriented Domain Decomposition	726
202.3.2.5	Parallel Object-Oriented Finite Element Design	728
202.3.3	Dual-Phase Adaptive Load Balancing	733
202.3.3.1	Elemental Level Load Balancing.	733
202.3.3.2	Equation Solving Load Balancing	733
202.3.4	Object-Oriented Design of PDD	735
202.3.4.1	MPI_Channel	739
202.3.4.2	MPI_ChannelAddress	739
202.3.4.3	FEM_ObjectBroker.	740
202.3.4.4	Domain	741
202.3.4.5	PartitionedDomain.	741
202.3.4.6	Node & DOF_Group	741
202.3.4.7	DomainPartitioner	742
202.3.4.8	Shadow/ActorSubdomain	743
202.3.4.9	Send/RecvSelf	745
202.3.5	Graph Partitioning	745
202.3.5.1	Construction of Element Graph	746
202.3.5.2	Interface to ParMETIS/METIS	746
202.3.6	Data Redistribution	749

203	Library Centric Software Platform Design	
	(1993-1994-1996-2005-2009-2010-2011-2019-)	752
203.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	753
203.1.1	Finite Elements	753
203.1.1.1	Single Phase Solid Elements	753
203.1.1.2	Fully Coupled, Two-Phase (Porous Solid – Pore Fluid) Solid Elements	753
203.1.1.3	Structural Elements	753
203.1.1.4	Special Elements	753
203.1.2	Constitutive Integration and Material Models	754
203.1.2.1	Explicit Integration	754
203.1.2.2	Implicit Integration	754
203.1.2.3	Material Models.	754
203.1.3	Modified OpenSees Services Library	754
204	Application Programming Interface	
	(2005-2009-2010-2011-2017-2019-)	755
204.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	756
204.2	Introduction	756
204.3	Application Programming Interface for Domain Specific Language (DSL)	756
204.3.1	Modeling	756
204.3.1.1	Modeling: Material Models	757
204.3.1.2	Modeling: Nodes	769
204.3.1.3	Modeling: Finite Elements	770
204.3.1.4	Modeling: Damping	784
204.3.1.5	Modeling: Constraints, Supports, Tied Nodes Connections, etc..	785
204.3.1.6	Modeling: Static Loads	787
204.3.1.7	Modeling: Dynamic Loads	791
204.3.1.8	Modeling: Prescribed Displacements	793
204.3.1.9	Solid-Fluid Interface	793
204.3.1.10	Outputs to mySQL database	794
204.3.2	Simulation	794
204.3.2.1	Simulation: Solvers	794
204.3.2.2	Simulation: Static Solution Advancement	795
204.3.2.3	Simulation: Dynamic Solution Advancement	795
204.3.2.4	Simulation: Solution Algorithms	796

204.3.2.5	Simulation: Convergence Criteria	796
204.3.2.6	Simulating Response	797
204.4	Application Programming Interface for Constitutive Simulations	798
204.5	Application Programming Interface for Finite Elements	798
204.6	Adding a New Command into Real-ESSI Simulator	799
204.6.1	Introduction	799
204.6.2	Parser.	799
204.6.3	feiparser.yy	800
204.6.4	feiparser.l	801
204.6.5	create_parallel.sh	801
204.6.6	create_sequential.sh and create_parallel.sh	802
204.6.7	Application Programming Interface (API)	802
204.7	Adding New Finite Element into Real-ESSI Simulator	803
204.7.1	Introduction	803
204.7.2	Getting Started:: Creating New Element Directory	803
204.7.3	Element Header File	805
204.7.4	Element Source File	808
204.7.5	Element Class Tag Description	817
204.7.6	Integrating New Finite Element into Parser	820
204.7.6.1	feiparser.yy.	821
204.7.6.2	feiparser.l	821
204.7.6.3	Argument Stack, Signature and Units	821
204.7.6.4	FeiDslCaller	823
204.7.6.5	New DSL Header File	823
204.7.7	Compiling Real-ESSI	824
204.7.8	Verification of Implementation	824
205	Input, Domain Specific Language	
	(1991-2005-2010-2011-2012-2015-2016-2017-2018-2019-2020-2021-)	825
205.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	826
205.2	Introduction	826
205.3	Domain Specific Language (DSL), English Language Binding	827
205.3.1	Running Real-ESSI	827
205.3.2	Finishing Real-ESSI Program Run	829
205.3.3	Real-ESSI Variables, Basic Units and Flow Control	831

205.3.4	Modeling	834
205.3.4.1	Modeling, Material Model: Adding a Material Model to the Finite Element Model	836
205.3.4.2	Modeling, Material Model: Linear Elastic Isotropic Material Model . .	837
205.3.4.3	Modeling, Material Model: Cross Anisotropic Linear Elastic Material Model	838
205.3.4.4	Modeling, Material Model: von Mises Associated Material Model with Linear Isotropic and/or Kinematic Hardening	839
205.3.4.5	Modeling, Material Model: von Mises Associated Material Model with Isotropic Hardening and/or Armstrong-Frederic Nonlinear Kinematic Hardening	840
205.3.4.6	Modeling, Material Model: Drucker-Prager Associated Material Model with Linear Isotropic and/or Kinematic Hardening	841
205.3.4.7	Modeling, Material Model: Drucker-Prager Associated Material Model with Isotropic Hardening and/or Armstrong-Frederick Nonlinear Kinematic Hardening	842
205.3.4.8	Modeling, Material Model: Drucker-Prager Associated Material Model with Isotropic Hardening and/or Armstrong-Frederick Nonlinear Kinematic Hardening and Nonlinear Duncan-Chang Elasticity	843
205.3.4.9	Modeling, Material Model: Drucker-Prager Nonassociated Material Model with Linear Isotropic and/or Kinematic Hardening	845
205.3.4.10	Modeling, Material Model: Drucker-Prager Nonassociated Material Model with Linear Isotropic and/or Armstrong-Frederick Nonlinear Kinematic Hardening	846
205.3.4.11	Modeling, Material Model: Hyperbolic Drucker-Prager Nonassociated Material Model with Linear Isotropic and/or Armstrong-Frederick Nonlinear Kinematic Hardening	848
205.3.4.12	Modeling, Material Model: Rounded Mohr-Coulomb Associated Linear Isotropic Hardening Material Model	850
205.3.4.13	Modeling, Material Model: Cam Clay Material Model	851
205.3.4.14	Modeling, Material Model: von Mises Associated Multiple Yield Surface Material Model	852
205.3.4.15	Modeling, Material Model: von Mises Associated Multiple Yield Surface Material Model that Matches G/G_{max} Curves	853

205.3.4.16	Modeling, Material Model: Drucker-Prager Nonassociated Multi-Yield Surface Material Model	854
205.3.4.17	Modeling, Material Model: Drucker-Prager Nonassociated Material Model that Matches G/G_{max} Curves.	856
205.3.4.18	Modeling, Material Model: Rounder Mohr-Coulomb Nonassociated Multi-Yield Surface Material Model.	858
205.3.4.19	Modeling, Material Model: Tsinghua Liquefaction Material Model . .	860
205.3.4.20	Modeling, Material Model: SANISand Material Model, version 2004 . .	862
205.3.4.21	Modeling, Material Model: SANISand Material Model, version 2008 . .	864
205.3.4.22	Modeling, Material Model: Cosserat Linear Elastic Material Model . .	867
205.3.4.23	Modeling, Material Model: von Mises Cosserat Material Model	868
205.3.4.24	Modeling, Material Model: Uniaxial Linear Elastic, Fiber Material Model	869
205.3.4.25	Modeling, Material Model: Stochastic Uniaxial Linear Elastic Model . .	870
205.3.4.26	Modeling, Material Model: Stochastic Uniaxial Nonlinear Armstrong Frederick Model	871
205.3.4.27	Modeling, Material Model: Uniaxial Nonlinear Concrete, Fiber Material Model, version 02	873
205.3.4.28	Modeling, Material Model: Faria-Oliver-Cervera Concrete Material . .	874
205.3.4.29	Modeling, Material Model: Plane Stress Layered Material	875
205.3.4.30	Modeling, Material Model: Uniaxial Nonlinear Steel, Fiber Material Model, version 01	876
205.3.4.31	Modeling, Material Model: Uniaxial Nonlinear Steel, Fiber Material Model, version 02	877
205.3.4.32	Modeling, Material Model: Plane Stress Plastic Damage Concrete Material	878
205.3.4.33	Modeling, Material Model: Plane Stress Rebar Material.	879
205.3.4.34	Modeling, Nodes: Adding Nodes	880
205.3.4.35	Modeling, Nodes: Adding Stochastic Nodes	881
205.3.4.36	Modeling, Nodes: Define Nodal Physical Group	882
205.3.4.37	Modeling, Nodes: Adding Nodes to Nodal Physical Group	883
205.3.4.38	Modeling, Nodes: Removing Nodal Physical Group	884
205.3.4.39	Modeling, Nodes: Print Nodal Physical Group	885
205.3.4.40	Modeling, Nodes: Removing Nodes	886
205.3.4.41	Modeling, Nodes: Adding Nodal Mass, for 3DOFs and/or 6DOFs . . .	887

205.3.4.42	Modeling, Finite Element: Adding Finite Elements.	888
205.3.4.43	Modeling, Finite Element: Define Finite Element Physical Group . . .	889
205.3.4.44	Modeling, Finite Element: Adding Elements to Physical Element Group	890
205.3.4.45	Modeling, Finite Element: Remove Physical Finite Element Group. . .	891
205.3.4.46	Modeling, Finite Element: Print Physical Finite Element Group. . . .	892
205.3.4.47	Modeling, Finite Element: Remove Finite Element.	893
205.3.4.48	Modeling, Finite Element: Truss Element	894
205.3.4.49	Modeling, Finite Element: Kelvin-Voigt Element	895
205.3.4.50	Modeling, Finite Element: Inerter Element.	896
205.3.4.51	Modeling, Finite Element: Shear Beam Element	897
205.3.4.52	Modeling, Finite Element: Stochastic Shear Beam Element	898
205.3.4.53	Modeling, Finite Element: Elastic Beam–Column Element	899
205.3.4.54	Modeling, Finite Element: Large Displacement Elastic Beam–Column Element, with Corotational Transformation	902
205.3.4.55	Modeling, Finite Element: Timoshenko Elastic Beam–Column Element .	903
205.3.4.56	Modeling, Finite Element: Timoshenko Elastic Beam–Column Element with Directional Shear Correction Coefficients	905
205.3.4.57	Modeling, Finite Element: Adding 1D Fiber to a Beam Cross Section .	907
205.3.4.58	Modeling, Finite Element: Adding Fiber Section to the Finite Element Model	908
205.3.4.59	Modeling, Finite Element: 3D Displacement Based Fiber Beam-Column Element	909
205.3.4.60	Modeling, Finite Element: 3D Displacement Based Fiber Beam-Column Element with Corotational Coordinate Transformation	910
205.3.4.61	Modeling, Finite Element: 3DOF+6DOF=9DOF Beam-Column Element	911
205.3.4.62	Modeling, Finite Element: 4 Node ANDES Shell with Drilling DOFs . .	913
205.3.4.63	Modeling, Finite Element: 3 Node ANDES Shell with Drilling DOFs . .	914
205.3.4.64	Modeling, Finite Element: 4 Node Shell NLDKGQ, or 4 Node Shell Xin- Zheng-Lu	915
205.3.4.65	Modeling, Finite Element: Inelastic Layered Shell Section	916
205.3.4.66	Modeling, Finite Element: ElasticMembranePlaneStress Element (to be removed!)	917
205.3.4.67	Modeling, Finite Element: InelasticMembranePlaneStress Element (to be removed!)	918

205.3.4.68	Modeling, Finite Element: SuperElementLinearElasticImport	919
205.3.4.69	Modeling, Finite Element: 8 Node Brick Element	921
205.3.4.70	Modeling, Finite Element: 20 Node Brick Element.	923
205.3.4.71	Modeling, Finite Element: 27 Node Brick Element.	925
205.3.4.72	Modeling, Finite Element: Variable 8-27 Node Brick Element	927
205.3.4.73	Modeling, Finite Element: 8 Node Brick u-p Element	929
205.3.4.74	Modeling, Finite Element: 20 Node Brick u-p Element	932
205.3.4.75	Modeling, Finite Element: 27 Node Brick u-p Element	935
205.3.4.76	Modeling, Finite Element: 8 Node Brick u-p-U Element.	938
205.3.4.77	Modeling, Finite Element: 20 Node Brick u-p-U Element	941
205.3.4.78	Modeling, Finite Element: 27 Node Brick u-p-U Element	944
205.3.4.79	Modeling, Finite Element: 8 Node Cosserat Brick Element	947
205.3.4.80	Modeling, Finite Element: Bonded Contact/Interface/Joint Element . .	948
205.3.4.81	Modeling, Finite Element: Coupled Bonded Contact/Interface/Joint Element 949	
205.3.4.82	Modeling, Finite Element: Force Based Dry Hard Contact/Interface/Joint Element	950
205.3.4.83	Modeling, Finite Element: Force Based Dry Soft Contact/Interface/Joint Element	951
205.3.4.84	Modeling, Finite Element: Force Based Coupled Hard Contact/Inter- face/Joint Element	953
205.3.4.85	Modeling, Finite Element: Force Based Coupled Soft Contact/Inter- face/Joint Element	955
205.3.4.86	Modeling, Finite Element: Stress Based Dry Hard Contact/Interface/Joint Element with Elastic Perfectly Plastic Shear Behavior	957
205.3.4.87	Modeling, Finite Element: Stress Based Dry Hard Contact/Interface/Joint Element with Nonlinear Hardening Shear Behavior.	959
205.3.4.88	Modeling, Finite Element: Stress Based Dry Hard Contact/Interface/Joint Element with Nonlinear Hardening and Softening Shear Behavior . . .	961
205.3.4.89	Modeling, Finite Element: Stress Based Dry Soft Contact/Interface/Joint Element with Elastic Perfectly Plastic Shear Behavior	964
205.3.4.90	Modeling, Finite Element: Stress Based Dry Soft Contact/Interface/Joint Element with Nonlinear Hardening Shear Behavior.	966

205.3.4.91	Modeling, Finite Element: Stress Based Dry Soft Contact/Interface/Joint Element with Nonlinear Hardening and Softening Shear Behavior . . .	968
205.3.4.92	Modeling, Finite Element: Stress Based Coupled Hard Contact/Interface/Joint Element with Elastic Perfectly Plastic Shear Behavior . . .	971
205.3.4.93	Modeling, Finite Element: Stress Based Coupled Hard Contact/Interface/Joint Element with Nonlinear Hardening Shear Behavior . . .	973
205.3.4.94	Modeling, Finite Element: Stress Based Coupled Hard Contact/Interface/Joint Element with Nonlinear Hardening and Softening Shear Behavior	975
205.3.4.95	Modeling, Finite Element: Stress Based Coupled Soft Contact/Interface/Joint Element with Elastic Perfectly Plastic Shear Behavior . . .	978
205.3.4.96	Modeling, Finite Element: Stress Based Coupled Soft Contact/Interface/Joint Element with Nonlinear Hardening Shear Behavior . . .	980
205.3.4.97	Modeling, Finite Element: Stress Based Coupled Soft Contact/Interface/Joint Element with Nonlinear Hardening and Softening Shear Behavior	982
205.3.4.98	Modeling, Finite Element: Neoprene Isolator Finite Element . . .	985
205.3.4.99	Modeling, Finite Element: Lead Core Rubber Isolator/Dissipator Element	986
205.3.4.100	Modeling, Finite Element: Frictional Pendulum Isolator/Dissipator Finite Element version01 . . .	987
205.3.4.101	Modeling, Finite Element: Frictional Pendulum Isolator/Dissipator Finite Element version03 . . .	988
205.3.4.102	Modeling, Damping: Adding Rayleigh Damping . . .	989
205.3.4.103	Modeling, Damping: Adding 3rd Order Caughey Damping . . .	990
205.3.4.104	Modeling, Damping: Adding 4th Caughey Damping . . .	991
205.3.4.105	Modeling, Constraints and Supports: Adding Constraints or Supports .	992
205.3.4.106	Modeling, Constraints and Supports: Adding Stochastic Constraints or Supports . . .	993
205.3.4.107	Modeling, Constraints and Supports: Free Constraint or Support . . .	994
205.3.4.108	Modeling, Constraints and Supports: Add Tied/Connected Main-Follower Nodes for the Same DOFs . . .	995
205.3.4.109	Modeling, Constraints and Supports: Adding Tied/Connected, Main-Follower Nodes for Different DOFs. . .	996

205.3.4.110	Modeling, Constraints and Supports: Remove Tied/Connected Main-Follower equal DOFs	997
205.3.4.111	Modeling, Constraints and Supports: Adding Single Point Constraint to Nodes	998
205.3.4.112	Modeling, Acceleration Field: Adding Acceleration/Inertia Field. . . .	999
205.3.4.113	Modeling, Loads: Nodal Loads	1000
205.3.4.114	Modeling, Loads: Nodal Path Loads	1002
205.3.4.115	Modeling, Loads: Nodal Loads From Reactions	1003
205.3.4.116	Modeling, Loads: Selfweight Element Load	1004
205.3.4.117	Modeling, Loads: Selfweight Nodal Load	1005
205.3.4.118	Modeling, Loads: 8 Node Brick Surface Load with the Constant Pressure	1006
205.3.4.119	Modeling, Loads: 8 Node Brick Surface Load with Variable Pressure . .	1007
205.3.4.120	Modeling, Loads: 20Node Brick Surface Load with the Constant Pressure	1008
205.3.4.121	Modeling, Loads: 20 Node Brick, Surface Load with Variable Pressure .	1009
205.3.4.122	Modeling, Loads: 27 Node Brick Surface Load with the Constant Pressure	1010
205.3.4.123	Modeling, Loads: 27 Node Brick Surface Load with Variable Pressure .	1011
205.3.4.124	Modeling, Loads: Removing Loads	1012
205.3.4.125	Modeling, Loads: Domain Reduction Method, DRM	1013
205.3.4.126	Modeling, Wave Field for Creating DRM Loads: Add Wave Field	1017
205.3.4.127	Modeling, Wave Field for Creating DRM Loads: Deconvolution.	1020
205.3.4.128	Modeling, Wave Field for Creating DRM Input: Motions	1021
205.3.4.129	Modeling, Wave Field for Creating DRM Input: Forces	1022
205.3.4.130	Modeling, Wave Field for Creating DRM Loads: Add Inclined Plane Wave Field from Incident SV Wave Potential Magnitude.	1023
205.3.4.131	Modeling, Wave Field for Creating DRM Loads: Add Inclined Plane Wave Field from Incident SV Wave Time Series Signal	1026
205.3.4.132	Modeling, Wave Field for Creating DRM Loads: Add Inclined Plane Wave Field from Incident P Wave Potential Magnitude	1029
205.3.4.133	Modeling, Wave Field for Creating DRM Loads: Add Inclined Plane Wave Field from Incident P Wave Time Series Signal	1031
205.3.4.134	Modeling, Wave Field for Creating DRM Loads: DRM Inclined Motion .	1034
205.3.4.135	Modeling, Imposed Motions: through Loads, Motion Time History, Constant Time Step.	1035

205.3.4.136	Modeling, Imposed Motions: through Loads, Stochastic Motion Time History, Constant Time Step	1036
205.3.4.137	Modeling, Imposed Motions: through Loads, Stochastic Random Process Motions, Constant Time Step	1038
205.3.4.138	Modeling, Imposed Motions: through Loads, Motion Time History, Variable Time Step	1039
205.3.4.139	Modeling, Imposed Motions: Adding Load for Uniform Acceleration Time History	1040
205.3.4.140	Modeling, Imposed Motions: Remove Imposed Motions.	1041
205.3.4.141	Modeling, Random Variable: Adding Gaussian Random Variables	1042
205.3.4.142	Modeling, Random Variable: Adding Gaussian Random Variables with Location	1043
205.3.4.143	Modeling, Random Variable: Adding Lognormal Random Variables	1044
205.3.4.144	Modeling, Random Variable: Adding Lognormal Random Variables with Location	1045
205.3.4.145	Modeling, Random Variable: Adding Lognormal Random Variables using Logarithmic Input	1046
205.3.4.146	Modeling, Random Variable: Adding Lognormal Random Variables using Logarithmic Input with Location	1047
205.3.4.147	Modeling, Random Variable: Adding Gamma Random Variables using Shape and Scale Parameters	1048
205.3.4.148	Modeling, Random Variable: Adding Gamma Random Variables using Shape and Scale Parameters with Location	1049
205.3.4.149	Modeling, Random Variable: Adding Gamma Random Variables using Mean and Standard Deviation Parameters	1050
205.3.4.150	Modeling, Random Variable: Adding Gamma Random Variables using Mean and Standard Deviation Parameters with Location	1051
205.3.4.151	Modeling, Random Variable: Adding Weibull Random Variables using Shape and Scale Parameters	1052
205.3.4.152	Modeling, Random Variable: Adding Weibull Random Variables using Shape and Scale Parameters with Location	1053
205.3.4.153	Modeling, Random Variable: Remove Random Variables	1054
205.3.4.154	Modeling, Random Variable: Hermite Polynomial Chaos Expansion	1055

205.3.4.155	Modeling, Random Variable: Output Hermite Polynomial Chaos Expansion Result.	1056
205.3.4.156	Modeling, Random Variable: Hermite Polynomial Chaos Expansion & Output Results	1057
205.3.4.157	Modeling, Random Field: Adding Random Field with Dimension and Order.	1058
205.3.4.158	Modeling, Random Field: Define Global Dimension Index of Random Field	1059
205.3.4.159	Modeling, Random Field: Define Global Dimension Index of Random Field from File Input	1060
205.3.4.160	Modeling, Random Field: Set Number of Polynomial Chaos Terms of Random Field	1061
205.3.4.161	Modeling, Random Field: Adding Random Field with Zero Correlation .	1062
205.3.4.162	Modeling, Random Field: Adding Random Field with Exponential Correlation	1063
205.3.4.163	Modeling, Random Field: Adding Random Field with Triangular Correlation	1064
205.3.4.164	Modeling, Random Field: Adding Random Field with Exponentially Damped Cosine Correlation	1065
205.3.4.165	Modeling, Random Field: Adding Random Field with Gaussian Correlation	1066
205.3.4.166	Modeling, Random Field: Remove Random Fields	1067
205.3.4.167	Modeling, Random Field: Adding Random Variable to Random Field. .	1068
205.3.4.168	Modeling, Random Field: Remove Random Variable From Random Field	1069
205.3.4.169	Modeling, Random Field: Hermite Polynomial Chaos Karhunen Loève Expansion	1070
205.3.4.170	Modeling, Random Field: Hermite Polynomial Chaos Karhunen Loève Expansion with Inverse Order.	1071
205.3.4.171	Modeling, Random Field: Hermite Polynomial Chaos Karhunen Loève Expansion with Number of FE Elements Larger than Dimension of Hermite Polynomials	1072
205.3.4.172	Modeling, Random Field: Hermite Polynomial Chaos Karhunen Loève Expansion Using HDF5 Input.	1074

205.3.4.173	Modeling, Random Field: Hermite Polynomial Chaos Karhunen Loève Expansion with Inverse Order Using HDF5 Input	1076
205.3.4.174	Modeling, Random Field: Output Hermite Polynomial Chaos Karhunen Loève Expansion Result	1078
205.3.4.175	Modeling, Random Field: Adding Random Field from Hermite Polynomial Chaos Karhunen Loève Expansion HDF5 File.	1080
205.3.4.176	Modeling, Random Field: Adding Random Field from Marginal Distribution and Correlation	1082
205.3.4.177	Modeling, Random Field: Add Triple Product of Hermite Polynomial Chaos Basis	1083
205.3.4.178	Modeling, Random Field: Add Double Product of Hermite Polynomial Chaos Basis	1084
205.3.4.179	Modeling, Random Field: Generate Triple Product of Hermite Polynomial Chaos Basis	1085
205.3.4.180	Modeling, Random Field: Generate Double Product of Hermite Polynomial Chaos Basis	1087
205.3.4.181	Modeling, Random Field: Add Triple Product of Hermite Polynomial Chaos Basis Using HDF5 Input	1089
205.3.4.182	Modeling, Random Field: Add Double Product of Hermite Polynomial Chaos Basis Using HDF5 Input	1091
205.3.4.183	Modeling, Solid-Fluid Interaction: Adding Solid-Fluid Interface	1093
205.3.4.184	Modeling, Solid-Fluid Interaction: Defining Solid-Fluid Interface, ESSI Element Nodes	1094
205.3.4.185	Modeling, Solid-Fluid Interaction: Defining Solid-Fluid Interface, ESSI Element Faces	1095
205.3.4.186	Modeling, Solid-Fluid Interaction: Defining Solid-Fluid Interface FOAM Nodes	1097
205.3.4.187	Modeling, Solid-Fluid Interaction: Defining Solid-Fluid Interface FOAM Faces.	1098
205.3.5	Simulation	1100
205.3.5.1	Simulation, Solvers: Sequential Solvers	1101
205.3.5.2	Simulation, Solvers: Parallel Solvers	1102
205.3.5.3	Simulation: Static Solution Advancement	1105

205.3.5.4	Simulation: Dynamic Solution Advancement with the Constant Time Step	1106
205.3.5.5	Simulation: Dynamic Solution Advancement with Variable Time Step	1107
205.3.5.6	Simulation: Generalized Eigenvalue Analysis	1108
205.3.5.7	Simulation: Displacement Control	1109
205.3.5.8	Simulation: Load, Control, Factor Increment	1110
205.3.5.9	Simulation: Dynamic Integrator, Newmark Method	1111
205.3.5.10	Simulation: Dynamic Integrator, Hilber Hughes Taylor, HHT, α Method	1112
205.3.5.11	Simulation: Absolute Convergence Criteria.	1113
205.3.5.12	Simulation: Average Convergence Criteria	1114
205.3.5.13	Simulation: Relative Convergence Criteria	1115
205.3.5.14	Simulation: Solution Algorithms	1116
205.3.5.15	Simulation: Constitutive Integration Algorithm	1117
205.3.5.16	Simulation: Status Check	1119
205.3.5.17	Simulation: Save State	1120
205.3.5.18	Simulation: Restart Simulation	1121
205.3.5.19	Simulation: Return Value for simulate Command	1122
205.3.5.20	Simulation: New Elastic Loading Case	1132
205.3.5.21	Simulation: Combine Elastic Load Cases	1133
205.3.5.22	Simulation, Dynamic Solution Advancement for Solid-Fluid Interaction	1134
205.3.5.23	Simulation, Dynamic Solution Advancement for Stochastic Finite Element Method.	1135
205.3.5.24	Simulation, Sobol Sensitivity Analysis	1136
205.3.5.25	Simulation: 3D 3C Wave Field Inversion	1140
205.3.6	Output Options	1142
205.3.6.1	Output Options: Enable/Disable Output	1143
205.3.6.2	Output Options: Enable/Disable Element Output	1144
205.3.6.3	Output Options: Enable/Disable Displacement Output	1145
205.3.6.4	Output Options: Enable/Disable Acceleration Output	1146
205.3.6.5	Output Options: Enable/Disable Asynchronous Output	1147
205.3.6.6	Output Options: Output Every n Steps	1148
205.3.6.7	Output Options: Output Support Reactions	1149

205.4	Checking the Model	1150
205.5	Constitutive Testing	1151
205.6	List of Available Commands (tentative, not up to date)	1153
205.7	List of reserved keywords.	1163
205.8	Integrated Development Environment (IDE) for DSL	1176
205.9	Mesh Generation using GiD.	1177
205.10	Model Development and Mesh Generation using gmesh	1178
205.11	Model Input File Editing using Sublime	1179
206	Output Formats	
	(2012-2014-2017-2019-2021-)	1180
206.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	1181
206.2	Introduction	1181
206.3	Output Filename and Format	1181
206.3.1	Sequential	1181
206.3.2	Parallel	1182
206.4	Output Units	1183
206.5	Data organization	1183
206.5.1	The Root group	1183
206.5.2	The Model group	1187
206.5.3	The Nodes group	1187
206.5.3.1	Number_of_DOFs	1189
206.5.3.2	Partition	1189
206.5.3.3	Constrained_Nodes	1190
206.5.3.4	Constrained_DOFs	1190
206.5.3.5	Support_Reactions	1190
206.5.3.6	Coordinates	1191
206.5.3.7	Generalized_Displacements	1192
206.5.4	The Elements group	1193
206.5.4.1	Number_of_Nodes	1196
206.5.4.2	Number_of_Element_Outputs	1196
206.5.4.3	Number_of_Gauss_Points	1197
206.5.4.4	Class_Tags	1197
206.5.4.5	Partition	1197
206.5.4.6	Material_Tags	1198

206.5.4.7	Connectivity	1199
206.5.4.8	Gauss_Point_Coordinates	1200
206.5.4.9	Gauss_Output	1200
206.5.4.10	Element_Outputs	1202
206.5.5	The Physical_Groups group	1203
206.5.5.1	The Physical_Element_Groups	1203
206.5.5.2	The Physical_Node_Groups	1204
206.5.6	The Eigen_Mode_Analysis group	1204
206.5.6.1	Number_of_Eigen_Modes	1204
206.5.6.2	Eigen_Frequencies	1205
206.5.6.3	Eigen_Periods	1205
206.5.6.4	Eigen_Values	1205
206.5.6.5	Modes	1206
206.5.7	The Material data array	1206
206.6	Node-specific output format	1207
206.6.1	3DOF	1207
206.6.2	4DOF	1207
206.6.3	6DOF	1208
206.6.4	7DOF	1208
206.7	Element-gauss output format	1209
206.8	Element-specific output format	1212
206.8.1	Truss	1213
206.8.2	Brick Elements	1213
206.8.3	ShearBeam	1213
206.8.4	ElasticBeam	1214
206.8.5	4NodeShell_ANDES	1214
206.8.6	BeamColumnDispFiber3d	1214
206.8.7	Force Based Contact/Interface Elements	1215
206.8.8	Stress Based Contact/Interface Elements	1215
206.9	Energy Output Format	1217
206.9.1	Input Energy	1217
206.9.2	Energy Density Quantity at Gauss Point	1217
206.9.3	Average Energy Density Quantity for Element	1218
206.9.4	Energy Quantity for Element	1219

207	Real-ESSI Pre Processing and Model Development Methods	
	(2010-2015-2017-2020-2021-)	1221
207.1	Introduction	1222
207.2	Model Development Using gmsh	1222
207.2.1	Introduction to gmESSI	1222
207.2.1.1	Getting Started	1222
207.2.1.2	Running gmESSI	1224
207.2.2	Gmsh Physical Groups and Geometrical Entities	1229
207.2.2.1	Geometrical Entities	1229
207.2.2.2	Physical Groups	1229
207.2.3	gmESSI Command Description	1235
207.2.3.1	gmESSI Syntax	1235
207.2.3.2	gmESSI Command's Physical Group	1238
207.2.4	gmESSI Output	1239
207.2.4.1	Directory <i>Example_2_ESSI_Simulation</i>	1239
207.2.4.2	Translation Log <i>Terminal</i>	1240
207.2.4.3	Element File (<i>element.fei</i>)	1243
207.2.4.4	Node File (<i>node.fei</i>)	1243
207.2.4.5	Load File (<i>load.fei</i>)	1243
207.2.4.6	Analysis File (<i>main.fei</i>)	1244
207.2.4.7	Mesh File (<i>XYZ.msh</i>)	1245
207.2.4.8	Updated ESSI Tags <i>Terminal</i>	1245
207.2.5	gmESSI Commands	1246
207.2.5.1	Singular Commands	1247
207.2.5.2	Add Node Commands	1248
207.2.5.3	Nodal Commands : Operates On All Nodes of the defined Physical Group	1249
207.2.5.4	General Elemental Commands : Operates On All Elements of the defined Physical Group	1253
207.2.5.5	Elemental Commands : Operates On All Elements of the defined Physical Group	1254
207.2.5.6	Elemental Compound Commands : Operates On All Surface Elements of the defined Physical Group [Surface Loads]	1262
207.2.5.7	Special Commands	1264
207.2.5.8	Connect Command	1265

207.2.5.9	Write Command	1270
207.2.5.10	Write DRM HDF5 Command	1271
207.2.6	Steps For Using gmESSI tool	1273
207.2.6.1	Building geometry (.geo) file in Gmsh	1273
207.2.6.2	Generate mesh (.msh) file in Gmsh	1274
207.2.6.3	Writing all gmESSI Commands for the model	1275
207.2.6.4	Executing gmESSI on Example_1.gmessi input file	1277
207.2.6.5	Running Real-ESSI and visualization in paraview	1279
207.2.7	Illustrative Examples	1280
207.2.7.1	Modeling of Cantilever Beam With Surface Load [Example_2]	1281
207.2.7.2	Modeling of a embedded shells and beam in Solids [Example_5].	1282
207.2.8	Realistic Models Developed Using gmESSI	1284
207.3	Introduction to SASSI-ESSI Translator	1284
208	Real-ESSI Post Processing Methods	
	(2010-2014-2016-2017-2018-2019-2020-2021-)	1287
208.1	Introduction	1288
208.2	Model Results Post-Processing	1289
208.3	Time Histories Plotting	1290
208.4	Post Processing and Visualization using ParaView	1291
208.4.1	Visualization in ParaView : Features	1292
208.4.1.1	PVESSIReader Visualization Options	1292
208.4.1.2	Sequential Visualization	1295
208.4.1.3	Remote Visualization	1297
208.4.1.4	Parallel Visualization	1297
208.4.1.5	General Field Visualization	1299
208.4.1.6	Relative Displacement Visualization	1306
208.4.1.7	Visualizing Element's Partition	1308
208.4.1.8	Gauss Mesh Visualization Options	1309
208.4.1.9	Gauss To Node Interpolation Mode Visualization	1312
208.4.1.10	upU Visualization	1314
208.4.1.11	Eigen Mode Visualization	1316
208.4.1.12	Visualizing Physical Node and Element groups	1317
208.4.1.13	Using Threshold to Visualize Certain Elements	1321

209	Software Platform Build Process	
	(1993-1994-1996-1999-2003-2005-2007-2008-2009-2010-2011-2015-2017-2018-2019-2020-2021-)	1324
209.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	1325
209.2	Introduction to the Real-ESSI Simulator Program	1325
209.3	Real-ESSI Simulator System Install	1325
209.4	Build Procedures for the Real-ESSI Program and Modules	1325
209.4.1	System Libraries Update/Upgrade	1325
209.4.2	Install Build Dependencies	1326
209.4.3	Download Real-ESSI Source	1327
209.4.4	Download and Compile Real-ESSI Dependencies.	1327
209.4.5	Configure, Build, and Install the Real-ESSI Program	1328
209.4.6	Install Sublime Text and Real-ESSI Packages	1328
209.4.7	Install HDFView	1329
209.4.8	Compile ParaView and PVESSIRReader for Post-Processing	1329
209.5	Build Real-ESSI Debian Package	1331
209.5.1	Build the Real-ESSI Program and Modules.	1331
209.5.2	Build the Debian Package	1331
209.5.2.1	Package Name	1331
209.5.2.2	Create Directory	1332
209.5.2.3	Create Internal Structure	1332
209.5.2.4	Copy Files	1332
209.5.2.5	Create the control File	1332
209.5.2.6	Create the Post-Installation and Post-Remove Files	1333
209.5.2.7	Build the Package	1335
209.6	Real-ESSI and OpenFOAM, Connecting	1335
209.6.1	Installation of Customized OpenFOAM	1335
209.6.2	Check the Customized OpenFOAM Installation	1337
209.6.3	Compile Real-ESSI with Link to OpenFOAM	1338
209.7	Code Verification After the Build Process	1339
209.7.1	Run all verification test cases	1339
209.7.2	Test Sequential Real-ESSI	1339
209.7.3	Test Parallel Real-ESSI	1340
209.7.4	Version Stability Test	1340
209.7.5	Memory Management Test	1340

209.8	Compiling Real-ESSI Utilities	1343
209.8.1	Installation of gmsH and gmESSI.	1344
209.8.2	Installation of ParaView and PVESSIReader	1345
209.8.2.1	Building ParaView and PVESSIReader Plugin from Source on Linux System 1345	
209.8.2.2	Building ParaView and PVESSIReader Plugin from Source on Windows System	1346
209.8.2.3	Building ParaView and PVESSIReader Plugin from Source on AWS . .	1348
209.9	Sublime Text Editor.	1351
209.10	Model Conversion/Translation using FeConv	1351
209.11	Build Procedures on Amazon Web Service	1351
209.11.1	Sign In to AWS	1352
209.11.2	Copy an Existing Image	1352
209.11.3	Create a New Image	1352
209.11.4	Build AWS ESSI Image from Scratch	1355
209.11.5	Update an Existing Image	1359
209.11.6	Upload an Existing Real-ESSI Simulator Image to AWS MarketPlace . . .	1360
210	Software Platform Procurement, Distribution (2019-2020-2021-)	1361
210.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	1362
210.2	Introduction	1362
210.3	Real-ESSI Program Debian Package Download and Install	1363
210.3.1	System Libraries Update/Upgrade	1363
210.3.2	Real-ESSI Debian Package Download	1363
210.3.3	Real-ESSI Debian Package Install	1363
210.3.4	Load pvESSI Plugin in ParaView	1364
210.3.5	Install Other Useful Programs.	1364
210.3.5.1	HDFView	1364
210.3.5.2	Sublime Text	1365
210.4	Real-ESSI Program Executables Download and Install.	1365
210.4.1	Sequential Version of Real-ESSI Program.	1365
210.4.2	Parallel Version of Real-ESSI Program.	1366
210.4.3	Real-ESSI Executable Downloads.	1366

210.5	DISCONTINUED, use WSL! Real-ESSI Simulator Install as Container through Docker	1366
210.5.1	DISCONTINUED, use WSL! Real-ESSI Docker Image Development	1367
210.5.2	DISCONTINUED, use WSL! Running Real-ESSI Container through Docker	1369
210.5.3	DISCONTINUED, use WSL! Performance of Real-ESSI Container	1371
210.6	Real-ESSI Simulator System Install	1371
210.6.1	Student Manual for Real-ESSI Simulator System Install	1372
211	Cloud Computing	
	(2017-2018-2019-2021-2023)	1373
211.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	1374
211.2	Real-ESSI Cloud Computing Overview.	1374
211.2.1	Real-ESSI Cloud Service Content	1374
211.3	Launch Real-ESSI Instance on AWS	1376
211.3.1	Launch Real-ESSI Instance from AWS Private Images	1376
211.3.2	Launch Real-ESSI Instance from AWS Market Place	1388
211.4	Connect to Real-ESSI Instance on AWS	1388
211.4.1	Install X2GO Client	1388
211.4.1.1	Installing X2GO client on Ubuntu Linux.	1388
211.4.1.2	Installing X2GO client on Apple Mac	1389
211.4.1.3	Installing X2GO client on Windows	1389
211.4.1.4	Installing X2GO client on other operating systems	1389
211.4.2	Configure the Client-Side of X2GO	1390
211.4.3	Connect to the Launched Instance	1391
211.5	Terminate Real-ESSI Instance on AWS	1391
211.6	Adding Permission for Private Real-ESSI Image to User AWS Accounts . . .	1392
211.7	Real-ESSI Instructional Videos Cloud Computing.	1393
211.7.1	Installing X2GO for Windows	1393
211.7.2	Installing X2GO for Macintosh	1393
211.7.3	Installing X2GO for Linux	1393
211.7.4	Launch AWS Marketplace	1393
211.7.5	Access Running Instance on AWS	1393
211.7.6	Start Real-ESSI Program on AWS	1393
211.7.7	Run Real-ESSI Example Model on AWS	1393
211.7.8	Visualize Real-ESSI Example Model on AWS	1393

211.7.9	Post-Process, Visualize Real-ESSI Results on AWS	1393
211.8	Cost of AWS EC2	1394
211.8.1	Cost of Running Real-ESSI on AWS	1396
211.8.1.1	Small Size Real-ESSI Example	1396
211.8.1.2	Medium Size Real-ESSI Example	1402
211.8.1.3	Large Example	1405
211.8.2	Real-ESSI AWS Manual, April 2023	1409
211.8.3	AWS for Education	1430
211.8.4	AWS for Government	1431
211.8.4.1	AWS GovCloud	1431
211.8.4.2	AWS Secret Region	1431
212	Hardware Platform Design and Development	
	(1996-1999-2009-2011-)	1432
212.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	1433
212.2	Introduction	1433
212.3	The NRC ESSI Computer	1433
212.3.1	Version: December 2010.	1433
212.3.2	Version: April 2012.	1433
300	Verification and Validation	1435
301	Verification and Validation Introduction	
	(2003-2007-2009-2017-)	1436
301.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	1437
301.2	Important Literature	1437
301.3	Verification and Validation	1437
301.3.1	Definitions	1437
301.3.2	Trusting Simulation Tools	1438
301.3.3	Importance of V & V	1438
301.3.4	Maturity of Computational Simulations	1438
301.3.5	Role of Verification and Validation	1439
301.3.5.1	Alternative V & V Definitions	1440
301.3.5.2	Certification and Accreditation	1440
301.3.5.3	Independence of Computational Confidence Assessment.	1440

301.3.6	Simulation-Informed Decision Making	1441
301.3.6.1	Purpose of Modeling and Simulation	1441
301.3.7	Decision Making by Industry and by Regulatory Authorities	1442
301.3.8	Simulation Governance	1446
301.3.8.1	Modeling, Experimental, Analytic and Numerical	1446
301.3.9	Detailed Look at Verification and Validation	1448
301.3.9.1	On Verification	1448
301.3.9.2	On Validation	1449
301.4	Prediction	1452
301.4.1	Relation Between Validation and Prediction	1452
301.5	Application Domain.	1453
301.5.1	Importance of Models and Numerical Simulations	1453
301.5.2	Prediction under Uncertainty	1454
301.6	Intended use of Model.	1455
301.6.1	System Being Modeled	1455
301.6.2	Simulation Governance	1455
302	Source Code Verification	
	(1989-1990-1994-1995-2002-2005-2007-2009-2010-2017-2019-2021-)	1456
302.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	1457
302.1.1	Numerical Algorithm Verification	1457
302.1.2	Software Quality Assurance.	1457
303	Code Stability Verification	
	(2002-2016-2017-2019-2021-)	1458
303.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	1459
303.2	Introduction to Code Stability	1459
303.3	Motivation	1459
303.4	The framework of the automatic test	1459
303.5	Installation and Tutorial	1460
303.5.1	Installation	1460
303.5.2	Tutorial	1460
303.5.2.1	Run all verification test cases.	1460
303.5.2.2	Run a single type of verification test cases.	1461

303.6	The underlying implementation of the automatic test	1461
303.6.1	Generate the original results	1461
303.6.2	Run essi and make comparison	1462
303.6.2.1	The terminal output/log comparison	1462
303.6.2.2	Reduce the comparison items and comparison time	1463
303.7	Report Sample	1463
303.7.1	Passed test case	1463
303.7.2	Failed test case	1463
303.7.3	Version information	1464
303.7.4	Statistics	1464
303.8	Future contribution	1464
304	Validation Experiments	
	(2021-)	1465
304.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	1466
304.2	Design of Experiments.	1466
305	Verification and Validation for Constitutive Problems	
	(1989-1991-1992-1994-1999-2003-2007-2009-2010-2017-2018-2019-2021-)	1467
305.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	1468
305.2	Verification of Constitutive Integration	1468
305.2.1	Error Assessment	1468
305.2.2	Constitutive Level Convergence	1473
305.3	Validation of Constitutive Model Predictions	1477
305.3.1	Dafalias Manzari Material Model	1477
306	Verification and Validation for Static and Dynamic Finite Element Level Solution Advancement Algorithms	
	(1994-2003-2009-2012-2015-2017-2019-)	1482
306.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	1483
306.2	Verification for Static Solution Advancement	1483
306.3	Verification for Dynamic Solution Advancement	1483
306.3.1	Verification for Dynamic Solution Advancement, Newmark Method	1483
306.3.2	Verification Example Description.	1488

306.3.3	Verification for Dynamic Solution Advancement, Hilber-Hughes-Taylor Method	1492
306.3.3.1	Verification Results for Hilber Hughes Taylor (HHT) Solution Advancement Algorithm..	1493
307	Verification and Validation for Static and Dynamic Behavior of Single Phase, Solid Elements	
	(1989-1994-2011-2015-2017-2019-)	1499
307.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	1500
307.2	Verification of Static, Single Phase Solid Modeling and Simulation	1500
307.2.1	Beam theory	1500
307.2.2	Verification of 8 node brick cantilever beam (static)	1501
307.2.3	Verification of 27 node brick cantilever beam (static)	1502
307.2.4	Verification of 8NodeBrick cantilever beams	1505
307.2.5	Verification of 8NodeBrick cantilever beam for different Poisson's ratio	1507
307.2.6	Test of irregular shaped 8NodeBrick cantilever beams.	1512
307.2.7	Verification of 8NodeBrick stress in cantilever beams	1520
307.2.8	Verification of 8NodeBrick square plate with four edges clamped	1523
307.2.9	Verification of 8NodeBrick square plate with four edges simply supported	1528
307.2.10	Verification of 8NodeBrick circular plate with all edges clamped.	1533
307.2.11	Verification of 8NodeBrick circular plate with all edges simply supported	1538
307.2.12	Verification of 8NodeBrick Finite Element for Boussinesq Problem	1543
307.2.12.1	Introduction	1543
307.2.12.2	Description of the Verification Model	1543
307.2.12.3	Results	1544
307.2.12.4	Error Analysis	1545
307.2.13	Verification of 8NodeBrick Finite Element for Collapsed Brick Shapes	1547
307.2.13.1	Test procedure	1547
307.2.13.2	Test result	1548
307.2.14	Verification of 27 node brick cantilever beam (static)	1551
307.2.15	Verification of 27NodeBrick cantilever beam for different Poisson's ratio	1554
307.2.16	Test of irregular shaped 27NodeBrick cantilever beams	1561
307.2.17	Verification of 27NodeBrick stress in cantilever beams	1569
307.2.18	Verification of 27NodeBrick square plate with four edges clamped	1572
307.2.19	Verification of 27NodeBrick square plate with four edges simply supported.	1577

307.2.20	Verification of 27NodeBrick circular plate with all edges clamped	1583
307.2.21	Verification of 27NodeBrick circular plate with all edges simply supported .	1588
307.2.22	Verification of 27NodeBrick Finite Element for Boussinesq Problem	1593
307.2.22.1	Introduction	1593
307.2.22.2	Description of the Verification Model	1593
307.2.22.3	Results	1594
307.2.22.4	Error Analysis	1595
307.3	Verification of Dynamic, Single Phase Solid Modeling and Simulation	1596
308	Verification and Validation for Static and Dynamic Behavior of Structural Elements	
	(1986-2011-2015-2017-2019-2021-)	1597
308.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	1598
308.2	Verification of Static, Beam-Column Finite Element Modeling and Simulation.	1598
308.3	Bernoulli Beam Elements with 12DOFs and 9DOFs.	1598
308.3.1	FEM Model	1598
308.3.2	Static Analysis	1598
308.3.3	Dynamic Analysis	1599
308.3.4	Bernoulli Beam, Comparison of Eigen Frequencies	1601
308.4	Timoshenko Beam	1602
308.5	Verification of Shell (Felippa-ANDES) Finite Element Modeling and Simulation	1606
308.5.1	Static Tests	1606
308.5.1.1	Bending Component Verification	1606
308.5.1.2	Membrane Component Verification	1611
308.5.2	Dynamic Tests	1615
308.5.2.1	Bending Component	1615
308.5.2.2	Membrane Component	1616
308.5.2.3	Geometric Transformations	1617
308.6	Verification of 4NodeANDES elements	1618
308.6.1	Verification of 4NodeANDES cantilever beams	1618
308.6.2	Verification of 4NodeANDES cantilever beam for different Poisson's ratio .	1622
308.6.3	Test of irregular shaped 4NodeANDES cantilever beams.	1634
308.6.4	Verification of 4NodeANDES square plate with four edges clamped	1645
308.6.5	Verification of 4NodeANDES square plate with four edges simply supported	1651
308.6.6	Verification of 4NodeANDES circular plate with all edges clamped. . . .	1657
308.6.7	Verification of 4NodeANDES circular plate with all edges simply supported	1662

309	Verification and Validation for Static and Dynamic Behavior of Special Elements (Contacts/Interfaces/Joints, Gap/Frictional, Isolators)	
	(2010-2011-2016-2017-2019-2021-)	1667
309.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	1668
309.2	Verification of Static Penalty Contact/Interface/Joint Element Modeling and Simulation	1668
309.2.1	Static Normal Contact/Interface/Joint Verification.	1668
309.2.1.1	<u>Case 1</u> : Monotonic Loading with initial gap $\delta_{in} = 0.1m$	1669
309.2.1.2	<u>Case 2</u> : Monotonic Loading with no initial gap $\delta_{in} = 0m$	1669
309.2.1.3	<u>Case 3</u> : Cyclic Loading with initial gap $\delta_{in} = 0.1m$	1669
309.2.1.4	<u>Case 4</u> : Cyclic Loading with no initial gap $\delta_{in} = 0m$	1669
309.2.2	Static Frictional Tangential Contact/Interface/Joint Verification	1675
309.2.2.1	<u>Case 1</u> : Verification of the yield surface for different loading angles with fixed normal confinement.	1676
309.3	Verification of Static and Dynamic Contact/interface/Joint Element Modeling and Simulation	1679
309.3.1	Truss Examples	1680
309.3.2	Single Brick Element Examples	1682
309.3.3	Double Brick Element Examples	1682
309.4	Verification of Static and Dynamic Coupled (Saturated) Contact/Interface/Joint Element Modeling and Simulation	1688
309.4.1	Dry u-p-U Contact/Interface/Joint.	1688
309.4.2	u-p-U Contact/Interface/Joint	1690
309.5	Verification of Static, Isolator Element Modeling and Simulation.	1694
310	Verification and Validation for Coupled, Porous Solid – Pore Fluid Problems	
	(2000-2003-2007-2009-2010-2016-2017-2020-2021-)	1695
310.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	1696
310.2	Introduction	1696
310.3	Drilling of a well	1696
310.3.1	The Problem	1696
310.3.2	Analytical Solution	1697
310.3.3	Discussion of the Results	1698
310.4	The Case of a Spherical Cavity	1702
310.4.1	The Problem	1702

310.4.2	Analytical Solution	1703
310.4.3	Discussion of the Results	1704
310.5	Line Injection of a fluid in a Reservoir	1705
310.5.1	The Problem	1705
310.5.2	Analytical Solution	1706
310.5.3	Discussion of the Results	1708
310.6	Shock Wave Propagation in Saturated Porous Medium	1713
310.7	Vertical Consolidation of a soil layer by Coussy (2004)	1714
310.7.1	Brief review of Analytical Solution for Consolidation by Coussy (2004)	1714
310.7.2	Numerical Analysis	1717
310.7.3	Discussion of Numerical Results - Conclusions	1719
310.8	One dimensional wave propagation in elastic porous media subjected to step displacement boundary condition	1721
310.8.1	Brief review of Analytical Solution by Gajo and Mongiovi (1995)	1721
310.8.2	Numerical Analysis	1731
310.8.3	Discussion of Numerical Results - Conclusions	1761
310.9	One dimensional wave propagation in elastic porous media subjected to step loading at the surface	1761
310.9.1	Brief review of Analytical Solution by de Boer et al. (1993)	1761
310.9.2	Numerical Analysis	1762
310.9.3	Discussion of Numerical Results - Conclusions	1764
310.10	One dimensional wave propagation in elastic porous media subjected to step velocity boundary condition	1766
310.10.1	Brief review of Analytical Solution by Hiremath et al. (1988)	1766
310.10.2	Numerical Analysis	1768
310.10.3	Discussion of Numerical Results - Conclusions	1770
311	Verification and Validation for Seismic Wave Propagation Problems	
	(1989-2000-2004-2005-2008-2009-2010-2011-2017-2018-2019-2021-)	1785
311.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	1786
311.2	Wavelet Seismic Signals	1786
311.2.1	Ricker Wavelet	1786
311.2.2	Ormsby Wavelet	1787

311.3	Finite Element Mesh Size Effects on Seismic Wave Propagation Modeling and Simulation	1789
311.3.1	Analysis Cases	1789
311.3.2	Comparison of Case 1 and 2	1789
311.3.3	Comparison of Case 3 and 4	1791
311.3.4	Comparison of Cases 3, 4, and 6.	1791
311.3.5	Comparison of Case 7 and 8	1791
311.3.6	Comparison of Case 9, 10, and 11	1796
311.3.7	Comparison of Case 12, 13, and 14.	1796
311.4	Damping of the Outgoing Waves.	1796
311.4.1	Comparison of Rayleigh Damping and Caughey 4th Order Damping	1796
311.4.2	Parametric Study on Effect of Rayleigh Damping on Reflected Waves. . . .	1800
311.5	Mesh Size Effects for Linear (8 Node Brick) and Quadratic (27 Node Brick) Finite Elements on Wave Propagation.	1810
311.6	Verification of the Seismic Input (Domain Reduction Method) for 3C, Inclined Seismic Wave Fields	1820
311.6.1	Inclined, 3C Seismic Waves in a Free Field	1820
311.6.1.1	Ricker Wavelets	1822
311.6.2	Vertical (1C) Seismic Waves in a Free Field	1827
311.6.2.1	Morgan Hill and Kocaeli Earthquakes.	1827
311.6.3	Earthquake-Soil-Structure Interaction Verification for Simulated Northridge Seismic Motions	1831
311.6.4	Curious Case of 1C versus 3C modeling	1831
311.6.5	Earthquake-Soil-Structure Interaction for Surface and Embedded Structures	1840
311.6.5.1	Uniform half-space.	1840
311.6.5.2	Layered half-space	1840
311.6.5.3	Layered Layered over rigid lower boundary	1840
311.7	Case History: Simple Structure on Nonlinear Soil	1841
311.7.1	Simplified Models for Verification	1841
311.7.1.1	Model Description	1841
311.7.1.2	Static Pushover Test on Elastic-Plastic Soil Column	1843
311.7.1.3	Dynamic Test on Elastic Soil Column.	1843
311.7.1.4	Dynamic Test on Elastic-Plastic Soil Column	1845
311.7.1.5	2d Model	1849

311.7.1.6	Input Motions	1849
311.7.1.7	Boundary Conditions	1852
311.7.1.8	Structure	1853
311.7.1.9	Structure with Fixed Base	1855
311.7.1.10	Results	1858
311.7.2	Full nonlinear 3d Model	1861
311.7.2.1	Description of Model	1863
311.7.2.2	Results	1864
311.8	Lotung Large Scale Seismic Test (LLSST) Earthquake 07	1866
311.8.1	Introduction	1866
311.8.2	Input motion and input method	1866
311.8.3	Results	1866
312	Verification and Validation for Static and Dynamic Behavior of Soil-Structure-Interaction (2012-2017-2018-2019-2021-)	1870
312.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	1871
312.2	Solid-Beam Model-Comparison of Real-ESSI eigen frequencies with ANSYS and Sofistik	1872
312.3	Solid-Beam Model-Comparison of model responses using elastic beams with 12dofs and 9dofs	1873
312.3.1	FEM Model	1873
312.3.2	Static Analysis	1873
312.3.3	Dynamic Analysis-Applying Force	1873
312.3.4	Dynamic Analysis-Applying Displacement	1873
312.3.5	Comparison of eigen frequencies between models of using 9dof beam and 12dof beam	1877
312.3.6	Eigen modes of model using 12dof beam	1877
312.3.7	Eigen Modes of model using 9dof beam	1877
312.4	Validation Using UNR Soil Box Test Setup	1877
313	Verification and Validation for Dynamic Solid-Fluid Interaction (2017-2018-2019-2020-2021-)	1883
313.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	1884
313.2	V&V Examples	1884
313.2.1	Box sloshing	1884

313.2.2	Dam Break	1886
313.3	Verification & Validation	1886
313.3.1	Free Surface Flow validation	1886
313.3.2	Mass conservation verification.	1888
313.3.3	SFI Verification & Validation	1888
314	Quality Management System	
	(2002-2005-2018-2019-2020-2021-)	1891
314.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	1892
314.2	Reasoning Behind this Activity	1892
314.3	Real-ESSI Simulator System Quality Management System, based on ISO/IEC/IEEE 90003 Standard	1893
314.3.1	Real-ESSI Simulator Developer Organization	1893
314.3.1.1	Internal Issues	1893
314.3.1.2	Internal Issues	1893
314.3.1.3	External and Internal Issues for the Real-ESSI Simulator	1894
314.3.1.4	Needs and expectations of Interested Parties	1894
314.3.2	Scope of the Real-ESSI Simulator Quality Management System	1895
314.4	Real-ESSI Simulator System Quality Management System, based on ASME NQA-1 Standard	1896
314.4.1	ASME NQA-1 for the Real-ESSI Simulator System.	1896
315	Comparison with Other Programs	
	(2016-2017-2020-2021-)	1897
315.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	1898
315.1.1	Reasoning Behind this Activity	1898
400	Education, Training and Modeling, Simulation Examples	1899
401	Ten Section Course on Nonlinear Finite Element Methods for Realistic Modeling and Simulation of Earthquakes, and Soils, and Structures, and their Interaction, Real-ESSI	
	(1998-2021-)	1900
401.1	Delivery	1901
401.2	Objectives	1901
401.3	Additional Information.	1902

401.4	Teaching Plan, Topics	1904
401.4.1	Section I, Introduction	1905
401.4.2	Section II, Inelastic Finite Elements	1906
401.4.3	Section III, Micromechanics of Elasto-Plasticity	1907
401.4.4	Section IV, Incremental Elastic-Plastic Theory	1908
401.4.5	Section V, Inelastic, Elasto-Plastic Solids Modeling.	1909
401.4.6	Section VI, Inelastic, Elastic-Plastic Interfaces, Joints, Contacts Modeling .	1910
401.4.7	Section VII, Inelastic, Elastic-Plastic Structural Modeling	1911
401.4.8	Section VIII, Nonlinear Analysis Progress	1912
401.4.9	Section IX, Verification and Validation	1913
401.4.10	Section X, Practical Considerations for Nonlinear Analysis	1914
402	Ten Section Course on Dynamic Finite Element Methods for Realistic Modeling and Simulation of Earthquakes, and Soils, and Structures, and their Interaction, Real-ESSI (1998-2021-)	1915
402.1	Delivery	1916
402.2	Objectives	1916
402.3	Additional Information.	1917
402.4	Teaching Plan, Topics	1919
	_____ Part One, Dynamic FEM	1920
402.4.1	Section I, Introduction	1920
402.4.2	Section II, Dynamic FEM	1921
402.4.3	Section III, Nonlinear FEM	1922
402.4.4	Section IV, Time Domain Nonlinear Dynamic FEM	1923
	_____ Part Two, ESSI Application	1924
402.4.5	Section V, Earthquake Soil Structure Interaction (ESSI).	1924
402.4.6	Section VI, Seismic Motions	1925
402.4.7	Section VII, Coupling with Internal and External Fluids	1926
402.4.8	Section VIII, Dynamic Stochastic Elastic-Plastic FEM (SEPFEM)	1927
402.4.9	Section IX, Verification and Validation	1928
402.4.10	Section X, ESSI Modeling and Simulation Synthesis	1929
403	Nonlinear ESSI for Professional Practice, A Short Course (2017-2022-)	1930
403.1	Short Course Delivery	1931

403.2	Objectives	1931
404	Online Education and Training	
	(2019-2020-2021-)	1935
404.1	Real-ESSI Simulator Online Education and Training	1936
404.1.1	Modeling and Simulations for ESSI.	1937
404.1.1.1	Introduction to Modeling and Simulation	1937
404.1.1.2	Introduction to Modeling Simplifications, Epistemic Uncertainty	1937
404.1.1.3	Introduction to Parametric, Aleatory Uncertainty	1937
404.1.2	Real-ESSI Simulator Modeling and Simulation System	1938
404.1.3	Finite Element Method	1939
404.1.3.1	Background.	1939
404.1.3.2	Nonlinear, Inelastic FEM	1939
404.1.3.3	Dynamic FEM	1939
404.1.4	Deterministic Elasto-Plasticity	1940
404.1.4.1	Introduction to Modeling and Simulation	1940
404.1.4.2	Theory Background.	1940
404.1.4.3	Elastic-Plastic Material Model Choices	1940
404.1.4.4	Calibrating Elastic-Plastic Material Models	1940
404.1.5	Seismic Energy Dissipation	1942
404.1.5.1	Theory Background	1942
404.1.5.2	Illustrative Examples	1942
404.1.6	Probabilistic Elasto-Plasticity and Stochastic Elastic-Plastic Finite Element Method	1943
404.1.6.1	Theory Background	1943
404.1.6.2	Choice and Calibration of Probabilistic Material Models and Probabilistic Seismic Loads	1943
404.1.6.3	Simple Probabilistic Examples	1943
404.1.6.4	Probabilistic Wave Propagation Examples	1943
404.1.7	Seismic Motions	1945
404.1.8	Earthquake Soil Structure Interaction	1946
404.1.9	Verification and Validation	1947
404.1.10	High Performance Computing.	1948
404.1.10.1	HPC Introduction	1948
404.1.10.2	HPC and Real-ESSI	1948

404.1.10.3	Real-ESSI Parallel Computing Examples.	1948
404.1.11	Real-ESSI Simulator Examples	1949
405	Constitutive, Material Behaviour Examples	
	(2016-2017-2019-2023-)	1950
405.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	1951
405.2	Elastic Solid Constitutive Examples	1952
405.2.1	Linear Elastic Constitutive Examples	1952
405.2.1.1	Pure Shear, Monotonic Loading.	1952
405.2.1.2	Pure Shear, Cyclic Loading	1953
405.2.1.3	Uniaxial Strain, Monotonic Loading	1954
405.2.1.4	Uniaxial Strain, Cyclic Loading	1955
405.2.2	Nonlinear Elastic Constitutive Examples	1956
405.2.2.1	Triaxial Uniform Pressure, Monotonic Loading	1956
405.3	Elastic Plastic Solid Constitutive Examples	1957
405.3.1	Elastic Perfectly Plastic Constitutive Examples	1957
405.3.1.1	Pure Shear.	1957
405.3.1.2	Uniaxial Strain	1958
405.3.2	Elastic Plastic, Isotropic Hardening, Constitutive Examples.	1959
405.3.2.1	Pure Shear, Monotonic Loading.	1959
405.3.2.2	Pure Shear, Cyclic Loading	1960
405.3.2.3	Uniaxial Strain, Monotonic Loading	1961
405.3.2.4	Uniaxial Strain, Cyclic Loading	1962
405.3.3	Elastic Plastic, Kinematic Hardening, Constitutive Examples	1963
405.3.3.1	Pure Shear, Monotonic Loading.	1963
405.3.3.2	Pure Shear, Cyclic Loading	1964
405.3.3.3	Uniaxial Strain, Monotonic Loading	1965
405.3.3.4	Uniaxial Strain, Cyclic Loading	1966
405.3.4	Elastic Plastic, Armstrong-Frederick, von-Mises, Constitutive Examples	1967
405.3.4.1	Pure Shear, Cyclic Loading	1967
405.3.5	Elastic Plastic, Armstrong-Frederick, Drucker-Prager, Constitutive Examples	1968
405.3.5.1	Pure Shear, Cyclic Loading	1968
405.3.6	Elastic Plastic, SaniSAND, Constitutive Examples	1969
405.3.6.1	Bardet Constraint Examples	1969

405.4	Stiffness Reduction and Damping Curves Modeling	1970
405.4.1	Multi-yield-surface von-Mises	1970
405.4.1.1	Model description	1970
405.4.1.2	Real-ESSI input file	1970
405.4.2	Multi-yield-surface Drucker-Prager	1973
405.4.2.1	Problem description	1973
405.4.2.2	Real-ESSI input file:	1973
405.4.3	Simulate Stiffness Reduction using von-Mises Armstrong-Frederick.	1976
405.4.3.1	Model description	1976
405.4.3.2	Real-ESSI input file:	1976
405.5	Cosserat, Micropolar Material Modeling	1978
405.5.1	Cosserat, Micropolar Elastic Material Model (example in development)	1979
405.5.2	Cosserat, Micropolar Elastic-Plastic von Mises Material Model (example in development)	
	1980	
405.5.3	Cosserat, Micropolar Elastic-Plastic Druekcr Prager Material Model (example in	
	development)	1981
406	Static Examples	
	(2016-2017-2019-2021-)	1982
406.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	1982
406.2	Static Elastic Solid Examples	1982
406.2.1	Statics, Bricks, with Nodal Forces	1982
406.2.1.1	Statics, 8 Node Brick, with Nodal Forces	1982
406.2.1.2	Statics, 27 Node Brick, with Nodal Forces	1983
406.2.1.3	Statics, 8-27 Node Brick, with Nodal Forces	1984
406.2.2	Statics, Bricks, with Surface Loads	1985
406.2.2.1	Statics, 8 Node Brick, with Surface Forces.	1985
406.2.2.2	Statics, 27 Node Brick, with Surface Forces	1985
406.2.3	Statics, Bricks, with Body Forces	1986
406.2.3.1	Statics, 8 Node Brick, with Body Forces	1986
406.2.3.2	Statics, 27 Node Brick, with Body Forces	1988
406.2.3.3	Statics, 8-27 Node Brick, with Body Forces	1989
406.3	Static Elastic Structural Examples	1990
406.3.1	Statics, Truss, with Nodal Forces	1990
406.3.2	Statics, Elastic Beam, with Nodal Forces	1991

406.3.3	Statics, Elastic Beam, with Body Forces	1992
406.3.4	Statics, ShearBeam Element	1993
406.3.4.1	Problem description	1993
406.3.4.2	Results	1993
406.3.5	Statics, Elastic Shell, with Nodal Forces	1995
406.3.5.1	ANDES Shell, out of Plane Force	1995
406.3.5.2	ANDES Shell, Perpendicular to Plane, bending	1995
406.3.5.3	ANDES Shell, In-plane Force	1995
406.3.6	Statics, Elastic Shell, with Body Forces	1997
406.3.6.1	ANDES shell under the out-of-Plane Body Force	1997
406.3.6.2	ANDES Shell, In-plane Body Force	1997
406.4	Statics, Interface/Contact Elements	1999
406.4.1	Statics, Two Bar Normal Interface/Contact Problem Under Monotonic Loading. 1999	
406.4.2	Statics, Four Bar Interface/Contact Problem With Normal and Shear Force Under Monotonic Loading	2000
406.4.3	Statics, 3-D Truss example with normal confinement and Shear Loading	2002
406.4.4	Statics, Six Solid Blocks Example With Interface/Contact	2004
406.5	Static Inelastic Solid Examples	2005
406.5.1	Statics, Bricks, Elastic-Plastic, von Mises, with Nodal Forces	2005
406.5.2	Statics, Bricks, Elastic-Plastic, Drucker Prager, with Nodal Forces	2005
406.6	Static Inelastic Shell Examples (example in development)	2008
406.7	Statics, Elastic Single Solid Finite Element Examples.	2008
406.7.1	Statics, Linear Elastic, Solid Examples	2008
406.7.1.1	Statics, Pure Shear, Monotonic Loading.	2008
406.7.1.2	Pure Shear, Cyclic Loading	2009
406.7.1.3	Uniaxial Strain, Monotonic Loading	2009
406.7.1.4	Uniaxial Strain, Cyclic Loading	2010
406.7.2	Statics, Nonlinear Elastic, Duncan-Chang, Pure Shear, Solid Examples	2010
406.7.2.1	Pure Shear, Monotonic Loading.	2010
406.7.2.2	Pure Shear, Cyclic Loading	2011
406.8	Statics, Elastic-Plastic Single Solid Finite Element Examples	2013
406.8.1	Statics, Elastic Perfectly Plastic, Cyclic Loading, Pure Shear Solid Examples	2013
406.8.1.1	Statics, von-Mises Yield Function, Isotropic Hardening	2014

406.8.1.2	Statics, von Mises Yield Function, Kinematic Hardening	2015
406.8.1.3	Statics, Drucker Prager Yield Function, von-Mises Plastic Potential Function, Perfectly Plastic Hardening Rule	2016
406.8.1.4	Statics, Drucker Prager Yield Function, Drucker Prager Plastic Potential Function, Perfectly Plastic Hardening Rule.	2017
406.8.2	Statics, Drucker Prager with Armstrong Frederick Nonlinear Kinematic Hardening Material Model	2018
406.9	Statics, Elastic, Fiber Cross Section Beam Finite Element Examples	2020
406.9.1	Statics, Linear Elastic, Normal Loading and Pure Bending Fiber Cross Section Beam Finite Element Examples	2020
406.9.1.1	Linear Elastic Normal Loading, Fiber Cross Section Beam Finite Element Examples	2020
406.9.1.2	Linear Elastic Pure Bending, Fiber Cross Section Beam Finite Element Examples	2021
406.10	Statics, Elastic-Plastic, Fiber Cross Section Beam Finite Element Examples	2022
406.10.1	Statics, Elastic-Plastic, Normal Loading and Pure Bending Fiber Cross Section Beam Finite Element	2022
406.10.1.1	Elastic-Plastic Normal Loading, (Fiber Cross Section) Beam Finite Element Examples	2022
406.10.1.2	Elastic-Plastic Pure Bending, (Fiber Cross Section) Beam Finite Element Examples	2023
406.11	Statics, Elastic, Inelastic Wall Finite Element Examples	2024
406.11.1	Statics, Linear Elastic, Wall Finite Element Examples	2024
406.11.1.1	Statics, Linear Elastic, Wall Finite Element Examples	2024
406.11.1.2	Linear Elastic, Bi-Axial, Wall Finite Element Examples	2025
406.11.1.3	Linear Elastic, Shear, (Fiber Cross Section) Wall Finite Element Examples	2026
406.12	Statics, Elastic-Plastic Wall Finite Element Examples	2027
406.12.1	Statics, Elastic-Plastic, in Plane, Wall Finite Element Examples	2027
406.12.1.1	Elastic-Plastic, Uni-Axial, Wall Finite Element Examples	2027
406.12.1.2	Elastic-Plastic, Bi-Axial, Wall Finite Element Examples	2028
406.12.1.3	Elastic-Plastic, Shear, Wall Finite Element Examples	2029
406.13	Statics, Solution Advancement Control	2030
406.13.1	Increments: Load Control	2030
406.13.1.1	Solids Example, Elastic Plastic Isotropic Hardening	2030

406.13.1.2	Solids Example, Elastic Plastic Kinematic Hardening	2031
406.13.1.3	Inelastic Beam Example, Steel and Reinforced Concrete.	2032
406.13.2	Statics, Increments: Displacement Control	2032
406.13.2.1	Statics, Single Displacement Control	2032
406.13.2.2	Solids Example, Elastic-Perfectly Plastic	2032
406.13.2.3	Solids Example, Elastic Plastic Isotropic Hardening	2033
406.13.2.4	Solids Example, Elastic Plastic Kinematic Hardening	2033
406.13.2.5	Inelastic Beam Example, Steel and Reinforced Concrete.	2035
406.13.3	Statics, Solution Algorithms	2037
406.13.3.1	Statics, Solution Algorithm: No Convergence Check	2037
406.13.3.2	Statics, Solution Algorithm: Newton Algorithm	2038
406.13.3.3	Statics, Solution Algorithm: Newton Algorithm with Line Search	2039
406.13.4	Statics, Solution Advancement Control, Iterations: Convergence Criteria .	2040
406.13.4.1	Statics, Solution Advancement Control, Convergence Criteria: Unbalanced Force	2040
406.13.4.2	Statics, Solution Advancement Control, Convergence Criteria: Displacement Increment	2041
406.13.5	Statics, Solution Advancement Control, Different Convergence Tolerances (Examples in preparation)	2042
406.14	Statics, Small Practical Examples	2043
406.14.1	Statics, Elastic Beam Element for a Simple Frame Structure	2043
406.14.1.1	Problem Description	2043
406.14.2	Statics, 4NodeANDES Square Plate, Four Edges Clamped	2044
406.14.2.1	Problem description	2044
406.14.2.2	Numerical model	2044
406.14.3	Statics, Six Solid Blocks Example With Interface/Contact	2046
407	Dynamic Examples (2016-2017-2018-2019-2021-)	2048
407.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	2048
407.2	Dynamic Solution Advancement (in Time)	2048
407.2.1	Dynamics: Newmark Method	2048
407.2.1.1	Newmark Model Description	2048
407.2.1.2	Newmark Results	2049

407.2.2	Dynamics: Hilber-Hughes-Taylor (α) Method	2049
407.2.2.1	HHT Model Description	2049
407.2.2.2	HHT Results	2049
407.3	Dynamics: Solution Advancement: Time Step Size	2050
407.3.1	Dynamics: Solution Advancement: Equal Time Step	2050
407.3.1.1	Model Description	2050
407.3.1.2	Results	2050
407.3.2	Dynamics Solution Advancement: Variable Time Step	2051
407.3.2.1	Model Description	2051
407.3.2.2	Results	2052
407.4	Dynamics: Energy Dissipation, Damping	2052
407.4.1	Dynamics: Energy Dissipation: Viscous Damping	2052
407.4.1.1	Dynamics: Energy Dissipation, Viscous Damping: Rayleigh Damping.	2052
407.4.1.2	Dynamics: Energy Dissipation, Viscous Damping: Caughey Damping.	2053
407.4.2	Dynamics: Energy Dissipation: Material (Elastic-Plastic, Hysteretic) Damping 2053	
407.4.2.1	Dynamics: Energy Dissipation, Material Damping: Elastic Perfectly Plas- tic Models	2053
407.4.2.2	Dynamics: Energy Dissipation, Material/Hysteretic Damping: Elastic Plastic Isotropic Hardening Models	2055
407.4.2.3	Dynamics: Energy Dissipation, Material/Hysteretic Damping: Elastic Plastic Kinematic Hardening Models	2055
407.4.2.4	Dynamics: Energy Dissipation, Material/Hysteretic Damping: Elastic Plastic Armstrong-Frederick Models	2056
407.4.3	Dynamics: Energy Dissipation: Numerical Damping	2057
407.4.3.1	Energy Dissipation, Numerical Damping: Newmark Method	2057
407.4.3.2	Dynamics: Energy Dissipation, Numerical Damping: Hilber-Hughes-Taylor (α) Method	2058
407.5	Dynamics: Elastic Solid Dynamic Examples.	2059
407.5.1	Model Description	2059
407.5.2	Results	2059
407.6	Dynamics: Elastic Structural Dynamic Examples.	2060
407.6.1	Model Description	2060
407.6.2	Results	2060

407.7	Dynamics: Interface/Contact Elements	2062
407.7.1	Dynamics: Hard Interface/Contact: One Bar Normal Interface/Contact Dynamics	2062
407.7.1.1	Model Description	2062
407.7.1.2	Dynamics: No Viscous Damping	2063
407.7.1.3	Dynamics: Normal Viscous Damping Between Interface/Contact Node Pairs	2063
407.7.1.4	Dynamics: Explicit Simulation	2064
407.7.2	Dynamics: Hard Interface/Contact: Frictional Single Degree of Freedom Problem	2065
407.7.2.1	Dynamics: No Viscous Damping	2066
407.7.2.2	Dynamics: Tangential Viscous Damping Between Interface/Contact Node Pairs	2066
407.7.2.3	Dynamics: Explicit Simulation	2067
407.7.3	Dynamics: Soft Interface/Contact: One Bar Normal Interface/Contact Dynamics 2068	
407.7.3.1	Dynamics: No Viscous Damping	2069
407.7.3.2	Dynamics: With Normal Viscous Damping Between Interface/Contact Node Pairs.	2069
407.7.3.3	Dynamics: Explicit Simulation	2070
407.7.4	Dynamics: Soft Interface/Contact: Frictional Single Degree of Freedom Problem	2071
407.7.4.1	Dynamics: No Viscous Damping	2072
407.7.4.2	Dynamics: Tangential Viscous Damping Between Interface/Contact Node Pairs	2072
407.7.4.3	Dynamics: Explicit Simulation	2073
407.7.5	Dynamics: Split Beam	2074
407.7.5.1	Model Description	2074
407.7.5.2	Dynamics: Split Beam With Hard Interface/Contact	2074
407.7.5.3	Dynamics: Split Beam With Soft Interface/Contact	2075
407.7.6	Dynamics: Block on Soil ESSI	2076
407.8	Dynamics: Inelastic Solid Examples.	2078
407.9	Dynamics: Inelastic Structural Examples	2079

407.10	Dynamics: Domain Reduction Method (DRM)	2080
407.10.1	Dynamics: DRM One Dimensional (1D) Model	2080
407.10.2	Dynamics: Three Dimensional (3D) DRM Model	2084
407.10.3	Dynamics: DRM Model with Structure	2086
407.11	Dynamics: Eigen Analysis	2087
407.12	Dynamics: Fully Coupled u-p-U and u-p Elements	2088
407.13	Dynamics: Partially Saturated / Unsaturated u-p-U Element (example in development)	2089
407.14	Dynamics: Coupled Interface/Contact Element (example in development)	2090
407.15	Dynamics: Buoyant Forces (example in development)	2091
407.16	Chapter Summary and Highlights	2092
408	Stochastic Examples	
	(2018-2019-2020-2021-)	2093
408.1	Probabilistic Constitutive Modeling	2093
408.1.1	Probabilistic Constitutive Modeling: Linear Elastic	2093
408.1.2	Probabilistic Constitutive Modeling: Elasto-Plastic	2093
408.2	Probabilistic Characterization of Seismic Motions	2095
408.3	1D Stochastic Seismic Wave Propagation	2096
408.3.1	1D Stochastic Seismic Wave Propagation: Linear Elastic	2096
408.3.2	1D Stochastic Seismic Wave Propagation: Elasto-Plastic	2097
408.4	1D Stochastic Seismic Wave Propagation: Sobol Sensitivity Analysis	2099
409	Large Scale, Realistic Examples	
	(2016-2018-)	2100
410	Short Course Examples	
	(2017-2023-)	2101
410.1	Nonlinear Analysis Steps	2102
410.1.1	Free Field 1C	2102
410.1.2	Free Field 3C	2106
410.1.3	Soil-Foundation Interaction 3D	2110
410.1.4	Soil-Structure Interaction 3D	2114
410.1.5	Analysis of a Structure without Soil	2121
410.1.5.1	Eigen Analysis	2121
410.1.5.2	Imposed Motion	2123

410.2	Day 1: Overview	2126
410.2.1	Nuclear Power Plant with 3C motions from SW4	2126
410.2.2	Nuclear Power Plant with 1C motions from Deconvolution	2128
410.2.3	Nuclear Power Plant with 3×1C motions from Deconvolution.	2130
410.2.4	Single Element Models: Illustration of the Elastic-Plastic Behavior	2132
410.2.5	Pushover for Nonlinear Frame.	2134
410.2.6	Pre-Processing examples with Gmsh	2136
410.2.6.1	Cantilever Example	2136
410.2.6.2	Brick-shell-beam Example	2137
410.2.6.3	DRM 2D Example	2139
410.2.6.4	DRM 3D Example	2140
410.2.7	Post-processing examples with ParaView	2141
410.2.7.1	Slice Visualization	2141
410.2.7.2	Stress Visualization	2142
410.2.7.3	Pore Pressure Visualization with upU Element	2143
410.2.7.4	Eigen Visualization.	2144
410.2.8	Check Model and Visualization of Boundary Conditions	2145
410.2.9	Restart Simulation	2146
410.2.9.1	Restart in the next stage	2146
410.2.9.2	Restart inside the stage	2147
410.3	Day 2: Seismic Motions	2148
410.3.1	Deconvolution and Propagation of 1C Motions, 1D Model	2148
410.3.2	Convolution and Propagation of 1C Motions, 1D Model.	2148
410.3.3	Convolution, Deconvolution and Propagation of 1C Motions, 2D Model.	2148
410.3.3.1	ESSI 3D building model, deconvolution 1C model, shell model with DRM	2150
410.3.4	Deconvolution 3×1C Motions.	2152
410.3.4.1	Free field 1C model, deconvolution 3×1C motion, model with DRM	2152
410.3.4.2	Free field 3D model, deconvolution 3×1C motion, model with DRM	2154
410.3.4.3	ESSI 3D building model, deconvolution 3×1C motion, shell model with DRM.	2155
410.3.5	Mesh Dependence of Wave Propagation Frequencies	2157
410.3.6	Application of 3C Motions from SW4.	2159
410.3.6.1	3C Seismic Motion from SW4	2159
410.3.6.2	Free field 3D model, 3C motion, model with DRM.	2161

410.3.6.3	ESSI 3D building model, 3C motion, shell model with DRM	2163
410.4	Day 3: Inelastic, Nonlinear Analysis.	2164
410.4.1	Single Element Models: Illustration of the Elastic-Plastic Behavior.	2164
410.4.1.1	von-Mises Perfectly Plastic Material Model.	2164
410.4.1.2	von-Mises Armstrong-Frederick Material Model.	2164
410.4.1.3	von-Mises G/Gmax Material Model	2166
410.4.1.4	Drucker-Prager Perfectly Plastic Material Model	2168
410.4.1.5	Drucker-Prager Armstrong-Frederick Non-Associated Material Model	2168
410.4.1.6	Drucker-Prager G/Gmax Non-Associated Material Model	2169
410.4.2	Wave Propagation Through Elasto-plastic Soil	2171
410.4.3	Contact/Interface/Joint Examples	2172
410.4.3.1	Axial Behavior: Stress-Based Hard Contact/Interface/Joint Example.	2172
410.4.3.2	Axial Behavior: Stress-Based Soft Contact/Interface/Joint Example	2172
410.4.3.3	Shear behavior: Stress-Based Elastic Perfectly Plastic Contact/Interface/Joint 2173	
410.4.3.4	Shear behavior: Stress-Based Elastic-Hardening Contact/Interface/Joint	2173
410.4.3.5	Shear behavior: Stress-Based Elastic-Hardening-Softening Contact/Interface/Joint 2173	
410.4.3.6	Force Based Contact/Interface/Joint Example: Base Isolator.	2175
410.4.4	Inelastic Frame Pushover	2176
410.4.5	Inelastic Wall Pushover	2179
410.4.6	Viscous Nonlinear behavior	2181
410.4.7	Numerical Damping Example	2183
410.4.8	Nuclear Power Plant Example with Nonlinearities	2185
410.4.9	Buildings, ATC-144/FEMA-P-2091 Examples	2187
500	Application to Practical Engineering Problems	2188
501	Static Soil-Pile and Soil-Pile Group Interaction in Single Phase Soils	
	(1999-2002-)	2189
501.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	2190
501.2	Numerical Analysis of Pile Behavior under Lateral Loads in Layered Elastic– Plastic Soils.	2190
501.2.1	Introduction	2190

501.2.2	Constitutive Models	2191
501.2.3	Simulation Results	2192
501.2.3.1	Pile Models	2192
501.2.3.2	Plastic Zones	2193
501.2.3.3	$p - y$ Curves	2194
501.2.3.4	Comparisons of Pile Behavior in Uniform and Layered Soils	2201
501.2.3.5	Comparison to Centrifuge Tests and LPile Results	2207
501.2.4	Summary	2208
501.3	Study of soil layering effects on lateral loading behavior of piles	2212
501.3.1	Introduction	2212
501.3.2	Finite Element Pile Models.	2213
501.3.3	Constitutive Models	2215
501.3.4	Comparison of $p - y$ Behavior in Uniform and Layered Soil Deposits.	2216
501.3.4.1	Uniform Clay Deposit and Clay Deposit with an Interlayer of Sand.	2216
501.3.4.2	Uniform Sand Deposit and Sand Deposit with an Interlayer of Soft Clay.	2219
501.3.5	Parametric Study for the Lateral Resistance Ratios in Terms of Stiffness and Strength Parameters.	2221
501.3.6	Summary	2228
501.4	Numerical Study of Group Effects for Pile Groups in Sands	2231
501.4.1	Introduction	2231
501.4.2	Pile Models	2233
501.4.3	Summary of Centrifuge Tests	2233
501.4.4	Finite Element Pile Models.	2233
501.4.5	Simulation Results	2234
501.4.6	Plastic Zone	2235
501.4.7	Bending Moment	2237
501.4.8	Load Distribution	2242
501.4.9	$p - y$ Curve	2247
501.4.10	Comparison with the Centrifuge Tests.	2247
501.4.11	Conclusions	2254
501.4.12	Single Pile in Dry Soil Modeling	2255
502	Earthquake Soil Structure Interaction, General Aspects	
	(1989-2002-2009-2010-2011-2017-2018-2019-2020-2021-)	2259
502.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	2260

502.2	Free Field Ground Motions	2260
502.2.1	Seismic Motions: Available Data	2262
502.2.2	Multi-Directional and Seismic Input Coming in at Inclined Angle	2265
502.2.3	Free Field Motion Development	2266
502.2.3.1	Details of Free Field Motion Development	2266
502.2.4	Free Field Ground Motions Development: Closed Form Solution.	2270
502.2.4.1	Three Component, 3C Motion Development	2270
502.2.4.2	One Component, 1C Motion Development.	2270
502.2.5	Free Field Ground Motions Development: Frequency Wave Number Method (Green's functions) (f_k)	2272
502.2.6	Free Field Ground Motions Development: Fault Slip Model	2278
502.2.6.1	Input Motion	2284
502.2.6.2	Select Seismic Motions, Displacement Array Traces	2286
502.2.6.3	Animations of Fault Slip Motions	2330
502.2.6.4	Point Fault Slip Motions, Arrays and Particle Motions	2331
502.3	Dynamic Soil-Foundation-Structure Interaction	2332
502.3.1	Animation of the DRM on a 1D Stack of Elements	2332
502.3.2	Using External Finite-Difference Seismic Code for DRM Motions.	2333
502.3.3	Seismic Wave Propagation Modeling and Simulation: Numerical Accuracy and Stability	2344
502.3.3.1	Grid Spacing Δh	2344
502.3.3.2	Time Step Length Δt	2345
502.3.3.3	Nonlinear Material Models.	2345
502.3.4	Seismic Wave Propagation Modeling and Simulation: Domain Boundaries .	2346
502.3.5	Soil/Rock Modeling and Simulation	2348
502.3.6	Soil/Rock – Foundation Contact (Slipping and Gaping) Modeling and Simulation 2348	
502.3.7	Buoyancy Modeling and Simulation	2349
502.3.8	Structural Foundations Modeling and Simulation	2351
502.3.9	Seismic Isolator Modeling and Simulation	2352
502.3.10	Structural Components Modeling and Simulation	2353
502.3.11	Nonlinear Time Domain Analysis Progress and Example.	2354
502.3.11.1	Model Development	2354
502.3.11.2	Simulation Development	2354

502.3.11.3	Seismic Motions.	2354
502.4	Step by Step, Hierarchical Inelastic ESSI Analysis	2354
502.4.1	ESSI Model Verification	2354
502.4.2	ESSI Model Validation	2357
502.5	Metamaterials and ESSI	2358
503	Earthquake-Soil-Structure Interaction, Bridge Structures	
	(2003-2007-2011-)	2359
503.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	2360
503.2	Case History: Earthquake-Soil-Structure Interaction for a Bridge System. . .	2361
503.2.1	Prototype Bridge Model Simulation	2361
503.2.1.1	Soil Model	2361
503.2.1.2	Element Size Determination	2362
503.2.1.3	Time Step Length Requirement	2366
503.2.1.4	Domain Reduction Method	2368
503.2.1.5	Structural Model	2368
503.2.1.6	Simulation Scenarios	2372
503.2.2	Earthquake Simulations - 1994 Northridge	2374
503.2.2.1	Input Motion	2374
503.2.2.2	Displacement Response	2376
503.2.2.3	Acceleration Response	2380
503.2.2.4	Displacement Response Spectra	2383
503.2.2.5	Acceleration Response Spectra	2387
503.2.2.6	Structural Response	2390
503.2.3	Earthquake Simulations - 1999 Turkey Kocaeli	2394
503.2.3.1	Displacement Response	2396
503.2.3.2	Acceleration Response	2400
503.2.3.3	Displacement Response Spectra	2404
503.2.3.4	Acceleration Response Spectra	2408
503.2.3.5	Structural Response	2412
503.2.4	Earthquake Soil Structure Interaction Effects	2416
503.2.4.1	How Strength of Soil Foundations Affects ESSI	2416
503.2.4.2	How Site Non-Uniformity Affects ESSI	2422
503.2.4.3	How Input Motion Affects ESSI	2443

504	Earthquake-Soil-Structure Interaction, Nuclear Power Plants	
	(2010-2011-2012-2017-2018-2019-2020-2021-2023-)	2452
504.1	Stick/Solid Finite Element Model	2453
504.1.1	Slipping behavior of SFSI models by considering 1C wave propagation	2455
504.1.1.1	Morgan Hill earthquake	2456
504.1.1.2	Ricker wave	2462
504.1.2	Slipping behavior of SFSI models by considering 3C wave propagation	2468
504.1.2.1	Ricker wave, with fault located at 45° towards the top middle point of the model	2470
504.1.2.2	Ricker wave, with fault located at 34° towards the top middle point of the model	2477
504.2	Three Dimensional (3C) Seismic Wave Fields and Behavior of Nuclear Power Plants (NPPs).	2484
504.2.1	Development of Seismic Motions: Large Scale Free Field Model.	2484
504.2.2	NPP Response, Model #01	2484
504.3	3D Representative NPP Structure Model(s)	2485
504.3.1	Model #01, Single NPP	2486
504.3.2	Model #02, Single NPP	2491
504.3.3	Model #03, Double NPP, Soil-Structure-Soil-Structure Interaction.	2496
504.3.4	Model #04, Small Modular Reactor (SMR)	2503
504.4	3C (6C) vs 1C Seismic Motions	2504
504.4.1	Appropriate Use of 3C and $3 \times 1C$ and 1C Seismic Motions	2504
504.4.2	Illustration of Use of 3C and 1C Seismic Motions	2505
504.5	3C (6C) vs $3 \times 1C$ vs 1C Seismic Motions	2513
504.6	3D Nonlinear Modeling for Nuclear Power Plants	2514
504.6.1	Introduction	2514
504.6.2	Model Development and Simulation Details	2515
504.6.2.1	Structure Model.	2516
504.6.2.2	Soil Model	2516
504.6.2.3	Interface/Contact Modeling	2517
504.6.2.4	Seismic Motions.	2518
504.6.2.5	Domain Reduction Method	2519
504.6.2.6	Staged Simulation	2520

504.6.3	Simulation Results	2520
504.6.4	Energy Dissipation	2524
504.6.5	Conclusion	2527
504.7	3D Nonlinear Modeling for Small Modular Reactors (SMRs)	2528
504.7.1	Introduction	2529
504.7.2	Domain Reduction method	2531
504.7.3	3C Free Field Motions	2532
504.7.4	Model Description	2533
504.7.4.1	Embedded Nuclear Structure	2534
504.7.4.2	Soil Model	2534
504.7.4.3	Soft Contact Element	2534
504.7.4.4	Simulation Procedure.	2534
504.7.5	Simulation Results	2535
504.7.6	Energy Dissipation	2540
504.7.7	SMR Inelastic Modeling Conclusions	2543
504.8	Inclined Waves, Free Field and SMR Modeling	2543
504.8.1	Free Field Modeling and Verification	2543
504.8.2	Deeply Embedded Soil-Structure Model	2549
504.8.3	SMR Excited with Inclined SV Waves.	2551
504.8.4	SMR Excited with Variable Frequency Inclined SV Waves	2555
504.9	Three Dimensional (3D) Inelastic Modeling for Structure Soil Structure Interaction 2561	
504.10	Case Study of Cruas Nuclear Power Plant under Seismic Load from Le Teil Earthquake	2562
504.10.1	Introduction	2563
504.10.2	Notation.	2564
504.10.3	Le Teil Earthquake	2565
504.10.3.1	A Short Résumé on the Seismological Description of Earthquakes	2565
504.10.3.2	Slip along Rouvière Fault near Le Teil	2568
504.10.3.3	Site Description	2568
504.10.4	FE Simulation of Ground Motions from Le Teil Earthquake	2571
504.10.4.1	Preliminary 2D Simulation of Le Teil Earthquake	2571

504.10.5	Validation of the Preliminary 2D Simulation of Le Teil Earthquake	2578
504.10.5.1	Estimation of the Seismic Input	2588
504.10.5.2	Preliminary 2D Simulation of Le Teil Earthquake using DRM with THMM	2593
504.10.6	Cruas Nuclear Power Plant (NPP)	2594
504.10.7	FE Simulation of Cruas NPP under Seismic Load from Le Teil Earthquake .	2596
504.10.7.1	Verification of the Simulation.	2596
504.10.8	Finite Element Models	2602
505	Liquefaction and Cyclic Mobility	
	(2002-2006-2009-2021-)	2605
505.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	2606
505.2	Introduction	2606
505.3	Liquefaction of Level and Sloping Grounds	2609
505.3.1	Model Description	2609
505.3.2	Behavior of Saturated Level Ground	2610
505.3.3	Behavior of Saturated Sloping Ground	2612
505.4	Pile in Liquefied Ground, Staged Simulation Model Development	2614
505.4.1	First Loading Stage: Self Weight	2616
505.4.2	Second Loading Stage: Pile–Column Installation.	2618
505.4.3	Third Loading Stage: Seismic Shaking	2619
505.4.4	Free Field, Lateral and Longitudinal Models	2620
505.5	Simulation Results	2621
505.5.1	Pore Fluid Migration	2621
505.5.2	Soil Skeleton Deformation	2625
505.5.3	Pile Response	2628
505.5.4	Pile Pinning Effects	2629
506	Slope Stability in 2D and 3D	
	(1999-2010-)	2632
506.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	2633
506.2	Introduction	2633
506.3	Dam Section Geometry	2633
506.4	Finite Element Modeling	2639
506.4.1	Material Models	2639
506.4.2	Two Dimensional Models	2640
506.4.3	Three Dimensional Models	2642

506.4.4	Modeling Issues	2646
506.5	Results: Factors of Safety	2648
506.6	Uncertainty of Results	2649
506.7	Conclusion	2649
506.8	Displacement Patterns.	2650
507	Concrete Structures	
	(1989-2017-2018-2019-2020-2021-)	2653
507.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	2654
507.2	Concrete Wall/Membrane	2654
507.2.1	Introduction	2654
507.2.1.1	Motivation.	2654
507.2.2	Model Availability	2655
507.2.3	Model Development	2655
507.2.3.1	Model Mesh	2655
507.2.3.2	Plastic Damage Concrete Material Model	2658
507.2.3.3	Uniaxial Steel Material Model	2658
507.2.3.4	Material Model Parameters	2658
507.2.4	Modeling of Energy Storage and Dissipation	2660
507.2.4.1	Plastic Damage Concrete Material.	2660
507.2.5	Uniaxial Steel Material	2661
507.2.6	Modeling and Simulation Results	2662
507.2.6.1	Force–Displacement Response	2662
507.2.6.2	Strain and Stress Distribution	2664
507.2.6.3	Concrete Damage and Energy Dissipation	2666
508	ESSI for Concrete Dams	
	(2019-2020-2021-)	2671
508.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	2672
508.2	Pine Flat Dam.	2672
509	ESSI for Buildings	
	(2018-2019-2020-2021-)	2673
509.1	2D Frame with Energy Dissipation	2674
509.2	Ventura Hotel	2676
509.2.1	Finite Element Model	2676

509.3	Loma Linda Hospital	2682
509.3.1	Finite Element Model	2682
509.4	ASCE-7 Model, Low, Steel Building	2684
509.4.1	Finite Element Model	2684
509.5	ASCE-7 Model, High, Concrete Building	2688
509.5.1	Finite Element Model	2688
510	Guidebook: Modeling and Simulation of Earthquake-Soil-Structure Interaction for Nuclear Energy Installations, Dams, Buildings, Bridges, Tunnels, &c. (2016-2017-2018-2019-2020-2021-)	2692
510.1	Motivation: Modeling and Simulation of Earthquake Soil Structure Interaction	2693
510.2	Introduction	2696
510.3	Seismic Energy Input and Dissipation	2697
510.3.1	Seismic Energy Input	2697
510.3.2	Seismic Energy Dissipation	2697
510.3.2.1	Seismic Energy Dissipation, Wave Reflection and Wave Radiation . . .	2697
510.3.2.2	Seismic Energy Dissipation, Viscous Coupling	2697
510.3.2.3	Seismic Energy Dissipation, Material Inelasticity	2697
510.3.2.4	Seismic Energy Dissipation, Numerical, Algorithmic Positive and Negative Damping	2697
510.4	Modeling: Seismic Motions	2698
510.4.1	Seismic Motions: Available Data	2698
510.4.2	Seismic Motion Development	2698
510.4.2.1	Seismic Motions from Empirical Models.	2698
510.4.2.2	Seismic Motions from Geophysical Models.	2698
510.4.2.3	Seismic Motions from 3D/3C Analytic Models	2698
510.4.2.4	Seismic Motions from Full Waveform Inversion	2698
510.4.3	6C vs 3C vs 3×1C vs 1C Seismic Motions	2698
510.4.4	Incoherent Seismic Motions	2699
510.4.5	Seismic Motion Input into FEM Models	2699
510.5	Modeling: Inelastic, Nonlinear Material Modeling for Solids and Structures . .	2700
510.5.1	Inelastic Material Modeling of Rock	2700
510.5.1.1	Calibration of Inelastic Material Model Parameters for Rock	2700

510.5.2	Inelastic Material Modeling of Soil	2700
510.5.2.1	Dry Soil	2700
510.5.2.2	Fully Saturated Soil	2700
510.5.2.3	Partially Saturated, Unsaturated Soil	2700
510.5.2.4	Calibration of Inelastic Material Model Parameters for Soil	2700
510.5.3	Inelastic Material Modeling of Steel	2700
510.5.3.1	Calibration of Inelastic Material Model Parameters for Steel	2700
510.5.4	Inelastic Material Modeling of Concrete	2701
510.5.4.1	Calibration of Inelastic Material Model Parameters for Concrete.	2701
510.6	Modeling: Inelastic, Nonlinear Material Modeling for Contacts, Interfaces, and Joints	2702
510.6.1	Material Modeling of Dry Contacts, Interfaces, and Joints (Concrete, Steel – Soil, Rock)	2702
510.6.1.1	Calibration of Inelastic Material Model Parameters for Dry Contacts, In- terfaces, and Joints (Concrete, Steel – Soil, Rock).	2702
510.6.2	Material Modeling of Saturated Contacts, Interfaces, and Joints (Concrete, Steel – Soil, Rock)	2702
510.6.2.1	Calibration of Inelastic Material Model Parameters for Saturated Con- tacts, Interfaces, and Joints (Concrete, Steel – Soil, Rock)	2702
510.7	Modeling: Buoyancy	2702
510.8	Modeling: Base Isolator and Base Dissipator Systems	2703
510.8.1	Base Isolator Systems	2703
510.8.1.1	Calibration of Elastic/Inelastic Material Model Parameters for Base Iso- lator Systems	2703
510.8.2	Base Dissipator Systems	2703
510.8.2.1	Calibration of Elastic/Inelastic Material Model Parameters for Base Dis- sipator Systems	2703
510.9	Modelling: Finite Element System	2704
510.9.1	Mass Matrix	2704
510.9.1.1	Consistent Mass Matrix	2704
510.9.1.2	Lumped Mass Matrix.	2704
510.9.2	Viscous Damping Matrix.	2704
510.9.2.1	Rayleigh Damping	2704
510.9.2.2	Caughey Damping	2704

510.9.3	Stiffness Matrix	2704
510.9.3.1	Tangent Stiffness Matrix	2704
510.9.3.2	Consistent Stiffness Matrix.	2704
510.10	Modeling: Solid, Structure – Fluid Interaction Modeling	2705
510.11	Simulation: Nonlinear Finite Elements.	2706
510.11.1	Time Marching Algorithms for Solution of Nonlinear Equations of Motion	2706
510.11.1.1	Newmark Algorithm	2706
510.11.1.2	Hilber Hughes Taylor α Algorithm	2706
510.11.2	Solution of Elastic-Plastic Constitutive Equations	2706
510.11.2.1	Explicit Integration of Elastic-Plastic Constitutive Equations	2706
510.11.2.2	Implicit Integration of Elastic-Plastic Constitutive Equations	2706
510.12	Modelling Guide for ESSI	2707
510.12.1	Buildings and NPPs on Shallow Foundations, Models.	2707
510.12.2	Buildings and NPPs on Deeply Embedded Foundation (SMRs), Models	2707
510.12.3	Buildings and NPPs on Piles and Pile Group Foundations, Models	2707
510.12.4	Structure – Soil – Structure Interaction, Models.	2707
510.13	Practical Steps for Inelastic ESSI Analysis	2708
510.13.1	Model Development for ESSI	2708
510.13.2	Earthquake Soil Structure Interaction: Model Analysis	2708
510.13.3	Earthquake Soil Structure Interaction: Results Postprocessing	2708
510.14	Quality Assurance Procedures for ESSI Modeling and Simulation	2709
510.14.1	Verification.	2709
510.14.2	Validation	2709
510.15	Practical Examples, Nonlinear, Inelastic ESSI	2710
510.15.1	Nuclear Power Plant, Inelastic Structure, Inelastic Soil, Inelastic Contact/Interface, 6C/3C/3×1C/1C Seismic Motions.	2710
510.15.2	Nuclear Power Plant on Piles, Inelastic Structure, Inelastic Soil, Inelastic Contact/Interface, 6C/3C/3×1C/1C Seismic Motions	2710
510.15.3	Nuclear Power Plant, High Water Table, Inelastic Structure, Inelastic Soil, Cyclic Mobility and Liquefaction, Inelastic Saturated Contact/Interface, Buoyant Pressures, 6C/3C/3×1C/1C Seismic Motions	2710
510.15.4	Small Modular Reactor, Deeply Embedded, Inelastic Structure, Inelastic Soil, Inelastic Contact/Interface, 6C/3C/3×1C/1C Seismic Motions	2710

510.15.5	Small Modular Reactor, Deeply Embedded, High Water Table, Inelastic Structure, Inelastic Soil (Cyclic Mobility and Liquefaction), Inelastic Saturated Contact/Interface (Buoyant Pressures), 6C/3C/3×1C/1C Seismic Motions	2710
510.15.6	Multiple Buildings and Nuclear Power Plants (Structure-Soil-Structure Interaction), Inelastic Structure, Inelastic Soil, Inelastic Contact/Interface, 6C/3C/3×1C/1C Seismic Motions	2710
510.15.7	Multiple Small Modular Reactors (Structure-Soil-Structure Interaction), Deeply Embedded, High Water Table, Inelastic Structure, Inelastic Soil, Cyclic Mobility and Liquefaction, Inelastic Saturated Contact/Interface, Buoyant Pressures, 3C Seismic Motions	2710
511	ASCE-4, Chapter on Nonlinear ESSI analysis	
	(2016-2020-2021-)	2711
511.1	Motivation: Modeling and Simulation of Earthquake Soil Structure Interaction	2712
511.2	Introduction	2715
511.3	Seismic Energy Input and Dissipation	2716
511.3.1	Seismic Energy Input	2717
511.3.2	Seismic Energy Dissipation	2718
511.3.2.1	Seismic Energy Dissipation, Wave Reflection and Wave Radiation . . .	2718
511.3.2.2	Seismic Energy Dissipation, Viscous Coupling	2718
511.3.2.3	Seismic Energy Dissipation, Material Inelasticity	2718
511.3.2.4	Seismic Energy Dissipation, Numerical, Algorithmic Positive and Negative Damping	2718
511.4	Modeling: Seismic Motions	2719
511.4.1	Seismic Motions: Available Data	2720
511.4.2	Seismic Motion Development	2721
511.4.2.1	Seismic Motions from Empirical Models.	2721
511.4.2.2	Seismic Motions from Geophysical Models.	2721
511.4.2.3	Seismic Motions from 3D/3C Analytic Models	2721
511.4.3	6C vs 3C vs 3×1C vs 1C Seismic Motions	2722
511.4.4	Incoherent Seismic Motions	2723
511.4.5	Seismic Motion Input into FEM Models	2724

511.5	Modeling: Inelastic, Nonlinear Material Modeling for Solids and Structures . . .	2725
511.5.1	Inelastic Material Modeling of Rock	2726
511.5.1.1	Calibration of Inelastic Material Model Parameters for Rock	2726
511.5.2	Inelastic Material Modeling of Soil	2727
511.5.2.1	Dry Soil	2727
511.5.2.2	Fully Saturated Soil	2727
511.5.2.3	Partially Saturated, Unsaturated Soil	2727
511.5.2.4	Calibration of Inelastic Material Model Parameters for Soil	2727
511.5.3	Inelastic Material Modeling of Steel	2728
511.5.3.1	Calibration of Inelastic Material Model Parameters for Steel	2728
511.5.4	Inelastic Material Modeling of Concrete	2729
511.5.4.1	Calibration of Inelastic Material Model Parameters for Concrete.	2729
511.6	Modeling: Inelastic, Nonlinear Material Modeling for Contacts, Interfaces, and Joints	2730
511.6.1	Material Modeling of Dry Contacts, Interfaces, and Joints (Concrete, Steel – Soil, Rock)	2731
511.6.1.1	Calibration of Inelastic Material Model Parameters for Dry Contacts, In- terfaces, and Joints (Concrete, Steel – Soil, Rock).	2731
511.6.2	Material Modeling of Saturated Contacts, Interfaces, and Joints (Concrete, Steel – Soil, Rock)	2732
511.6.2.1	Calibration of Inelastic Material Model Parameters for Saturated Con- tacts, Interfaces, and Joints (Concrete, Steel – Soil, Rock)	2732
511.7	Modeling: Base Isolator and Base Dissipator Systems	2733
511.7.1	Base Isolator Systems	2734
511.7.1.1	Calibration of Elastic/Inelastic Material Model Parameters for Base Iso- lator Systems	2734
511.7.2	Base Dissipator Systems	2735
511.7.2.1	Calibration of Elastic/Inelastic Material Model Parameters for Base Dis- sipator Systems	2735
511.8	Modeling: Buried Pipes and Conduits	2736
511.9	Modeling: Buoyancy	2737
511.10	Modelling: Finite Element System	2738
511.10.1	Mass Matrix	2739
511.10.1.1	Consistent Mass Matrix	2739

511.10.1.2	Lumped Mass Matrix	2739
511.10.2	Viscous Damping Matrix.	2740
511.10.2.1	Rayleigh Damping	2740
511.10.2.2	Caughey Damping	2740
511.10.3	Stiffness Matrix	2741
511.10.3.1	Tangent Stiffness Matrix	2741
511.10.3.2	Consistent Stiffness Matrix.	2741
511.11	Modeling: Solid, Structure – Fluid Interaction Modeling	2742
511.12	Simulation: Nonlinear Finite Elements.	2743
511.12.1	Time Marching Algorithms for Solution of Nonlinear Equations of Motion	2744
511.12.1.1	Newmark Algorithm	2744
511.12.1.2	Hilber Hughes Taylor α Algorithm	2744
511.12.2	Solution of Elastic-Plastic Constitutive Equations	2745
511.12.2.1	Explicit Integration of Elastic-Plastic Constitutive Equations	2745
511.12.2.2	Implicit Integration of Elastic-Plastic Constitutive Equations	2745
511.13	Modelling Guide for ESSI	2746
511.13.1	Buildings and NPPs on Shallow Foundations, Models.	2747
511.13.2	Buildings and NPPs on Deeply Embedded Foundation (SMRs), Models	2747
511.13.3	Buildings and NPPs on Piles and Pile Group Foundations, Models	2748
511.13.4	Structure – Soil – Structure Interaction, Models.	2749
511.14	Practical Steps for Inelastic ESSI Analysis	2750
511.14.1	Model Development for ESSI	2751
511.14.2	Earthquake Soil Structure Interaction: Model Analysis	2752
511.14.3	Earthquake Soil Structure Interaction: Results Postprocessing	2753
511.15	Quality Assurance Procedures for ESSI Modeling and Simulation	2754
511.15.1	Verification.	2755
511.15.2	Validation	2756
511.16	Standard for Nonlinear/Inelastic Earthquake-Soil-Structure Analysis	2757
511.16.1	Standard for Solids Analysis	2757
511.16.2	Standard for Structure Analysis	2757
511.16.3	Standard for Elastic-Plastic Analysis	2757
511.17	Practical Examples, Nonlinear, Inelastic ESSI	2758
511.17.1	Nuclear Power Plant, Inelastic Structure, Inelastic Soil, Inelastic Contact/Interface, 6C/3C/3×1C/1C Seismic Motions.	2759

511.17.2	Nuclear Power Plant on Piles, Inelastic Structure, Inelastic Soil, Inelastic Contact/Interface, 6C/3C/3×1C/1C Seismic Motions	2760
511.17.3	Nuclear Power Plant, High Water Table, Inelastic Structure, Inelastic Soil, Cyclic Mobility and Liquefaction, Inelastic Saturated Contact/Interface, Buoyant Pressures, 6C/3C/3×1C/1C Seismic Motions	2761
511.17.4	Small Modular Reactor, Deeply Embedded, Inelastic Structure, Inelastic Soil, Inelastic Contact/Interface, 6C/3C/3×1C/1C Seismic Motions	2762
511.17.5	Small Modular Reactor, Deeply Embedded, High Water Table, Inelastic Structure, Inelastic Soil (Cyclic Mobility and Liquefaction), Inelastic Saturated Contact/Interface (Buoyant Pressures), 6C/3C/3×1C/1C Seismic Motions	2763
511.17.6	Multiple Buildings and Nuclear Power Plants (Structure-Soil-Structure Interaction), Inelastic Structure, Inelastic Soil, Inelastic Contact/Interface, 6C/3C/3×1C/1C Seismic Motions	2764
511.17.7	Multiple Small Modular Reactors (Structure-Soil-Structure Interaction), Deeply Embedded, High Water Table, Inelastic Structure, Inelastic Soil, Cyclic Mobility and Liquefaction, Inelastic Saturated Contact/Interface, Buoyant Pressures, 3C Seismic Motions	2765
512	Earthquake-Soil-Structure Interaction, Core Functionality	
	(2017-2018-2019-2021-)	2766
512.1	Core Functionality for ESSI Analysis of Nuclear Installations	2767
512.2	Model Setup	2767
512.3	Linear Elastic Modeling	2768
512.4	Nonlinear/Inelastic Modeling	2768
512.5	Model Domain	2768
512.5.1	Nodes.	2769
512.5.2	Boundary Conditions	2769
512.5.3	Static Acceleration Field.	2769
512.5.4	Dynamic Acceleration Field, Earthquake.	2769
512.5.5	Super Element	2769
512.6	Structural Modeling.	2770
512.6.1	Truss	2770
512.6.2	Beam	2770
512.6.3	Shell	2771

512.7	Solid Modeling	2771
512.7.1	Solid Brick	2771
512.7.2	Contact, Interfaces, Joints	2771
512.8	Core Material Modeling Parameters for Soil, Rock, Concrete, and Steel . . .	2772
512.8.1	Linear and Nonlinear Elastic Soil, Rock, Concrete, and Steel Modeling . .	2772
512.8.2	Inelastic/Nonlinear Soil Modeling	2772
512.8.3	Inelastic/Nonlinear Rock Modeling	2773
512.8.4	Inelastic/Nonlinear Concrete Modeling	2773
512.8.5	Inelastic/Nonlinear Steel Modeling	2773
512.9	Core Material Modeling Parameters for Contacts, Interfaces and Joints . . .	2773
512.9.1	Mass Concrete Against Silt, Sand, Gravel and Clay.	2774
512.9.2	Steel Sheet Against Sand, Gravel and Rockfill	2775
512.9.3	Formed Concrete Against Sand, Gravel and Rockfill	2776
512.9.4	Rock or Concrete on Rock or Concrete	2777
512.10	Earthquake Motion Modeling	2777
512.10.1	One Component (1C) Seismic Motions Defined at Surface or at Depth . .	2777
512.10.2	$3 \times 1C$ Seismic Motions Defined at Surface or at Depth	2778
512.10.3	Seismic Motions Imposed at Model Base	2778
512.10.4	Eigen Analysis	2778
512.11	Core Modeling and Simulation Commands: Simulation Parameters	2778
600	References	2780
700	Appendix	2858
701	Useful Formulae	
	(1985-1989-1993-2021-)	2859
701.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	2860
701.2	Stress and Strain.	2860
701.2.1	Stress.	2860
701.2.2	Strain.	2863
701.3	Derivatives of Stress Invariants	2865

702	The nDarray Programming Tool	
	(1993-1995-1996-1999-)	2868
702.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	2869
702.2	Introduction	2869
702.3	nDarray Programming Tool	2870
702.3.1	Introduction to the nDarray Programming Tool	2870
702.3.2	Abstraction Levels	2871
702.3.2.1	nDarray_rep class	2872
702.3.2.2	nDarray class	2872
702.3.2.3	Matrix and Vector Classes	2873
702.3.2.4	Tensor Class	2873
702.4	Finite Element Classes.	2875
702.4.1	Stress, Strain and Elastoplastic State Classes	2875
702.4.2	Material Model Classes	2876
702.4.3	Stiffness Matrix Class	2877
702.5	Examples.	2878
702.5.1	Tensor Examples.	2878
702.5.2	Fourth Order Isotropic Tensors	2879
702.5.3	Elastic Isotropic Stiffness and Compliance Tensors	2880
702.5.4	Second Derivative of θ Stress Invariant	2881
702.5.5	Application to Computations in Elastoplasticity	2882
702.5.6	Stiffness Matrix Example	2883
702.6	Performance Issues	2884
702.7	Summary and Future Directions	2884
703	Closed Form Gradients to the Plastic Potential Function	
	(1993-1994-)	2885
703.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	2886
704	Hyperelasticity, Detailed Derivations	
	(1995-1996-)	2893
704.1	Chapter Summary and Highlights	2894
704.2	Simo–Serrin's Formula.	2894
704.3	Derivation of $\partial^{2vol}W/(\partial C_{IJ} \partial C_{KL})$	2896
704.4	Derivation of $\partial^{2iso}W/(\partial C_{IJ} \partial C_{KL})$	2897
704.5	Derivation of w_A	2898

704.6	Derivation of Y_{AB}	2899
705	Body and Surface Wave Analytic Solutions	
	(2005-2001-2010-2011-2018-2019-2021-)	2901
705.1	3D Seismic Wave Field: Analytic Solution	2902
705.1.1	Analytic solution.	2902
705.1.1.1	Wave equations for body waves	2903
705.1.1.2	Wave equations for surface waves	2908
705.2	Matlab code – body wave solution	2909
705.3	Matlab code – surface wave solution	2916
705.4	Matlab code – Ricker wavelet as an input motion	2918
705.5	Wave Potential Formulation – Domain Reduction Method	2923
706	Body and Surface Wave Numerical Modeling	
	(2010-2012-2018-2019-2021-)	2925
706.1	Integral equations	2926
706.1.1	fk3.0 package	2926
706.1.1.1	fk and 'sample_input'	2926
706.1.1.2	fk.pl	2928
706.1.1.3	syn.	2928
706.1.1.4	plot.py	2928
706.1.2	3D seismic wave field generation using integral equation.	2928
706.1.2.1	Case 1: strike-slip fault / single layer ground	2928
706.1.2.2	Case 2: dip-slip fault / single layer ground	2940
706.1.2.3	Case 3: normal fault / single layer ground	2951
706.1.2.4	Case 4: normal fault / layered ground	2962
706.1.2.5	Case 5: Northridge earthquake / layered ground	2974
707	Real-ESSI Illustrative Examples	
	(2015-2016-2017-2018-2019-2021-)	2977
707.1	Elastic Beam Element Under Static Loading	2979
707.2	Elastic Beam Element under Dynamic Loading	2981
707.3	Cantilever, 5 Elastic Beam Elements	2985
707.4	Cantilever, One 27 Node Brick Element, Dynamic Loading	2989
707.5	Simulate Cantilever Using Five 27 Node Brick Elements	2994
707.6	Elastic Beam Element under Dynamic Loading with concentrated mass	3000
707.7	Elastic Beam, 27 Node Brick Model With Concentrated Mass.	3004

707.8	Elastic Beam Element, Dynamic Loading, Viscous (Rayleigh/Caughey) and Numerical (Newmark/HHT) Damping	3011
707.9	Elastic Beam Element for a Simple Frame Structure	3018
707.10	27NodeBrick Cantilever Beam, Static Load	3020
707.11	4NodeANDES Cantilever Beam, Force Perpendicular to Plane.	3023
707.12	4NodeANDES Cantilever Beams, In-Plane Force	3025
707.13	27NodeBrick Cantilever Beams, Dynamic Input	3027
707.14	4NodeANDES Square Plate, Four Edges Clamped	3031
707.15	One Dimensional DRM Model.	3034
707.16	Three Dimensional DRM Model	3039
707.17	ShearBeam Element, Pisano Material	3042
707.18	8NodeBrickLT Element, Drucker-Prager Material, Armstrong-Frederick Rotational Kinematic Hardening	3045
707.19	Contact Element Under Static Loading	3050
707.20	Four Bar Contact Problem With Normal and Shear Force Under Monotonic Loading	3052
707.21	3-D Truss example with normal confinement and Shear Loading	3056
707.22	Six Solid Blocks Example With Contact	3059
707.23	Pure shear model for G/Gmax plot	3066
707.24	Multi-yield-surface von-Mises for G/Gmax plot	3070
707.25	Multi-yield-surface Drucker-Prager for G/Gmax plot	3073
708	Brief History of the Real-ESSI Simulator Development	
	(1986-)	3076
709	Computer Programs for ESSI Analysis	
	(2019-)	3079
709.1	Overview of Available ESSI Analysis Programs	3080
709.1.1	Program Distribution Methods	3080
709.1.2	Available Programs.	3081
710	Work Organization	
	(1989-)	3083
710.1	Communication	3084
710.2	Writing (Notes, Code, &c.) Version Control	3084
710.2.1	Source Code	3084

710.2.2	Verification of Real-ESSI.	3085
710.2.2.1	Update of the verification procedure from 2019	3085
710.2.3	Lecture Notes.	3086
710.2.4	Bibliography	3086
710.3	Backup	3087
710.4	Calendar	3087
710.5	Useful Programs and Scripts	3087
710.5.1	Backup Scripts	3087
710.5.2	Domain Reduction Method Processing Programs and Scripts	3087
710.5.3	Pre Processing Programs and Scripts	3087
710.5.4	Post Processing Programs and Scripts	3087
710.5.5	Parallel Computer Architecture	3087
711	Collected Bibliography	3088

Part 100

Theoretical and Computational Formulations

Chapter 101

Introduction

(1996-2003-2016-2017-2018-2019-2020-2021-)

101.1 Chapter Summary and Highlights

101.2 On Modeling

Modeling of mechanical behaviour of civil engineering problems is performed using models. It is important to note that everything we do for design or assessment is based on models. Models can range from very simple to very sophisticated.

Simple Model Example. For example, simple model for the strength of a beam, as developed by Leonardo da Vinci and noted by Timoshenko (1953), states: "In every article that is supported, but is free to bend, and is of uniform cross section and material, the part that is farthest from the support will bend the most." Leonardo da Vinci suggested a number of tests with variation in beam length and keeping the same cross section, and record what loads could these beams carry. He concluded that strength of beams supported on both ends, simple beams, varies inversely proportional to the beam length and directly to the beam width.

This simple model for beam bending, as stated, is based directly on observations of experiments. These experiments represent the physics discovery experiments.

Sophisticated Model Example. The same simple beam problem can be analyzed using a sophisticated Bernoulli or Timoshenko beam finite elements, or even using 3D solid brick elements.

The importance of computer analysis for design and performance assessment of civil engineering systems has recently dramatically increased. With availability of fast, inexpensive computers, and availability of numerical analysis programs, computer analysis of civil engineering systems for design and for assessment of performance is commonly used. It is important to note that failure of civil engineering systems has high consequences. For safe and economical design and for assessment of performance (reliability, robustness and safety) of civil engineering systems, engineers have to perform proper analysis, usually a numerical, computer analysis.

Developers of computer analysis software, computational analysts/engineers and users of numerical analysis face a critical question: How should confidence in analysis results be critically assessed?

Verification and Validation (V&V) of computational analysis is the major process for assessing and quantifying this confidence. Verification is the assessment of the software correctness and numerical accuracy of the solution to a given computational model. Validation is the assessment of physical accuracy of a computational model based on comparisons between computation simulation and experimental data. For verification, the association or relationship of the simulation to the real world is not an issue while for

validation the relationship between computation and real world external data is the issue. Verification and validation are covered in much more detail in part 300 of this book, on pages after page 1436.

101.2.1 The Performance Challenge

Computational science challenges (Post, 2004):

- The Performance Challenge
- The Programming Challenge
- The Prediction Challenge

Parallel computing, development of portable Distributed Memory Parallel (DMP) applications, specifically Architecture Aware Plastic Domain Decomposition (AAPDD) Method (Feng et al., 2024) that addresses the challenge of multiple CPUs, multiple cores, multiple GPUs, multiple networks, etc.

The Programming Challenge.

Quality controlled, managed program development...

The Prediction Challenge

Epistemic, modeling uncertainties

Aleatory, parametric uncertainties

Development of numerical modeling tools for engineers to develop a hierarchy of models, to explore, try, different levels of modeling sophistication in order to understand, gain insight into the influence of epistemic/modeling uncertainty on analysis and to propagate aleatory/parametric uncertainty through models...

101.2.2 Analysis Governance

Analysis governance, sometimes also called simulations governance¹ (Szabó and Actis, 2011, 2012), is a very important components of numerical analysis in civil engineering.

Analysis governance is a process of increasing confidence in numerical analysis results. Analysis governance covers both

- Numerical analysis tools, the program that is used for analysis

¹Analysis consists of modeling, the physics component, and simulation, the numerics component, hence analysis covers both modeling and simulation components (Analysis = Modeling + Simulation).

- Numerical analyst, expert engineer that is performing the analysis

The numerical analysis program has to be extensively verified and validated.

Numerical analyst, expert engineer has to have required level of expertise, knowledge, experience and, if possible, has to be certified to perform required analysis.

101.3 Specialization to Computational Mechanics

In this section we start from general mechanics and specialize our interest toward the field of computational mechanics (this is based on great lecture notes by Prof. Carlos Felippa ([Felippa, 1993](#))):

101.3.1 Mechanics

- Theoretical
- Applied
- Computational
 - Nanomechanics
 - Micromechanics
 - Continuum Mechanics
 - * Solids and Structures
 - * Fluids
 - * Multiphysics
 - Systems
- Experimental

101.3.2 Continuum Mechanics

- Statics
 - Time invariant
 - Transient (quasi-statics)
- Dynamics

101.3.3 Statics and Dynamics

- Linear
- Nonlinear
 - Elastic
 - Inelastic

101.3.4 Discretization Methods

- Finite Element Method (FEM)

- FEM Formulation

- * Displacement

- * Equilibrium

- * Mixed

- * Hybrid

- FEM Solution

- * Stiffness

- * Flexibility

- * Mixed

- Boundary Element Method

- Finite Difference Method

- Finite Volume Method

- Spectral Method

- Mesh-Free Method

101.3.5 The Solution Morass

A system of 1000 linear equations has one solution.

A system of 1000 cubic equations has $3^{1000} \approx 10^{477}$ solutions.

It is worth putting this number in prospective: number of atoms in the earth is about 10^{50} , and a number of atoms in the universe is about 10^{78} (Niemunis, 2015 –).

Solution: Continuation or Incremental analysis!

101.3.6 Smooth Nonlinearities

- Finite deflections

- Nonlinear elasticity

- Follower forces

101.3.7 Rough Nonlinearities

- Elasto-plasticity
- Contact/Interface/Joint
- Interface/joint Friction

101.4 Tour of Computational Mechanics

In this section we describe various examples of equilibrium path and set up basic terminology.

101.4.1 Equilibrium Path

101.4.2 Special Equilibrium Points

101.4.2.1 Critical Points

Limit Points

Bifurcation Points

101.4.2.2 Turning Points

101.4.2.3 Failure Points

101.4.3 Generalized Response

101.4.4 Sources of Nonlinearities

Tonti Diagrams

101.4.5 Simulation Process: Loading Stages, Increments and Iterations

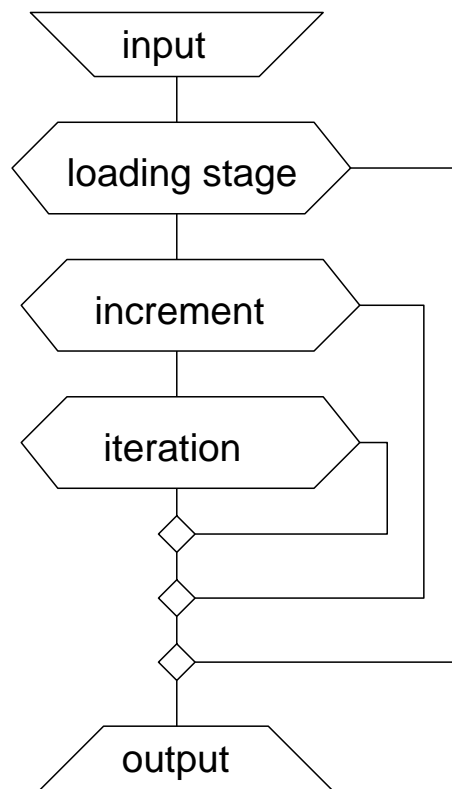


Figure 101.1: Nonlinear analysis loading stages, loading increments, equilibrium iterations.

Chapter 102

Finite Elements Formulation

(1989-1994-1999-2005-2010-2011-2012-2013-2015-2016-2017-2018-2019-2020-2021-)

(In collaboration with Dr. Zhao Cheng, Dr. Nima Tafazzoli, Prof. José Abell, Dr. Yuan Feng. Prof. Han Yang)

102.1 Chapter Summary and Highlights

This section uses basic principles of mechanics to derive finite element equations. We start with general setup, assuming large deformation in section 102.2, and then proceed to develop finite element formulation for small deformations in section 102.3 on page 104 . Further investigation of large deformation formulation is given in chapter 106 on page 482.

102.2 Formulation of the Continuum Mechanics Incremental Equations of Motion

This section follows Bathe (1982), Felippa (1989) and Felippa (1993).

Assume that a 3D solid is analyzed in a fixed Cartesian coordinate system, Figure (102.1). Also, assume that the solid can undergo large displacements and rotations, large strains, and nonlinear or inelastic constitutive response. The main aim is to evaluate the equilibrium of solid at discrete times $0, \Delta t, 2\Delta t, \dots$, where Δt is an increment in time. To do that, a continuation strategy is used. That is, assume that the solution for all the variables (generalized displacements, strain, stress, forces, etc.) is available, was solved for, for all time steps from 0 to time t . Solution for the next time step $t + \Delta t$ will be based on already obtained solution from the previous time step, at time t , (Felippa, 1993). This approach will be applied for each time step, repetitively until the solution for all time steps is obtained.

In following all parts of the solid, as they undergo displacements and rotations, from the original configuration to the final configuration, adopted is a Lagrangian (or material) formulation of the problem. This approach is contrasting Eulerian (or spatial) formulation , usually used in the analysis of fluid mechanics problems.

In the Lagrangian incremental analysis approach the equilibrium of the solid at time $t + \Delta t$ is expressed using the principle of virtual displacements. Using tensorial notation¹ this principle requires that:

$$\int_{t+\Delta t V} {}^{t+\Delta t}\sigma_{ij} \delta {}_{t+\Delta t}\epsilon_{ij} {}^{t+\Delta t}dV = {}^{t+\Delta t}\mathcal{R} \quad (102.1)$$

where the ${}^{t+\Delta t}\sigma_{ij}$ are Cartesian components of the Cauchy stress tensor, see section 701.2.1 on page 2860, the ${}_{t+\Delta t}\epsilon_{ij}$ are the Cartesian components of an infinitesimal strain tensor, see section 701.2.2 on page 2863, and the δ means "variation in" i.e.:

¹Einstein's summation rule is implied unless stated differently, all lower case indices ($i, j, p, q, m, n, o, r, s, t, \dots$) can have values of 1, 2, 3, and values for capital letter indices will be specified where need be.

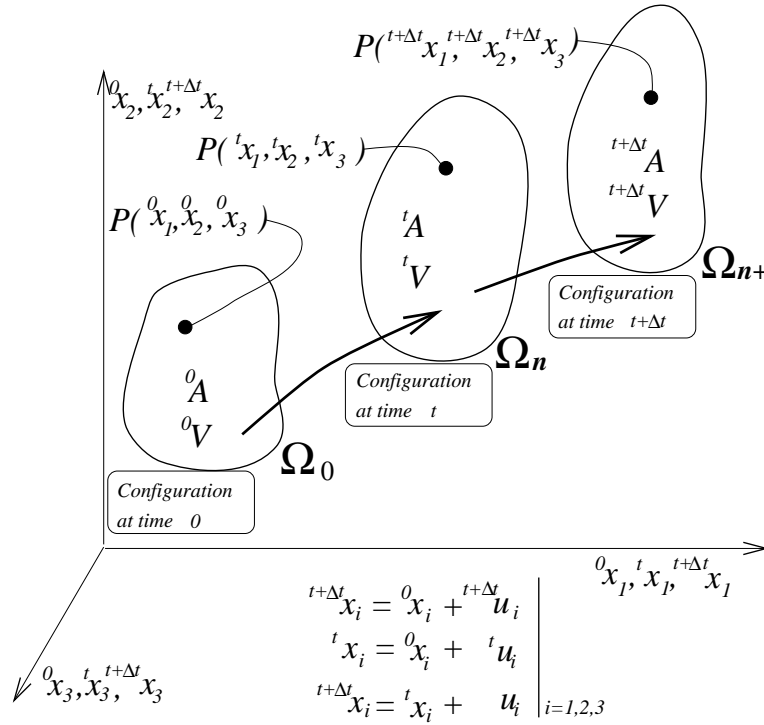


Figure 102.1: Motion of solid in a Cartesian coordinate system.

$$\delta_{t+\Delta t} \epsilon_{ij} = \delta \frac{1}{2} \left(\frac{\partial u_i}{\partial x_j^{t+\Delta t}} + \frac{\partial u_j}{\partial x_i^{t+\Delta t}} \right) = \frac{1}{2} \left(\frac{\partial \delta u_i}{\partial x_j^{t+\Delta t}} + \frac{\partial \delta u_j}{\partial x_i^{t+\Delta t}} \right) \quad (102.2)$$

It should be noted that Cauchy stresses are "body forces per unit area" in the configuration at time $t + \Delta t$, and the infinitesimal strain components are also referred to this as yet unknown configuration. The right hand side of equation (102.1), i.e. ${}^{t+\Delta t} \mathcal{R}$ is the virtual work performed when the solid is subjected to a virtual displacement at time $t + \Delta t$:

$${}^{t+\Delta t} \mathcal{R} = \int_{{}^{t+\Delta t} V} \left({}^{t+\Delta t} f_i^B - \rho \ddot{u}_i^{t+\Delta t} \right) \delta u_i^{t+\Delta t} dV + \int_{{}^{t+\Delta t} S} {}^{t+\Delta t} f_i^S \delta u_i^{t+\Delta t} dS$$

where ${}^{t+\Delta t} f_i^B$ and ${}^{t+\Delta t} f_i^S$ are the components of the externally applied body and surface force vectors, respectively, and $-\rho \ddot{u}_i^{t+\Delta t}$ is the inertial body force that is present if accelerations are present², δu_i is the i th component of the virtual displacement vector.

The main problem in applying equation (102.1) is that the configuration of the solid at a time $t + \Delta t$ is unknown. The continuous change in the configuration, deformation of the solid needs to be properly

²This is based on D'Alembert's principle (D'Alembert, 1758).

modeled. As an example, consider, for example, Cauchy stress at time $t + \Delta t$. This stress cannot be obtained by adding to the Cauchy stresses at time t , a stress increment that is due only to material deformation. The reason is that material might rotate, and stress state is a function of tractions (loads) and size and orientation of differentially small faces on which stress components act. For material only nonlinear analysis, the of large displacements, large rotations and large strain will be neglected. Large displacements, rotations and large strains will be addressed in more detail in Chapter 106 on page 482.

The continuous change in the configuration of the solid is dealt with by using appropriate stress and strain measures and constitutive relations. When solving the general problem³ one possible approach is given in Simo (1988). The previous discussion was oriented toward small deformation, small-displacement analysis leading to the use of Cauchy stress tensor σ_{ij} and small strain tensor ϵ_{ij} .

In the following, covered briefly are other stress and strain measures particularly useful in large strain and large displacement analysis. More detailed description of large displacements, large rotations and large strains problems is addressed in Chapter 106 on page 482.

The solution is sought for equation 102.1, which expresses the equilibrium and compatibility requirements of the general solid considered in the configuration corresponding to time $t + \Delta t$. The nonlinear or inelastic behavior of material enters equation 102.1 through the stress-strain constitutive equations. In general, the solid can undergo large displacements, large rotations large strains, and since constitutive relations are nonlinear, the relation in equation 102.1 cannot be solved directly. However, an approximate solution can be obtained by referring all variables to a previously calculated known equilibrium configuration, and linearizing the resulting equations. Iterations can then improve this solution.

To develop the governing equations for the approximate solution obtained by linearization, recall that the solutions for time $0, \Delta t, 2\Delta t, \dots, t$ have already been calculated and that the Piola–Kirchhoff stress tensor is energy conjugate to the Green–Lagrange strain tensor:

$$\int_{0V} {}^tS_{ij} \delta {}^t\epsilon_{ij} {}^0dV = \int_{0V} \left(\frac{\partial \rho}{\partial t} {}^0x_{i,m} {}^t\sigma_{mn} {}^0x_{j,n} \right) ({}^0x_{k,i} \delta {}^t\epsilon_{kl} {}^0x_{l,j}) {}^0dV = \int_{0V} \frac{\partial \rho}{\partial t} {}^t\sigma_{mn} \delta {}^t\epsilon_{mn} {}^0dV \quad (102.3)$$

since

$${}^0x_{k,l} {}^0x_{l,m} = \delta_{km}$$

and

³That is, large displacements, large rotations, large deformations and material nonlinear and/or inelastic.

$${}_0\rho {}^0dV = {}^t\rho {}^tdV$$

one obtains

$$\int_{{}_0V} {}^tS_{ij} \delta {}^t\epsilon_{ij} {}^0dV = \int_{{}_0V} {}^t\sigma_{mn} \delta {}^t\epsilon_{mn} {}^tdV \quad (102.4)$$

where 2nd Piola–Kirchhoff stress tensor is defined as:

$${}^tS_{ij} = \frac{{}_0\rho}{{}^t\rho} {}^0x_{i,m} {}^t\sigma_{mn} {}^0x_{j,n} \quad (102.5)$$

and ${}^0x_{j,n} = \frac{\partial {}^0x_j}{\partial {}^tx_n}$, and $\frac{{}_0\rho}{{}^t\rho}$ represents the ratio of the mass density at time 0 and time t , and the Green–Lagrange strain is defined as:

$${}^t\epsilon_{ij} = \frac{1}{2} ({}_0u_{i,j} + {}^0u_{j,i} + {}^0u_{k,i} {}^0u_{k,j}) \quad (102.6)$$

By employing equation 102.4 stresses and strains are referenced to the known equilibrium configuration. The choice lies between two formulations, named (a) total Lagrangian and (b) updated Lagrangian formulations.

For the total Lagrangian formulations, all static and kinematic variables are referenced to the initial configuration at time 0. On the other hand, for the updated Lagrangian formulation, all static and kinematic variables are referenced to the previous step equilibrium configuration at time t . Both the total Lagrangian and updated Lagrangian formulations include all kinematic nonlinear effects due to large displacement, large rotations, and large strains. Whether the large strain behavior is modeled appropriately depends on the constitutive relations specified. The only advantage of using one over the other formulation lies in numerical efficiency.

Using equation 102.4 in the total Lagrangian formulation, considered is this equation:

$$\int_{{}_0V} {}^{t+\Delta t}S_{ij} \delta {}^{t+\Delta t}\epsilon_{ij} {}^0dV = {}^{t+\Delta t}\mathcal{R} \quad (102.7)$$

while in the updated Lagrangian formulation considered is this equation:

$$\int_{{}^tV} {}^{t+\Delta t}S_{ij} \delta {}^{t+\Delta t}\epsilon_{ij} {}^tdV = {}^{t+\Delta t}\mathcal{R} \quad (102.8)$$

where ${}^{t+\Delta t}\mathcal{R}$ is the external virtual work as defined in equation ???. Approximate solution to the equation 102.7 and equation 102.8 can be obtained by linearization. Comparison of the total Lagrangian and updated Lagrangian formulations reveal that they are quite similar, with the difference in the choice of different reference configurations for kinematic and static variables. If in the numerical solution the appropriate constitutive tensors are employed, identical results should be obtained.

102.3 Finite Element Discretization

Consider the equilibrium of a general three-dimensional solid such as in Figure (102.2) (Bathe, 1996). The external forces acting on a solid are surface tractions f_i^S and body forces f_i^B . Displacements are u_i and strain tensor⁴ is ϵ_{ij} and the stress tensor corresponding to strain tensor is σ_{ij} .

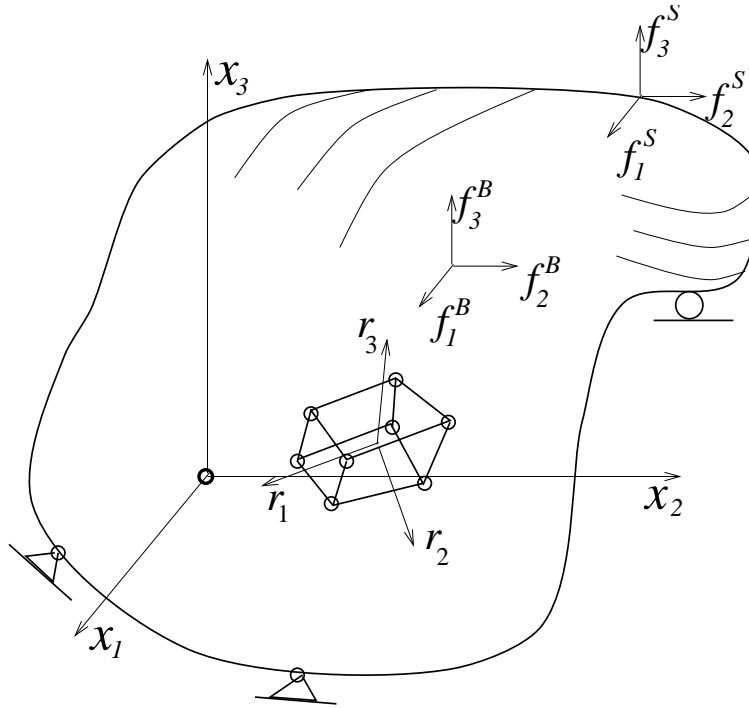


Figure 102.2: General three dimensional solid.

Dynamic equilibrium equation is given as

$$\sigma_{ij,j} = f_i - \rho \ddot{u}_i \quad (102.9)$$

where $\sigma_{ij,j}$ is a small deformation (Cauchy) stress tensor, f_i are external (body (f_i^B) and surface (f_i^S)) forces, ρ is material density and \ddot{u}_i are accelerations. Inertial forces $\rho \ddot{u}_i$ follow from D'Alembert's principle

⁴small strain tensor as defined in equation: $\epsilon_{ij} = \frac{1}{2} (u_{i,j} + u_{j,i})$.

(D'Alembert, 1758). The above equation can be premultiplied with virtual displacements δu_i and then integrated by parts to obtain the weak form, as further elaborated below.

For a given solid, loaded with external forces, with prescribed supports solution for displacements, strains and stresses are sought. The principle of virtual displacements (PVD) can be used to find a solution. Using PVD, equilibrium is achieved if the total internal virtual work is equal to the total external virtual work, for any compatible, small virtual displacements, that satisfy the essential boundary conditions.

Mathematically this is expressed using equation 102.10 for the solid at time $t + \Delta t$. Since the incremental approach is used, a time dimension is dropped so that all the equations are applied for the given increment⁵, at time $t + \Delta t$. The equation is now, using tensorial notation⁶:

$$\int_V \sigma_{ij} \delta \epsilon_{ij} dV = \int_V (f_i^B - \rho \ddot{u}_i) \delta u_i dV + \int_S f_i^S \delta u_i dS \quad (102.10)$$

The internal work given on the left side of (102.10) is equal to the actual stresses σ_{ij} going through the virtual strains $\delta \epsilon_{ij}$ that corresponds to the imposed virtual displacements. The external work is on the right side of (102.10) and is equal to the actual surface forces f_i^S and body forces $f_i^B - \rho \ddot{u}_i$ going through the virtual displacements δu_i .

It is noted virtual strains used in equation 102.10 correspond to the imposed virtual displacements that can be represented by any compatible set of displacements that satisfy the geometric boundary conditions. The equation 102.10 is an expression of equilibrium, and for different virtual displacements, correspondingly, different equations of equilibrium are obtained. Equation 102.10 also contains the compatibility and constitutive requirements. Displacements should be continuous and compatible and should satisfy the displacement boundary conditions, and the stresses should be evaluated from the strains using appropriate constitutive relations. Thus, the principle of virtual displacements contains all requirements that need to be fulfilled to analyze a problem in solid and structural mechanics. The principle of virtual displacements can be directly related to the principle that the total potential Π of the system must be stationary.

In the finite element analysis, approximation for the solid in Figure 102.2 is done by creating an assemblage of discrete finite elements with the elements connected at nodal points. The displacements measured in a local coordinate system r_1 , r_2 and r_3 within each element are assumed to be a function of the displacements at the N finite element nodal points:

⁵ $t + \Delta t$ will be dropped from now on in this chapter.

⁶Einstein's summation rule is implied unless stated differently, all lower case indices ($i, j, p, q, m, n, o, r, s, t, \dots$) can have values of 1, 2, 3, and values for capital letter indices will be specified where need be.

$$u_i \approx \hat{u}_a = H_I \bar{u}_{Ia} \quad (102.11)$$

where $I = 1, 2, 3, \dots, n$ and n is number of nodes in a specific element, $a = 1, 2, 3$ represents a number of dimensions (can be 1 or 2 or 3). Real displacement field u_i is approximated with approximate displacement field \hat{u}_a , and H_I represent displacement interpolation functions, \bar{u}_{Ia} is the tensor of global approximate generalized displacement components at all element nodes. The term generalized displacements mean that both translations, rotations, or any other nodal unknown are modeled independently. Here specifically, only translational degrees of freedom are considered. The strain tensor is defined as:

$$\epsilon_{ab} = \frac{1}{2} (u_{a,b} + u_{b,a}) \quad (102.12)$$

and by using equation 102.11, approximate strain tensor can be defined as:

$$\begin{aligned} \epsilon_{ab} \approx \hat{e}_{ab} &= \frac{1}{2} (\hat{u}_{a,b} + \hat{u}_{b,a}) = \\ &= \frac{1}{2} ((H_I \bar{u}_{Ia})_{,b} + (H_I \bar{u}_{Ib})_{,a}) = \\ &= \frac{1}{2} ((H_{I,b} \bar{u}_{Ia}) + (H_{I,a} \bar{u}_{Ib})) \end{aligned} \quad (102.13)$$

The most general stress-strain relationship⁷ for an isotropic material is:

$$\hat{\sigma}_{ab} = E_{abcd} (\hat{e}_{cd} - \epsilon_{cd}^0) + \sigma_{ab}^0 \quad (102.14)$$

where $\hat{\sigma}_{ab}$ is the approximate Cauchy stress tensor, E_{abcd} is the constitutive tensor⁸, \hat{e}_{cd} is the infinitesimal approximate strain tensor, ϵ_{cd}^0 is the infinitesimal initial strain tensor and σ_{ab}^0 is the initial Cauchy stress tensor.

Using the assumption of the displacements within each finite element, as expressed in equation 102.11, equilibrium equations that correspond to nodal point displacements of the assemblage of finite elements can be derived. Equation 102.10 can be rewritten as a sum⁹ of integrations over the volume and areas of all finite elements:

$$\bigcup_m \int_{V^m} \hat{\sigma}_{ab} \delta \hat{e}_{ab} dV^m = \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} (f_a^B - \rho \ddot{u}_a) \delta \hat{u}_a dV^m + \bigcup_m \int_{S^m} f_a^S \delta \hat{u}_a dS^m$$

⁷in terms of exact stress and strain fields, but it holds for approximate fields as well.

⁸This tensor can be elastic or elastoplastic constitutive tensor.

⁹Or, more correctly as a union \bigcup_m since we are integrating over the union of elements.

where $m = 1, 2, 3, \dots, k$ and k is the number of elements. It is important to note that the integrations in (??) are performed over the element volumes and surfaces, and that for convenience different element coordinate systems may be used in the calculations. If we substitute equations 102.11, 102.12, 102.13 and 102.14 in ??, it follows:

$$\begin{aligned} & \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} \left(E_{abcd} \left(\hat{\epsilon}_{cd} - \epsilon_{cd}^0 \right) + \sigma_{ab}^0 \right) \delta \left(\frac{1}{2} (H_{I,b} \bar{u}_{Ia} + H_{I,a} \bar{u}_{Ib}) \right) dV^m = \\ & \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} f_a^B \delta (H_I \bar{u}_{Ia}) dV^m - \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} H_J \ddot{u}_{Ja} \rho \delta (H_I \bar{u}_{Ia}) dV^m + \bigcup_m \int_{S^m} f_a^S \delta (H_I \bar{u}_{Ia}) dS^m \end{aligned} \quad (102.15)$$

or:

$$\begin{aligned} & \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} \left(E_{abcd} \left(\left(\frac{1}{2} (H_{J,d} \bar{u}_{Jc} + H_{J,c} \bar{u}_{Jd}) \right) - \epsilon_{cd}^0 \right) + \sigma_{ab}^0 \right) \delta \left(\frac{1}{2} (H_{I,b} \bar{u}_{Ia} + H_{I,a} \bar{u}_{Ib}) \right) dV^m = \\ & = \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} f_a^B \delta (H_I \bar{u}_{Ia}) dV^m - \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} H_J \ddot{u}_{Ja} \rho \delta (H_I \bar{u}_{Ia}) dV^m + \bigcup_m \int_{S^m} f_a^S \delta (H_I \bar{u}_{Ia}) dS^m \end{aligned} \quad (102.16)$$

We can observe that δ in the previous equations represents a virtual quantity, but the rules for δ are quite similar to regular differentiation so that δ can enter the brackets and "virtualize" the nodal displacement¹⁰. It thus follows:

$$\begin{aligned} & \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} \left(E_{abcd} \left(\left(\frac{1}{2} (H_{J,d} \bar{u}_{Jc} + H_{J,c} \bar{u}_{Jd}) \right) - \epsilon_{cd}^0 \right) + \sigma_{ab}^0 \right) \left(\frac{1}{2} (H_{I,b} \delta \bar{u}_{Ia} + H_{I,a} \delta \bar{u}_{Ib}) \right) dV^m = \\ & = \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} f_a^B (H_I \delta \bar{u}_{Ia}) dV^m - \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} H_J \ddot{u}_{Ja} \rho (H_I \delta \bar{u}_{Ia}) dV^m + \bigcup_m \int_{S^m} f_a^S (H_I \delta \bar{u}_{Ia}) dS^m \end{aligned} \quad (102.17)$$

Let us now work out some algebra on the left-hand side of the equation (102.17):

$$\begin{aligned} & \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} \left(E_{abcd} \left(\frac{(H_{J,d} \bar{u}_{Jc} + H_{J,c} \bar{u}_{Jd})}{2} \right) - E_{abcd} \epsilon_{cd}^0 + \sigma_{ab}^0 \right) \left(\frac{(H_{I,b} \delta \bar{u}_{Ia} + H_{I,a} \delta \bar{u}_{Ib})}{2} \right) dV^m = \\ & = \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} f_a^B (H_I \delta \bar{u}_{Ia}) dV^m - \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} H_J \ddot{u}_{Ja} \rho H_I \delta \bar{u}_{Ia} dV^m + \bigcup_m \int_{S^m} f_a^S (H_I \delta \bar{u}_{Ia}) dS^m \end{aligned} \quad (102.18)$$

and further:

¹⁰since they are driving variables that define the overall displacement field through interpolation functions

$$\begin{aligned}
& \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} \left(\left(\frac{1}{2} (H_{J,d} \bar{u}_{Jc} + H_{J,c} \bar{u}_{Jd}) \right) E_{abcd} \left(\frac{1}{2} (H_{I,b} \delta \bar{u}_{Ia} + H_{I,a} \delta \bar{u}_{Ib}) \right) \right) dV^m + \\
& + \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} \left(-E_{abcd} \epsilon_{cd}^0 \left(\frac{1}{2} (H_{I,b} \delta \bar{u}_{Ia} + H_{I,a} \delta \bar{u}_{Ib}) \right) \right) dV^m + \\
& + \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} \left(\sigma_{ab}^0 \right) \left(\frac{1}{2} (H_{I,b} \delta \bar{u}_{Ia} + H_{I,a} \delta \bar{u}_{Ib}) \right) dV^m = \\
& \quad \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} f_a^B (H_I \delta \bar{u}_{Ia}) dV^m \\
& \quad - \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} H_J \ddot{u}_{Ja} \rho H_I \delta \bar{u}_{Ia} dV^m \\
& \quad + \bigcup_m \int_{S^m} f_a^S (H_I \delta \bar{u}_{Ia}) dS^m
\end{aligned} \tag{102.19}$$

Several things should be observed in the equation (102.19). Namely, the first three lines in the equation can be simplified if one takes into account symmetries of E_{ijkl} and σ_{ij} . In the case of the elastic stiffness tensor E_{ijkl} major and both minor symmetries exist. In the case of the elastoplastic stiffness tensor, such symmetries exist if a flow rule is associated. If the flow rule is non-associated, only minor symmetries exist while major symmetry is destroyed¹¹. As a matter of fact, both minor symmetries in E_{ijkl} are the only symmetries needed, and the first line of (102.19) can be rewritten as:

$$\begin{aligned}
& \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} \left(\left(\frac{1}{2} (H_{J,d} \bar{u}_{Jc} + H_{J,c} \bar{u}_{Jd}) \right) E_{abcd} \left(\frac{1}{2} (H_{I,b} \delta \bar{u}_{Ia} + H_{I,a} \delta \bar{u}_{Ib}) \right) \right) dV^m = \\
& = \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} (H_{J,d} \bar{u}_{Jc}) E_{abcd} (H_{I,b} \delta \bar{u}_{Ia}) dV^m = \\
& = \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} (H_{I,b} \delta \bar{u}_{Ia}) E_{abcd} (H_{J,d} \bar{u}_{Jc}) dV^m
\end{aligned} \tag{102.20}$$

Similar simplifications are possible in the second and third line of the equation (102.19). Namely, in the second line both minor symmetries of E_{ijkl} can be used so that:

¹¹for more on stiffness tensor symmetries, see sections (104.6.1, 104.3 and 104.4)

$$\begin{aligned}
& \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} \left(-E_{abcd} \epsilon_{cd}^0 \left(\frac{1}{2} (H_{I,b} \delta \bar{u}_{Ia} + H_{I,a} \delta \bar{u}_{Ib}) \right) \right) dV^m = \\
& = \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} \left(-E_{abcd} \epsilon_{cd}^0 (H_{I,b} \delta \bar{u}_{Ia}) \right) dV^m
\end{aligned} \tag{102.21}$$

and the third line can be simplified due to the symmetry in Cauchy stress tensor σ_{ij} as:

$$\begin{aligned}
& \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} \left(\sigma_{ab}^0 \right) \left(\frac{1}{2} (H_{I,b} \delta \bar{u}_{Ia} + H_{I,a} \delta \bar{u}_{Ib}) \right) dV^m = \\
& = \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} \left(\sigma_{ab}^0 \right) (H_{I,b} \delta \bar{u}_{Ia}) dV^m
\end{aligned} \tag{102.22}$$

After these simplifications, equation (102.19) looks like this:

$$\begin{aligned}
& \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} (H_{I,b} \delta \bar{u}_{Ia}) E_{abcd} (H_{J,d} \bar{u}_{Jc}) dV^m + \\
& + \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} \left(-E_{abcd} \epsilon_{cd}^0 (H_{I,b} \delta \bar{u}_{Ia}) \right) dV^m + \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} \left(\sigma_{ab}^0 \right) (H_{I,b} \delta \bar{u}_{Ia}) dV^m = \\
& = \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} f_a^B (H_I \delta \bar{u}_{Ia}) dV^m - \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} H_J \ddot{u}_{Ja} \rho H_I \delta \bar{u}_{Ia} dV^m + \bigcup_m \int_{S^m} f_a^S (H_I \delta \bar{u}_{Ia}) dS^m
\end{aligned} \tag{102.23}$$

or if unknown nodal accelerations¹² \ddot{u}_{Jc} and displacements \bar{u}_{Jc} are left on the left hand side and all known quantities are moved to the right hand side:

$$\begin{aligned}
& \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} H_J \delta_{ac} \ddot{u}_{Jc} \rho H_I \delta \bar{u}_{Ia} dV^m + \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} (H_{I,b} \delta \bar{u}_{Ia}) E_{abcd} (H_{J,d} \bar{u}_{Jc}) dV^m = \\
& = \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} f_a^B (H_I \delta \bar{u}_{Ia}) dV^m + \bigcup_m \int_{S^m} f_a^S (H_I \delta \bar{u}_{Ia}) dS^m + \\
& + \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} \left(E_{abcd} \epsilon_{cd}^0 (H_{I,b} \delta \bar{u}_{Ia}) \right) dV^m - \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} \left(\sigma_{ab}^0 \right) (H_{I,b} \delta \bar{u}_{Ia}) dV^m
\end{aligned} \tag{102.24}$$

To obtain the equation for the unknown nodal generalized displacements from equation 102.24, invoke the virtual displacement theorem. This theorem states that virtual displacements are any, non

¹²It is noted that $\ddot{u}_{Jc} = \delta_{ac} \ddot{u}_{Ja}$ relationship was used here, where δ_{ac} is the Kronecker delta.

zero, kinematically admissible displacements. In that case, we can factor out nodal virtual displacements $\delta \bar{u}_{Ia}$ so that equation 102.24 becomes:

$$\begin{aligned}
 & \left[\bigcup_m \int_{V^m} H_J \delta_{ac} \ddot{u}_{Jc} \rho H_I dV^m + \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} (H_{I,b}) E_{abcd} (H_{J,d} \bar{u}_{Jc}) dV^m \right] \delta \bar{u}_{Ia} = \\
 & = \bigcup_m \left[\int_{V^m} f_a^B H_I dV^m \right] \delta \bar{u}_{Ia} + \bigcup_m \left[\int_{S^m} f_a^S H_I dS^m \right] \delta \bar{u}_{Ia} + \\
 & + \bigcup_m \left[\int_{V^m} (E_{abcd} \epsilon_{cd}^0 H_{I,b}) dV^m \right] \delta \bar{u}_{Ia} - \bigcup_m \left[\int_{V^m} (\sigma_{ab}^0) H_{I,b} dV^m \right] \delta \bar{u}_{Ia}
 \end{aligned} \tag{102.25}$$

and now just cancel $\delta \bar{u}_{Ia}$ on both sides:

$$\begin{aligned}
 & \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} H_J \delta_{ac} \rho H_I \ddot{u}_{Jc} dV^m + \\
 & \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} (H_{I,b}) E_{abcd} (H_{J,d} \bar{u}_{Jc}) dV^m = \\
 & = \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} f_a^B H_I dV^m + \bigcup_m \int_{S^m} f_a^S H_I dS^m + \\
 & + \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} (E_{abcd} \epsilon_{cd}^0 H_{I,b}) dV^m - \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} (\sigma_{ab}^0) H_{I,b} dV^m
 \end{aligned} \tag{102.26}$$

One should also observe that in the first line of equation (102.26) generalized nodal accelerations \ddot{u}_{Jc} and generalized nodal displacements \bar{u}_{Jc} are unknowns that are not subjected to integration so they can be factored out of the integral:

$$\begin{aligned}
 & \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} H_J \delta_{ac} \rho H_I dV^m \ddot{u}_{Jc} \\
 & + \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} H_{I,b} E_{abcd} H_{J,d} dV^m \bar{u}_{Jc} \\
 & = \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} f_a^B H_I dV^m + \bigcup_m \int_{S^m} f_a^S H_I dS^m + \\
 & + \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} (E_{abcd} \epsilon_{cd}^0 H_{I,b}) dV^m - \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} (\sigma_{ab}^0) H_{I,b} dV^m
 \end{aligned} \tag{102.27}$$

We can now define several tensors from equation (102.27):

$${}^{(m)}M_{IacJ} = \int_{V^m} H_J \delta_{ac} \rho H_I dV^m \quad (102.28)$$

$${}^{(m)}K_{IacJ} = \int_{V^m} H_{I,b} E_{abcd} H_{J,d} dV^m \quad (102.29)$$

$${}^{(m)}F_{Ia}^B = \int_{V^m} f_a^B H_I dV^m \quad (102.30)$$

$${}^{(m)}F_{Ia}^S = \int_{S^m} f_a^S H_I dS^m \quad (102.31)$$

$${}^{(m)}F_{Ia}^{\epsilon_{mn}^0} = \int_{V^m} E_{abcd} \epsilon_{cd}^0 H_{I,b} dV^m \quad (102.32)$$

$${}^{(m)}F_{Ia}^{\sigma_{mn}^0} = \int_{V^m} \sigma_{ab}^0 H_{I,b} dV^m \quad (102.33)$$

where ${}^{(m)}M_{IacJ}$ is the element mass tensor, ${}^{(m)}K_{IacJ}$ is the element stiffness tensor, ${}^{(m)}F_{Ia}^B$ is the tensor of element body forces, ${}^{(m)}F_{Ia}^S$ is the tensor of element surface forces, ${}^{(m)}F_{Ia}^{\epsilon_{mn}^0}$ is the tensor of element initial strain effects, ${}^{(m)}F_{Ia}^{\sigma_{mn}^0}$ is the tensor of element initial stress effects. Now equation (102.27) becomes:

$$\bigcup_{(m)} {}^{(m)}M_{IacJ} \ddot{u}_{Jc} + \bigcup_{(m)} {}^{(m)}K_{IacJ} \bar{u}_{Jc} = \bigcup_m {}^{(m)}F_{Ia}^B + \bigcup_m {}^{(m)}F_{Ia}^S + \bigcup_m {}^{(m)}F_{Ia}^{\epsilon_{mn}^0} - \bigcup_m {}^{(m)}F_{Ia}^{\sigma_{mn}^0} \quad (102.34)$$

By summing¹³ all the relevant tensors, a well known equation is obtained:

$$\begin{aligned} M_{AacB} \ddot{u}_{Bc} + K_{AacB} \bar{u}_{Bc} &= F_{Aa} \\ A, B &= 1, 2, \dots, \# \text{ of nodes} \\ a, c &= 1, \dots, \# \text{ of dimensions (1, 2 or 3)} \end{aligned} \quad (102.35)$$

where:

¹³Summation of the element volume integrals expresses the direct addition of the element tensors to obtain global, system tensors. This method of direct addition is usually referred to as the direct stiffness method.

$$M_{AacB} = \bigcup_m^{(m)} M_{IacJ} \quad ; \quad K_{AacB} = \bigcup_m^{(m)} K_{IacJ} \quad (102.36)$$

are the system mass and stiffness tensors, respectively, \ddot{u}_{Bc} is the tensor of unknown nodal accelerations, and \bar{u}_{Bc} is the tensor of unknown generalized nodal displacements, while the load tensor is given as:

$$F_{Aa} = \bigcup_m^{(m)} F_{Ia}^B + \bigcup_m^{(m)} F_{Ia}^S + \bigcup_m^{(m)} F_{Ia}^{\epsilon_{mn}^0} - \bigcup_m^{(m)} F_{Ia}^{\sigma_{mn}^0} \quad (102.37)$$

After assembling the system of equations in (102.36), it is relatively easy to solve for the unknown displacements \bar{u}_{Lc} either for static or fully dynamic case. It is also very important to note that in all previous equations, omissions of inertial force term (all terms with ρ) will yield static equilibrium equations. Description of solutions procedures for static linear and nonlinear problems are described in some detail in chapter 107. In addition to that, solution procedures for dynamic, linear and nonlinear problems are described in some detail in chapter 108.

A note on the final form of the tensors used is in order. In order to use readily available system of equation solvers equation (102.36) will be rewritten in the following form:

$$M_{PQ} \ddot{u}_P + K_{PQ} \bar{u}_P = F_Q \quad P, Q = 1, 2, \dots, (\#ofDOFs)N \quad (102.38)$$

where M_{PQ} is system mass matrix, K_{PQ} is system stiffness matrix and F_Q is the loading vector. Matrix form of equation 102.36, presented as equation 102.38 is obtained flattening the system mass tensor M_{AacB} , system stiffness tensor K_{AacB} , unknown acceleration tensor \ddot{u}_{Bc} , unknown displacement tensor \bar{u}_{Bc} and the system loading tensor F_{Aa} . Flattening from the fourth order mass/stiffness tensors to two-dimensional mass/stiffness matrix is done by simply performing appropriate (re-) numbering of nodal DOFs in each dimension. A similar approach is used for unknown accelerations/displacements and loadings.

102.3.1 Static Analysis: Internal and External Loads.

Internal and external loading tensors is defined as:

$$(f_{Ia})_{int} = \bigcup_{(m)} {}^{(m)}K_{IacJ} \bar{u}_{Jc} = \bigcup_m \int_{V^m} \sigma_{ab} H_{I,b} dV^m \quad (102.39)$$

$$(f_{Ia})_{ext} = \bigcup_m {}^{(m)}F_{Ia}^B + \bigcup_m {}^{(m)}F_{Ia}^S + \bigcup_m {}^{(m)}F_{Ia}^{e_{mn}^0} - \bigcup_m {}^{(m)}F_{Ia}^{\sigma_{mn}^0} \quad (102.40)$$

where $(f_{Ia})_{int}$ is the internal force tensor and $(f_{Ia})_{ext}$ is the external force tensor. Equilibrium is obtained when residual:

$$r_{Ia}(\bar{u}_{Jc}, \lambda) = (f_{Ia}(\bar{u}_{Jc}))_{int} - \lambda (f_{Ia})_{ext} \quad (102.41)$$

is equal to zero, $\mathbf{r}(\mathbf{u}, \lambda) = 0$. The same equation in flattened form yields:

$$\mathbf{r}(\mathbf{u}, \lambda) = \mathbf{f}_{int}(\mathbf{u}) - \lambda \mathbf{f}_{ext} = 0 \quad (102.42)$$

102.4 Isoparametric Solid Finite Elements

102.4.1 8 Node Brick

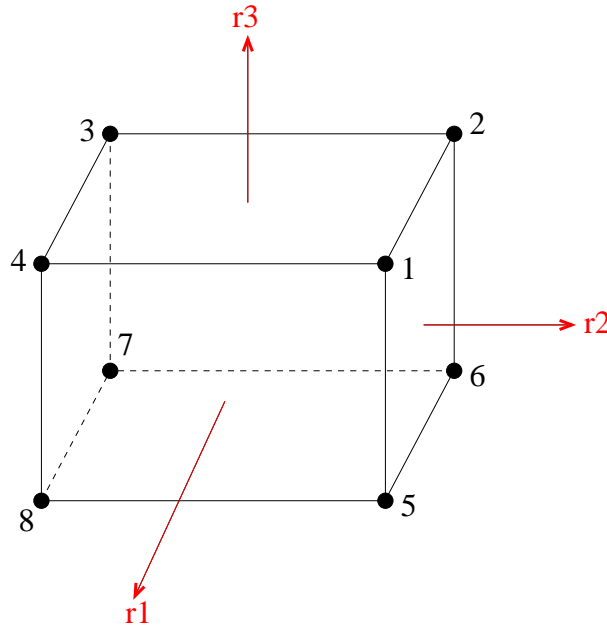


Figure 102.3: 8 node brick element

Table 102.1: Values of r_1 , r_2 , and r_3 at each of the eight nodes

Node	r_1	r_2	r_3
1	+1	+1	+1
2	-1	+1	+1
3	-1	-1	+1
4	+1	-1	+1
5	+1	+1	-1
6	-1	+1	-1
7	-1	-1	-1
8	+1	-1	-1

Shape function of the nodes which i indicates the node number:

$$N_i^{(e)} = \frac{1}{8}(1 + r_1(r_1)_i)(1 + r_2(r_2)_i)(1 + r_3(r_3)_i) \quad (102.43)$$

102.4.2 Collapsed 8 Node Brick

It is sometimes required to mesh finite element models using collapsed brick elements. Collapsed brick elements are finite elements that do not feature all 8 nodes, rather some nodes are merged. This is done to help generate meshes for complicated geometries where it is impossible to rely on solid bricks with eight (8) nodes only. For example, SASSI2000 (System for Analysis of Soil-Structure Interaction) program ([Ostadan, 2007](#)) uses such elements. For example, solid elements with 7, 6, and 5 nodes are used extensively and are created by collapsing/combining nodes of 8 node brick into solid elements with 7, 6 or 5 nodes. There are three types of collapsed SASSI 8 node brick element, as shown in Figure 102.4.

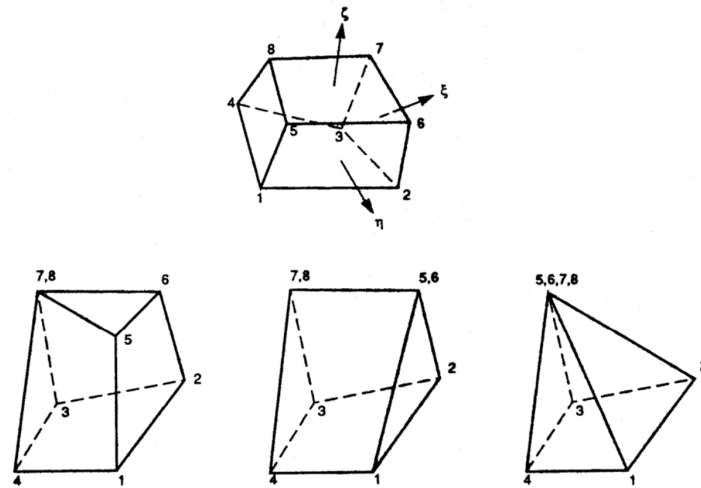


Figure 102.4: Three types of collapsed brick elements in SASSI ([Ostadan, 2007](#)).

Verification tests for collapsed brick finite elements are provided in verification section ?? on page 1547.

102.4.3 20 Node Brick

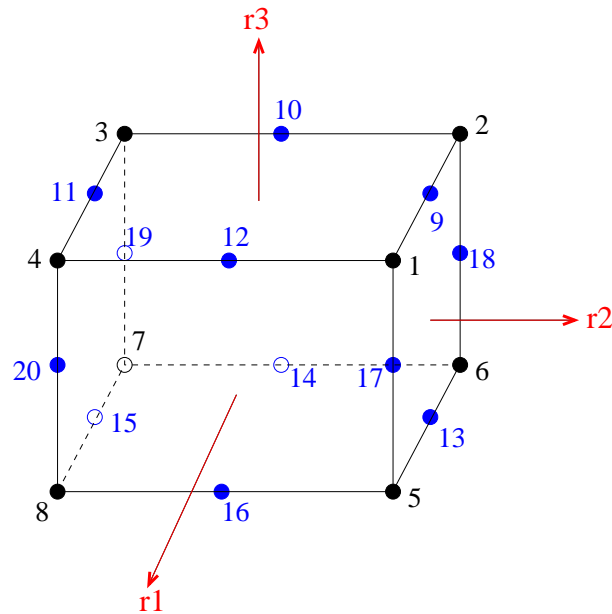


Figure 102.5: 20 node brick element

Table 102.2: Values of r_1 , r_2 , and r_3 at each of the 9th to 20th nodes

Node	r_1	r_2	r_3
9	0	+1	+1
10	-1	0	+1
11	0	-1	+1
12	+1	0	+1
13	0	+1	-1
14	-1	0	-1
15	0	-1	-1
16	+1	0	-1
17	+1	+1	0
18	-1	+1	0
19	-1	-1	0
20	+1	-1	0

Shape function of the 8 corner nodes (1 to 8) which i indicates the node number:

$$N_i^{(e)} = \frac{1}{8}(1 + r_1(r_1)_i)(1 + r_2(r_2)_i)(1 + r_3(r_3)_i)(r_1(r_1)_i + r_2(r_2)_i + r_3(r_3)_i - 2) \quad (102.44)$$

Shape function of the node numbers 9, 11, 13, and 15 which i indicates the node number:

$$N_i^{(e)} = \frac{1}{4}(1 - r_1^2)(1 + r_2(r_2)_i)(1 + r_3(r_3)_i) \quad (102.45)$$

Shape function of the node numbers 10, 12, 14, and 16 which i indicates the node number:

$$N_i^{(e)} = \frac{1}{4}(1 - r_2^2)(1 + r_1(r_1)_i)(1 + r_3(r_3)_i) \quad (102.46)$$

Shape function of the node numbers 17, 18, 19, and 20 which i indicates the node number:

$$N_i^{(e)} = \frac{1}{4}(1 - r_3^2)(1 + r_1(r_1)_i)(1 + r_2(r_2)_i) \quad (102.47)$$

102.4.4 27 Node Brick

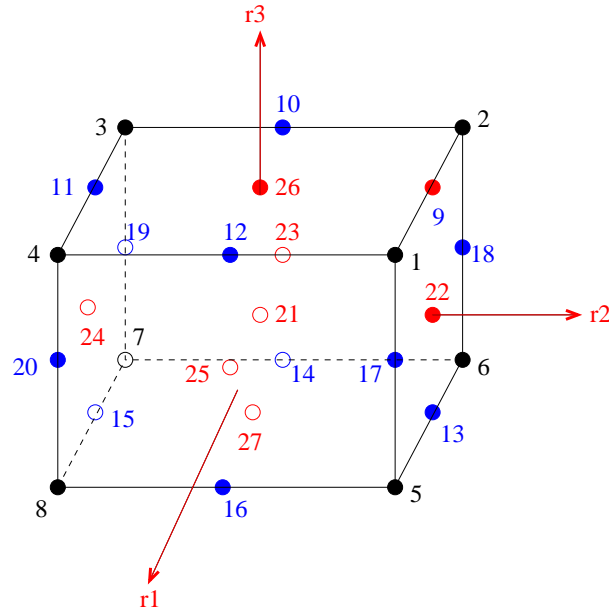


Figure 102.6: 27 node brick element

Table 102.3: Values of r_1 , r_2 , and r_3 at each of the 21th to 27th nodes

Node	r_1	r_2	r_3
21	0	0	0
22	0	+1	0
23	-1	0	0
24	0	-1	0
25	+1	0	0
26	0	0	+1
27	0	0	-1

Shape function of the 8 corner nodes (1 to 8) which i indicates the node number:

$$N_i^{(e)} = \frac{1}{8}(1 + r_1(r_1)_i)(1 + r_2(r_2)_i)(1 + r_3(r_3)_i)(r_1(r_1)_i)(r_2(r_2)_i)(r_3(r_3)_i) \quad (102.48)$$

Shape function of the node numbers 9, 11, 13, and 15 which i indicates the node number:

$$N_i^{(e)} = \frac{1}{4}(1 - r_1^2)(1 + r_2(r_2)_i)(1 + r_3(r_3)_i)(r_2(r_2)_i)(r_3(r_3)_i) \quad (102.49)$$

Shape function of the node numbers 10, 12, 14, and 16 which i indicates the node number:

$$N_i^{(e)} = \frac{1}{4}(1 + r_1(r_1)_i)(1 - r_2^2)(1 + r_3(r_3)_i)(r_1(r_1)_i)(r_3(r_3)_i) \quad (102.50)$$

Shape function of the node numbers 17, 18, 19, and 20 which i indicates the node number:

$$N_i^{(e)} = \frac{1}{4}(1 + r_1(r_1)_i)(1 + r_2(r_2)_i)(1 - r_3^2)(r_1(r_1)_i)(r_2(r_2)_i) \quad (102.51)$$

Shape function of the node number 21:

$$N_{21}^{(e)} = (1 - r_1^2)(1 - r_2^2)(1 - r_3^2) \quad (102.52)$$

Shape function of the node numbers 22 and 24 which i indicates the node number:

$$N_i^{(e)} = \frac{1}{2}(1 - r_1^2)(1 + r_2(r_2)_i)(1 - r_3^2)(r_2(r_2)_i) \quad (102.53)$$

Shape function of the node numbers 23 and 25 which i indicates the node number:

$$N_i^{(e)} = \frac{1}{2}(1 + r_1(r_1)_i)(1 - r_2^2)(1 - r_3^2)(r_1(r_1)_i) \quad (102.54)$$

Shape function of the node numbers 26 and 27 which i indicates the node number:

$$N_i^{(e)} = \frac{1}{2}(1 - r_1^2)(1 - r_2^2)(1 + r_3(r_3)_i)(r_3(r_3)_i) \quad (102.55)$$

102.4.5 Isoparametric 8 – 20 Node Finite Element

The basic procedure in the isoparametric¹⁴ finite element formulation is to express the element coordinates and element displacements in the form of interpolations using the local three dimensional¹⁵ coordinate system of the element. Considering the general 3D element, the coordinate interpolations, using indicial notation¹⁶ are:

¹⁴name isoparametric comes from the fact that both displacements and coordinates are defined in terms of nodal values. Superparametric and subparametric finite elements exist also.

¹⁵in the case of element presented here, that is isoparametric 8 – 20 node finite element.

¹⁶Einstein's summation rule is implied unless stated differently, all lower case indices ($i, j, p, q, m, n, o, r, s, t, \dots$) can have values of 1, 2, 3, and values for capital letter indices will be specified where need be.

$$x_i = H_A(r_k) \bar{x}_{Ai} \quad (102.56)$$

where $A = 1, 2, \dots, n$ and n is the total number of nodes associated with that specific element, \bar{x}_{Ai} is the i -th coordinate of node A , $i = 1, 2, 3$, $k = 1, 2, 3$ and H_A are the interpolation functions defined in local coordinate system of the element, with variables r_1 , r_2 and r_3 varying from -1 to $+1$.

The interpolation functions H_A for the isoparametric 8–20 node are the so called serendipity interpolation functions mainly because they were derived by inspection. For the finite element with nodes numbered as in Figure (102.7) they are given¹⁷ in the following set of formulae:

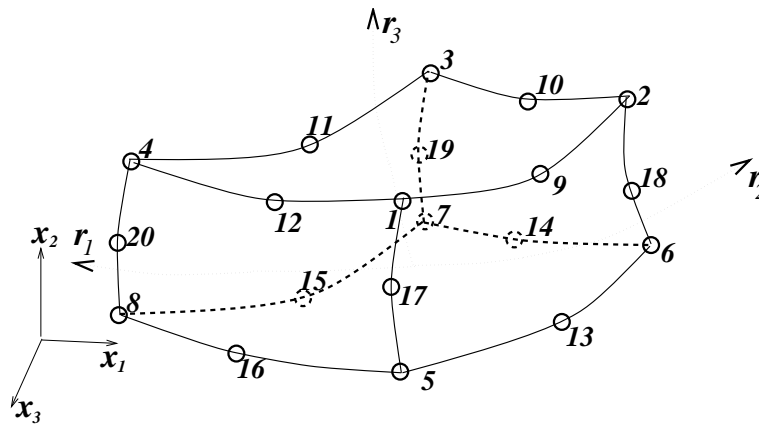


Figure 102.7: Isoparametric 8–20 node brick element in global and local coordinate systems

$$\begin{aligned} H_{20} &= \frac{isp(20) (1+r_1) (1-r_2) (1-r_3^2)}{4} & H_{19} &= \frac{isp(19) (1-r_1) (1-r_2) (1-r_3^2)}{4} \\ H_{18} &= \frac{isp(18) (1-r_1) (1+r_2) (1-r_3^2)}{4} & H_{17} &= \frac{isp(17) (1+r_1) (1+r_2) (1-r_3^2)}{4} \\ H_{16} &= \frac{isp(16) (1+r_1) (1-r_2^2) (1-r_3)}{4} & H_{15} &= \frac{isp(15) (1-r_1^2) (1-r_2) (1-r_3)}{4} \\ H_{14} &= \frac{isp(14) (1-r_1) (1-r_2^2) (1-r_3)}{4} & H_{13} &= \frac{isp(13) (1-r_1^2) (1+r_2) (1-r_3)}{4} \\ H_{12} &= \frac{isp(12) (1+r_1) (1-r_2^2) (1+r_3)}{4} & H_{11} &= \frac{isp(11) (1-r_1^2) (1-r_2) (1+r_3)}{4} \\ H_{10} &= \frac{isp(10) (1-r_1) (1-r_2^2) (1+r_3)}{4} & H_9 &= \frac{isp(9) (1-r_1^2) (1+r_2) (1+r_3)}{4} \end{aligned}$$

¹⁷for more details see [Bathe \(1982\)](#).

$$\begin{aligned}
H_8 &= \frac{(1+r_1)(1-r_2)(1-r_3)}{8} + \frac{-H_{15}-H_{16}-H_{20}}{2} \\
H_7 &= \frac{(1-r_1)(1-r_2)(1-r_3)}{8} + \frac{-H_{14}-H_{15}-H_{19}}{2} \\
H_6 &= \frac{(1-r_1)(1+r_2)(1-r_3)}{8} + \frac{-H_{13}-H_{14}-H_{18}}{2} \\
H_5 &= \frac{(1+r_1)(1+r_2)(1-r_3)}{8} + \frac{-H_{13}-H_{16}-H_{17}}{2} \\
H_4 &= \frac{(1+r_1)(1-r_2)(1+r_3)}{8} + \frac{-H_{11}-H_{12}-H_{20}}{2} \\
H_3 &= \frac{(1-r_1)(1-r_2)(1+r_3)}{8} + \frac{-H_{10}-H_{11}-H_{19}}{2} \\
H_2 &= \frac{(1-r_1)(1+r_2)(1+r_3)}{8} + \frac{-H_{10}-H_{18}-H_9}{2} \\
H_1 &= \frac{(1+r_1)(1+r_2)(1+r_3)}{8} + \frac{-H_{12}-H_{17}-H_9}{2}
\end{aligned}$$

where r_1 , r_2 and r_3 are the axes of natural, local, curvilinear coordinate system and $isp(nod_num)$ is boolean function that returns +1 if node number (nod_num) is present and 0 if node number (nod_num) is not present.

To be able to evaluate various important element tensors¹⁸, to calculate the strain–displacement transformation tensor¹⁹ is needed. The element strains are obtained in terms of derivatives of element displacements with respect to the local coordinate system. Because the element displacements are defined in the local coordinate system, there is a need to relate global x_1 , x_2 and x_3 derivatives to the r_1 , r_2 and r_3 derivatives. In order to obtain derivatives with respect to global coordinate system, i.e. $\frac{\partial}{\partial x_a}$, use chain rule for differentiation in the following form:

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial x_k} = \frac{\partial r_a}{\partial x_k} \frac{\partial}{\partial r_a} = J_{ak}^{-1} \frac{\partial}{\partial r_a} \quad (102.57)$$

while the inverse relation is:

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial r_k} = \frac{\partial x_a}{\partial r_k} \frac{\partial}{\partial x_a} = J_{ak} \frac{\partial}{\partial x_a} \quad (102.58)$$

where J_{ak} is the Jacobian operator relating local coordinate derivatives to the global coordinate derivatives:

¹⁸i.e. $(m)K_{IacJ}$, $(m)F_{Ia}^B$, $(m)F_{Ia}^S$, $(m)F_{Ia}^{\epsilon_{mn}^0}$, $(m)F_{Ia}^{\sigma_{mn}^0}$, that are defined in chapter (102.3).

¹⁹from the equation $\hat{\epsilon}_{ab} = \frac{1}{2} ((H_{I,b} \bar{u}_{Ia}) + (H_{I,a} \bar{u}_{Ib}))$

(102.59)

provided that there is a one-to-one²⁰ correspondence between the local and the global coordinates of element.

It should be pointed out that except for the very simple cases, volume and surface element tensor²¹ integrals are evaluated by means of numerical integration²² Numerical integration rules is quite a broad subject and will not be covered here²³.

102.4.6 Isoparametric 8 - 27 Node Finite Element

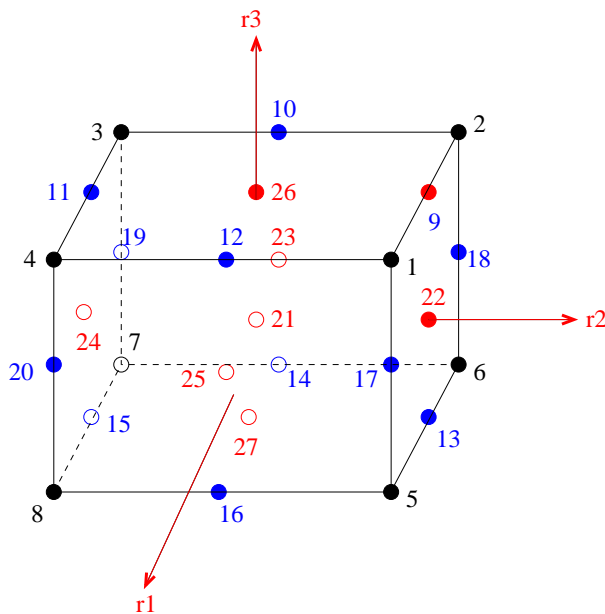


Figure 102.8: 8-27 variable node brick element

²⁰unique.

²¹as defined in chapter (102.3) by equations (102.29), (102.30), (102.31), (102.32) and (102.33).

²²Gauss–Legendre, Newton–Coates, Lobatto are among the most used integration rules.

²³nice explanation with examples is given in [Bathe \(1982\)](#).

$$\begin{aligned}
H_1 &= \frac{(1+r_1)(1+r_2)(1+r_3)}{8} - \frac{H_9 + H_{12} + H_{17}}{2} - \frac{H_{22} + H_{25} + H_{26}}{4} - \frac{H_{21}}{8} \\
H_2 &= \frac{(1-r_1)(1+r_2)(1+r_3)}{8} - \frac{H_9 + H_{10} + H_{18}}{2} - \frac{H_{22} + H_{23} + H_{26}}{4} - \frac{H_{21}}{8} \\
H_3 &= \frac{(1-r_1)(1-r_2)(1+r_3)}{8} - \frac{H_{10} + H_{11} + H_{19}}{2} - \frac{H_{23} + H_{24} + H_{26}}{4} - \frac{H_{21}}{8} \\
H_4 &= \frac{(1+r_1)(1-r_2)(1+r_3)}{8} - \frac{H_{11} + H_{12} + H_{20}}{2} - \frac{H_{24} + H_{25} + H_{26}}{4} - \frac{H_{21}}{8} \\
H_5 &= \frac{(1+r_1)(1+r_2)(1-r_3)}{8} - \frac{H_{13} + H_{16} + H_{17}}{2} - \frac{H_{22} + H_{25} + H_{27}}{4} - \frac{H_{21}}{8} \\
H_6 &= \frac{(1-r_1)(1+r_2)(1-r_3)}{8} - \frac{H_{13} + H_{14} + H_{18}}{2} - \frac{H_{22} + H_{23} + H_{27}}{4} - \frac{H_{21}}{8} \\
H_7 &= \frac{(1-r_1)(1-r_2)(1-r_3)}{8} - \frac{H_{14} + H_{15} + H_{19}}{2} - \frac{H_{23} + H_{24} + H_{27}}{4} - \frac{H_{21}}{8} \\
H_8 &= \frac{(1+r_1)(1-r_2)(1-r_3)}{8} - \frac{H_{15} + H_{16} + H_{20}}{2} - \frac{H_{24} + H_{25} + H_{27}}{4} - \frac{H_{21}}{8}
\end{aligned}$$

$$\begin{aligned}
H_9 &= \frac{1}{4}(1-r_1^2)(1+r_2)(1+r_3) - \frac{H_{22} + H_{26}}{2} - \frac{H_{21}}{4} \\
H_{10} &= \frac{1}{4}(1-r_2^2)(1-r_1)(1+r_3) - \frac{H_{23} + H_{26}}{2} - \frac{H_{21}}{4} \\
H_{11} &= \frac{1}{4}(1-r_1^2)(1-r_2)(1+r_3) - \frac{H_{24} + H_{26}}{2} - \frac{H_{21}}{4} \\
H_{12} &= \frac{1}{4}(1-r_2^2)(1+r_1)(1+r_3) - \frac{H_{25} + H_{26}}{2} - \frac{H_{21}}{4} \\
H_{13} &= \frac{1}{4}(1-r_1^2)(1+r_2)(1-r_3) - \frac{H_{22} + H_{27}}{2} - \frac{H_{21}}{4} \\
H_{14} &= \frac{1}{4}(1-r_2^2)(1-r_1)(1-r_3) - \frac{H_{23} + H_{27}}{2} - \frac{H_{21}}{4} \\
H_{15} &= \frac{1}{4}(1-r_1^2)(1-r_2)(1-r_3) - \frac{H_{24} + H_{27}}{2} - \frac{H_{21}}{4} \\
H_{16} &= \frac{1}{4}(1-r_2^2)(1+r_1)(1-r_3) - \frac{H_{25} + H_{27}}{2} - \frac{H_{21}}{4}
\end{aligned}$$

$$\begin{aligned}
H_{17} &= \frac{1}{4}(1-r_3^2)(1+r_1)(1+r_2) - \frac{H_{22} + H_{25}}{2} - \frac{H_{21}}{4} \\
H_{18} &= \frac{1}{4}(1-r_3^2)(1-r_1)(1+r_2) - \frac{H_{22} + H_{23}}{2} - \frac{H_{21}}{4} \\
H_{19} &= \frac{1}{4}(1-r_3^2)(1-r_1)(1-r_2) - \frac{H_{23} + H_{24}}{2} - \frac{H_{21}}{4} \\
H_{20} &= \frac{1}{4}(1-r_3^2)(1+r_1)(1-r_2) - \frac{H_{24} + H_{25}}{2} - \frac{H_{21}}{4}
\end{aligned}$$

$$H_{21} = (1-r_1^2)(1-r_2^2)(1-r_3^2)$$

$$\begin{aligned}
H_{22} &= \frac{1}{2}(1 - r_1^2)(1 + r_2)(1 - r_3^2)r_2 \\
H_{23} &= -\frac{1}{2}(1 - r_1)(1 - r_2^2)(1 - r_3^2)r_1 \\
H_{24} &= -\frac{1}{2}(1 - r_1^2)(1 - r_2)(1 - r_3^2)r_2 \\
H_{25} &= \frac{1}{2}(1 + r_1)(1 - r_2^2)(1 - r_3^2)r_1 \\
H_{26} &= \frac{1}{2}(1 - r_1^2)(1 - r_2^2)(1 + r_3)r_3 \\
H_{27} &= -\frac{1}{2}(1 - r_1^2)(1 - r_2^2)(1 - r_3)r_3
\end{aligned}$$

102.4.7 Surface Loads for Solid Bricks

To apply surface load on brick elements, equivalent nodal forces have to be applied instead of the surface load. The equivalent force of the i -th node F_i is given by the following equation with shape function H_i and load distribution function f .

$$F_i = \int_S f H_i ds \quad (102.60)$$

Assuming that the load distribution is uniform

$$F_i = f \int_S H_i ds \quad (102.61)$$

Furthermore, when the magnitude of the load per unit area is 1, and the size of the element is $1 \times 1 \times 1$, equivalent nodal forces are given as shown in Figure 102.9 for 8 node brick element, 20 brick element, and 27 nodes brick element.

Figure 102.9 shows cases of normal loads on vertical upper surface (with nodes: 1, 2, 3, 4 for 8 node brick; 1, 2, 3, 4, 9, 10, 11, and 12 for 20 node brick; and 1, 2, 3, 4, 9, 10, 11, 12 and 26 for the 27 node brick).

Nodal loads from uniform surface loads for 27 node brick are obtained as:

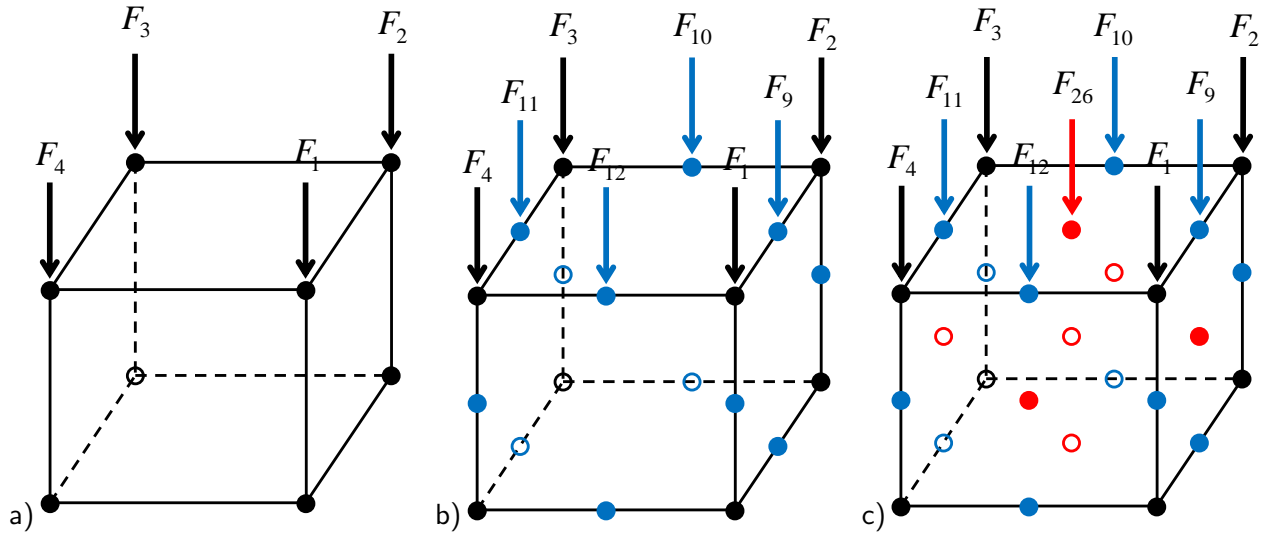


Figure 102.9: Nodal loads for brick elements: (a) $F_1 = F_2 = F_3 = F_4 = +1/4$; (b) $F_1 = F_2 = F_3 = F_4 = -\frac{1}{12}$, $F_9 = F_{10} = F_{11} = F_{12} = +\frac{1}{3}$; (c) $F_1 = F_2 = F_3 = F_4 = +\frac{1}{36}$, $F_9 = F_{10} = F_{11} = F_{12} = +\frac{1}{9}$, $F_{26} = \frac{4}{9}$.

- for nodes 1, 2, 3, and 4, $N_i^{(e)} = \frac{1}{8}(1 + r_1(r_1)_i)(1 + r_2(r_2)_i)(1 + r_3(r_3)_i)(r_1(r_1)_i)(r_2(r_2)_i)(r_3(r_3)_i)$

$$\begin{aligned}
 \int_{-1}^{+1} H_i dS &= \\
 &= \frac{1}{8}(1 + r_3(r_3)_i)(r_3(r_3)_i) \int_{-1}^{+1} \int_{-1}^{+1} (1 + r_1(r_1)_i)(1 + r_2(r_2)_i)(r_1(r_1)_i)(r_2(r_2)_i) dr_1 dr_2 \\
 &= \frac{1}{8}(1 + r_3(r_3)_i)(r_3(r_3)_i)((r_1)_i)^2((r_2)_i)^2 \left(\frac{2}{3}\right)^2 \\
 &= \frac{1}{18}(1 + r_3(r_3)_i)(r_3(r_3)_i)((r_1)_i)^2((r_2)_i)^2
 \end{aligned} \tag{102.62}$$

- for nodes 9, 10, 11 and 12, $N_i^{(e)} = \frac{1}{4}(1 - r_1^2)(1 + r_2(r_2)_i)(1 + r_3(r_3)_i)(r_2(r_2)_i)(r_3(r_3)_i)$

$$\begin{aligned}
 \int_{-1}^{+1} H_i dS &= \\
 &= \frac{1}{4}(1 + r_3(r_3)_i)(r_3(r_3)_i) \int_{-1}^{+1} (1 - r_1^2)(1 + r_2(r_2)_i)(r_2(r_2)_i) dr_1 dr_2 \\
 &= \frac{1}{8}(1 + r_3(r_3)_i)(r_3(r_3)_i)((r_2)_i)^2 \left(\frac{4}{3}\right) \left(\frac{2}{3}\right) \\
 &= \frac{2}{9}(1 + r_3(r_3)_i)(r_3(r_3)_i)((r_2)_i)^2
 \end{aligned} \tag{102.63}$$

- for nodes 26 $N_i^{(e)} = \frac{1}{2}(1 - r_1^2)(1 - r_2^2)(1 + r_3(r_3)_i)(r_3(r_3)_i)$

$$\begin{aligned}
 \int_{-1}^{+1} H_i dS &= \\
 &= \frac{1}{4}(1 + r_3(r_3)_i)(r_3(r_3)_i) \int_{-1}^{+1} \int_{-1}^{+1} (1 - r_1^2)(1 - r_2^2) dr_1 dr_2 \\
 &= \frac{1}{8}(1 + r_3(r_3)_i)(r_3(r_3)_i) \left(\frac{4}{3}\right) \left(\frac{4}{3}\right) \\
 &= \frac{8}{9}(1 + r_3(r_3)_i)(r_3(r_3)_i) \tag{102.64}
 \end{aligned}$$

102.5 Numerical Integration for Solid Brick Elements

Gauss integration rule, see [Bathe \(1996\)](#), section 5.5.3. While using the regular Newton-Coates integration formula, one uses $(n + 1)$ equally spaced points to integrate exactly polynomial of order n . On the other hand, while using the Gauss integration formula, one uses n unequally spaced points to integrate exactly polynomial of order $(2n - 1)$.

102.6 Two Node, 3D Truss Finite Element

[Bathe and Wilson \(1976\)](#); [Bathe \(1982\)](#)

102.7 3D Beam-Column Finite Element, 12 Degrees of Freedom

[Bathe and Wilson \(1976\)](#); [Bathe \(1982\)](#); [Przemieniecki \(1985\)](#)

Stiffness Matrix: Equation [102.65](#)

Mass Matrix: Equation [102.66](#)

(102.65)

102.8 3D Beam-Column Finite Element, 9 Degrees of Freedom

Przemieniecki (1985)

Condensation Formulation: Equations 102.67 to 102.73

Rearranged 12dof Stiffness Matrix: Equation 102.74

K_{rr} part of stiffness matrix: Equation 102.75

K_{rc} part of stiffness matrix: Equation 102.76

K_{cr} part of stiffness matrix: Equation 102.77

K_{cc} part of stiffness matrix: Equation 102.78

Stiffness Matrix: Equation 102.79

T Matrix: Equation 102.80

Rearranged Mass Matrix: Equation 102.81

Mass Matrix: Equation 102.82

$$\begin{bmatrix} k_{rr} & k_{rc} \\ k_{cr} & k_{cc} \end{bmatrix} \begin{Bmatrix} d_r \\ d_c \end{Bmatrix} = \begin{Bmatrix} r_r \\ r_c \end{Bmatrix} \quad (102.67)$$

$$\left(\begin{bmatrix} k_{rr} \end{bmatrix} - \begin{bmatrix} K_{rc} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} K_{cc} \end{bmatrix}^{-1} \begin{bmatrix} K_{cr} \end{bmatrix} \right) \begin{Bmatrix} d_r \end{Bmatrix} = \begin{Bmatrix} r_r \end{Bmatrix} - \begin{bmatrix} K_{rc} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} K_{cc} \end{bmatrix}^{-1} \begin{Bmatrix} r_c \end{Bmatrix} \quad (102.68)$$

$$[k_{condensed}] = \begin{bmatrix} k_{rr} \end{bmatrix} - \begin{bmatrix} K_{rc} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} K_{cc} \end{bmatrix}^{-1} \begin{bmatrix} K_{cr} \end{bmatrix} \quad (102.69)$$

$$r_{condensed} = \begin{Bmatrix} r_r \end{Bmatrix} - \begin{bmatrix} K_{rc} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} K_{cc} \end{bmatrix}^{-1} \begin{Bmatrix} r_c \end{Bmatrix} \quad (102.70)$$

$$[T] = \begin{bmatrix} I \\ - \begin{bmatrix} K_{cc} \end{bmatrix}^{-1} \begin{bmatrix} K_{cr} \end{bmatrix} \end{bmatrix} \quad (102.71)$$

$$[K_{condensed}] = [T]^T [K] [T] \quad (102.72)$$

$K_{condensed}$ should give the same results using either method.

$$[M_{condensed}] = [T]^T [M] [T] \quad (102.73)$$

(102.74)

$$[K_{rr}] = \begin{bmatrix} \frac{EA}{L} & 0 & 0 & -\frac{EA}{L} & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \frac{12EI_z}{L^3} & 0 & 0 & -\frac{12EI_z}{L^3} & 0 & 0 & 0 & \frac{6EI_z}{L^2} \\ 0 & 0 & \frac{12EI_y}{L^3} & 0 & 0 & -\frac{12EI_y}{L^3} & 0 & -\frac{6EI_y}{L^2} & 0 \\ -\frac{EA}{L} & 0 & 0 & \frac{EA}{L} & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -\frac{12EI_z}{L^3} & 0 & 0 & \frac{12EI_z}{L^3} & 0 & 0 & 0 & -\frac{6EI_z}{L^2} \\ 0 & 0 & -\frac{12EI_y}{L^3} & 0 & 0 & \frac{12EI_y}{L^3} & 0 & \frac{6EI_y}{L^2} & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \frac{GJ_x}{L} & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -\frac{6EI_y}{L^2} & 0 & 0 & \frac{6EI_y}{L^2} & 0 & \frac{4EI_y}{L} & 0 \\ 0 & \frac{6EI_z}{L^2} & 0 & 0 & -\frac{6EI_z}{L^2} & 0 & 0 & 0 & \frac{4EI_z}{L} \end{bmatrix} \quad (102.75)$$

$$[K_{rc}] = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \frac{6EI_z}{L^2} \\ 0 & -\frac{6EI_y}{L^2} & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -\frac{6EI_z}{L^2} \\ 0 & \frac{6EI_y}{L^2} & 0 \\ -\frac{GJ_x}{L} & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \frac{2EI_y}{L} & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \frac{2EI_z}{L} \end{bmatrix} \quad (102.76)$$

$$[K_{cr}] = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & -\frac{GJ_x}{L} & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -\frac{6EI_y}{L^2} & 0 & 0 & \frac{6EI_y}{L^2} & 0 & \frac{2EI_y}{L} & 0 \\ 0 & \frac{6EI_z}{L^2} & 0 & 0 & -\frac{6EI_z}{L^2} & 0 & 0 & 0 & \frac{2EI_z}{L} \end{bmatrix} \quad (102.77)$$

$$[K_{cc}] = \begin{bmatrix} \frac{GJ_x}{L} & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \frac{4EI_y}{L} & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \frac{4EI_z}{L} \end{bmatrix} \quad (102.78)$$

$$[K_{condensed}] = \begin{bmatrix} \frac{EA}{L} & 0 & 0 & -\frac{EA}{L} & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \frac{3EI_z}{L^3} & 0 & 0 & -\frac{3EI_z}{L^3} & 0 & 0 & 0 & \frac{3EI_z}{L^2} \\ 0 & 0 & \frac{3EI_y}{L^3} & 0 & 0 & -\frac{3EI_y}{L^3} & 0 & -\frac{3EI_y}{L^2} & 0 \\ -\frac{EA}{L} & 0 & 0 & \frac{EA}{L} & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -\frac{3EI_z}{L^3} & 0 & 0 & \frac{3EI_z}{L^3} & 0 & 0 & 0 & -\frac{3EI_z}{L^2} \\ 0 & 0 & -\frac{3EI_y}{L^3} & 0 & 0 & \frac{3EI_y}{L^3} & 0 & \frac{3EI_y}{L^2} & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -\frac{3EI_y}{L^2} & 0 & 0 & \frac{3EI_y}{L^2} & 0 & \frac{3EI_y}{L} & 0 \\ 0 & \frac{3EI_z}{L^2} & 0 & 0 & -\frac{3EI_z}{L^2} & 0 & 0 & 0 & \frac{3EI_z}{L} \end{bmatrix} \quad (102.79)$$

$$[T] = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & \frac{3}{2L} & 0 & 0 & -\frac{3}{2L} & 0 & -\frac{1}{2} & 0 \\ 0 & -\frac{3}{2L} & 0 & 0 & \frac{3}{2L} & 0 & 0 & 0 & -\frac{1}{2} \end{bmatrix} \quad (102.80)$$

(102.81)

(102.82)

102.9 Shear Beam Finite Element

102.10 Quadrilateral Shell Finite Element with 6DOFs per Node

Based on works by [Bergan and Felippa \(1985\)](#); [Alvin et al. \(1992\)](#); [Felippa and Militello \(1992\)](#); [Felippa and Alexander \(1992\)](#); [Militello and Felippa \(1991\)](#). The stiffness matrix for this element is obtained by averaging two quad shells made up of two ANDES triangular shells (with an alternating orientation of diagonals, [Stošić \(1984-2022\)](#))

102.11 Seismic Isolator and Dissipator Finite Elements

Base isolation system are used to change dynamic characteristics of seismic motions that excite structure and also to dissipate seismic energy before it excites structure. Therefore there are two main types of devices:

- Base Isolators ([Kelly, 1991a,b](#); [Toopchi-Nezhad et al., 2008](#); [Huang et al., 2010](#); [Vassiliou et al., 2013](#)) are usually made of low damping (energy dissipation) elastomers and are primarily meant to change (reduce) frequencies of input motions. They are not designed nor modeled as energy dissipators.
- Base Dissipators [Kelly and Hodder \(1982\)](#); [Fadi and Constantinou \(2010\)](#); [Kumar et al. \(2014\)](#) are developed to dissipate seismic energy before it excites the structure. There two main types of such dissipators:
 - Elastomers made of high dissipation rubber, and
 - Frictional pendulum dissipators

Both isolators and dissipators are usually developed to work in two horizontal dimensions, while motions in vertical direction are not isolated or dissipated. This can create potential problems and need to be carefully modeled.

Modeling of base isolation and dissipation system is done using two-node finite elements of relatively short length.

102.11.1 Base Isolation Systems

Base isolation systems are modeled using linear or nonlinear elastic elements. Stiffness is provided from either tests on a full-sized base isolators, or from material characterization of rubber (and steel plates if used in a sandwich isolator construction). Depending on rubber used, a number of models can be used to develop stiffness of the device [Ogden \(1984\)](#); [Simo and Miehe \(1992\)](#); [Simo and Pister \(1984\)](#).

Particularly important is to properly account for vertical stiffness as vertical motions can be amplified depending on characteristics of seismic motions, structure and stiffness of the isolators [Hijikata et al. \(2012\)](#); [Araki et al. \(2009\)](#). It is also important to note that assumption of small deformation is used in most cases. In other words, the stability of the isolator, for example, overturning or rolling is not modeled. It is assumed that elastic stiffness will not suddenly change if the isolator becomes unstable (rolls or overturns).

102.11.2 Base Dissipator Systems

Base dissipator systems are modeled using inelastic (nonlinear) two node elements. There are three basic types of dissipator models used:

- High damping rubber dissipators
- Rubber dissipators with lead core
- Frictional pendulum (double or triple) dissipators

Each one is calibrated using tests done on a full dissipator. It is important to be able to take into account the influence of (an increase in) temperature on resulting behavior. Energy dissipation results in heating of devices, and an increase in temperature influences material properties of dissipators.

102.11.3 Two Node, 3D, Rubber Isolator Finite Element

Kelly (1991a,b)

Behavior of rubber (Ogden, 1984; Simo and Miehe, 1992; Simo and Pister, 1984)

102.11.4 Two Node, 3D, Frictional Pendulum Finite Element

102.12 Fully Coupled, Porous Solid – Pore Fluid Finite Elements

102.12.1 u-p-U Formulation

102.12.1.1 Background

This section follows developments by Zienkiewicz and Shiomi (1984).

The relationship between effective stress, total stress and pore pressure is given as:

$$\sigma''_{ij} = \sigma_{ij} - \alpha \delta_{ij} p \quad (102.83)$$

where σ''_{ij} is effective stress tensor, σ_{ij} is total stress tensor, δ_{ij} is Kronecker delta. $\delta_{ij} = 1$, when $i=j$, and $\delta_{ij} = 0$, when $i \neq j$. It is assumed that tensile components of effective and total stress are positive, and the pore fluid pressure p is also positive in tension, hence for compressions (usual case) pore fluid pressure is negative ($p < 0$) (Zienkiewicz et al., 1999a). For isotropic materials, $\alpha = 1 - K_T/K_S$. K_T is the total bulk modulus of the solid matrix, K_S is the bulk modulus of the solid particle. For most of the soil mechanics problems, as the bulk modulus K_S of the solid particles is much larger than that of the whole material, $\alpha \approx 1$ can be assumed. Equation (102.83) becomes

$$\sigma''_{ij} = \sigma_{ij} - \delta_{ij} p \quad (102.84)$$

In the next sections, a detailed derivation of formulation and numerical implementation for a fully coupled (pore fluid and porous soil) solid mechanics problem is given. Derivations are based in part on earlier work by [Zienkiewicz et al. \(1999a\)](#).

102.12.1.2 Governing Equations of Porous Media

The following notation is used:

- σ_{ij} , the total Cauchy stress in the mixture,
- u_i , the displacement of the solid skeleton,
- w_i , the displacement of the fluid phase relative to the skeleton of solid,
- p , the pore water pressure,
- $\varepsilon_{ij} = \frac{1}{2}(u_{i,j} + u_{j,i})$, the strain increment of the solid phase,
- $\omega_{ij} = \frac{1}{2}(u_{i,j} - u_{j,i})$, the rotation increment of the solid phase,
- ρ, ρ_s, ρ_f , the densities of the mixture, solid phase and water respectively,
- n the porosity,
- $\theta = -\dot{w}_{i,i}$, the rate of change of volume of water per unit total volume of mixture.

The Equilibrium Equation of the Mixture. The overall equilibrium or momentum balance equation for the soil-fluid mixture is written as

$$\sigma_{ij,j} - \rho \ddot{u}_i - \rho_f [\ddot{w}_i + \dot{w}_j \dot{w}_{i,j}] + \rho b_i = 0 \quad (102.85)$$

here \ddot{u}_i is the acceleration of the solid part, b_i is the body force per unit mass, $\ddot{w}_i + \dot{w}_j \dot{w}_{i,j}$ is the fluid acceleration relative to the solid part, \ddot{w}_i is local acceleration, $\dot{w}_j \dot{w}_{i,j}$ is convective acceleration.

The underlined terms in the above equation represent the fluid acceleration relative to the solid and convective terms of this acceleration. Generally, this acceleration is so small that it is frequently omitted. For static problems, equation 102.85 only consists of the first and last terms.

For fully saturated porous media (no air inside), from definition

$$\begin{aligned}
\rho &= \frac{M_t}{V_t} \\
&= \frac{M_s + M_f}{V_t} \\
&= \frac{V_s \rho_s + V_f \rho_f}{V_t} \\
&= \frac{V_f}{V_t} \rho_f + \frac{V_t - V_f}{V_t} \rho_s \\
&= n \rho_f + (1 - n) \rho_s \\
\rho &= n \rho_f + (1 - n) \rho_s
\end{aligned} \tag{102.86}$$

where M_t , M_s and M_f are the mass of total, solid part and fluid part respectively. V_t , V_s and V_f are the volume of total, solid part and fluid part respectively.

The Equilibrium Equation of the Fluid. For the pore fluid, the equation of momentum balance is written as

$$-p_{,i} - R_i - \rho_f \ddot{u}_i - \rho_f [\ddot{w}_i + \dot{w}_j \dot{w}_{i,j}] / n + \rho_f b_i = 0 \tag{102.87}$$

where R is the viscous drag forces. It is noted that the underlined terms in equation 102.87 represent the convective fluid acceleration again and are generally small. Also note that the permeability \mathbf{k} is used with dimensions of $[length]^3[time]/[mass]$, which is different from the usual soil mechanics convention, where the permeability has the dimension of velocity, i.e., $[length]/[time]$. Their values are related by $k = K/\rho_f g$, where g is the gravitational acceleration at which the permeability is measured. Assuming the Darcy seepage law: $n\dot{w} = Ki$, here i is the head gradient. Seepage force is then $R = \rho_f g i$. R can be written as

$$R_i = k_{ij}^{-1} \dot{w}_j \quad \text{or} \quad R_i = k^{-1} \dot{w}_i \tag{102.88}$$

where k_{ij} or k are Darcy permeability coefficients for anisotropic and isotropic conditions respectively.

Flow Conservation Equation. The final equation is supplied by the mass conservation of the fluid flow

$$\dot{w}_{i,i} + \alpha \dot{\epsilon}_{ii} + \frac{\dot{p}}{Q} + n \frac{\dot{\rho}_f}{\rho_f} + \dot{s}_0 = 0 \tag{102.89}$$

The first term of equation(102.89) is the flow divergence of a unit volume of mixture. The second term is the volume change of the mixture. In the third term, Q is relative to the compressibility of the solid

and fluid. The underlined terms represent change of density and rate of volume expansion of the solid in case of thermal changes. They are generally negligible.

$$\frac{1}{Q} \equiv \frac{n}{K_f} + \frac{\alpha - n}{K_s} \cong \frac{n}{K_f} + \frac{1 - n}{K_s} \quad (102.90)$$

where K_s and K_f are the bulk moduli of the solid and fluid phases respectively. Note that the bulk modulus of the solid phase K_s is the actual bulk modulus of the solid particle.

Obtained are the total mixture equilibrium equation (102.85), fluid equilibrium equation (102.87) and the flow conservation equation (102.89) for saturated soil. By omitting the convective acceleration (the underline terms in (102.85) and (102.87)), density variation and the volume expansion due to the thermal change (the underline terms in (102.89)), the equations of coupled system can be further simplified, as summarized below

$$\sigma_{ij,j} - \rho \ddot{u}_i - \rho_f \ddot{w}_i + \rho b_i = 0 \quad (102.91)$$

$$-p_{,i} - R_i - \rho_f \ddot{u}_i - \frac{\rho_f \ddot{w}_i}{n} + \rho_f b_i = 0 \quad (102.92)$$

$$\dot{w}_{i,i} + \alpha \dot{\varepsilon}_{ii} + \frac{\dot{p}}{Q} = 0 \quad (102.93)$$

Bulk Modulus of Fluid (see [Verruijt \(2012\)](#) page 97... compressibility of water and with air bubbles)...

102.12.1.3 Modified Governing Equations.

Solid Part Equilibrium Equation. A new variable U_i is introduced in place of the relative pseudo-displacement w_i

$$U_i = u_i + U_i^R = u_i + \frac{w_i}{n} \quad (102.94)$$

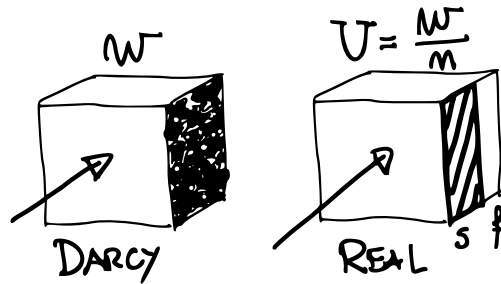


Figure 102.10: Fluid mechanics of Darcy's flow (w_i) versus real flow ($U_i = w_i/n$).

Change of variables is finalized by insertion of equation 102.94 into equations 102.91 and 102.92, and then by subtraction of term ($[n \times \text{equation 102.92}]$) from equation 102.91, which leads to the equation of skeleton equilibrium

$$\sigma_{ij,j} - \rho \ddot{u}_i + \rho b_i + np_{,i} + nR_i + n\rho_f \ddot{u}_i - n\rho_f b_i = 0 \quad (102.95)$$

By substituting $\rho = (1 - n)\rho_s + n\rho_f$

$$\begin{aligned} \sigma_{ij,j} - (1 - n)\rho_s \ddot{u}_i - n\rho_f \ddot{u}_i + (1 - n)\rho_s b_i + n\rho_f b_i + np_{,i} + nR_i + n\rho_f \ddot{u}_i - n\rho_f b_i &= 0 \\ \sigma_{ij,j} + np_{,i} + (1 - n)\rho_s b_i - (1 - n)\rho_s \ddot{u}_i + nR_i &= 0 \end{aligned} \quad (102.96)$$

By using the definition of effective stress, equation 102.83, equation 102.95 becomes

$$\sigma''_{ij,j} - (\alpha - n)p_{,i} + (1 - n)\rho_s b_i - (1 - n)\rho_s \ddot{u}_i + nR_i = 0 \quad (102.97)$$

Fluid Part Equilibrium Equation. The fluid part equilibrium equation can be obtained simply by $[n \times (102.92)]$, i.e.

$$\begin{aligned} -np_{,i} - nR_i - n\rho_f \ddot{u}_i - \rho_f \ddot{w}_i + n\rho_f b_i &= 0 \\ -np_{,i} - nR_i - n\rho_f (\ddot{u}_i + \frac{\ddot{w}_i}{n}) + n\rho_f b_i &= 0 \end{aligned} \quad (102.98)$$

From equation (102.94),

$$\ddot{U}_i = \ddot{u}_i + \frac{\ddot{w}_i}{n} \quad (102.99)$$

so that equation (102.98) becomes:

$$-np_{,i} + n\rho_f b_i - n\rho_f \ddot{U}_i - nR_i = 0 \quad (102.100)$$

Mixture Balance of Mass. By differentiating equation (102.94) in time and space

$$\dot{w}_{i,i} = n\dot{U}_{i,i} - n\dot{u}_{i,i} \quad (102.101)$$

Notice that $\dot{\varepsilon}_{ii} = \dot{u}_{i,i}$, so that equation (102.101) becomes

$$\dot{w}_{i,i} = n\dot{U}_{i,i} - n\dot{\varepsilon}_{ii} \quad (102.102)$$

By substituting (102.102) to (102.93)

$$n\dot{U}_{i,i} - n\dot{\varepsilon}_{ii} + \alpha\dot{\varepsilon}_{ii} + \frac{\dot{p}}{Q} = 0 \quad (102.103)$$

or:

$$-n\dot{U}_{i,i} = (\alpha - n)\dot{\varepsilon}_{ii} + \frac{1}{Q}\dot{p} \quad (102.104)$$

Developed is a set of modified governing equations (102.97), (102.100) and (102.104). They are summarized below

$$\sigma''_{ij,j} - (\alpha - n)p_{,i} + (1 - n)\rho_s b_i - (1 - n)\rho_s \ddot{u}_i + nR_i = 0 \quad (102.105)$$

$$-np_{,i} + n\rho_f b_i - n\rho_f \ddot{U}_i - nR_i = 0 \quad (102.106)$$

$$-n\dot{U}_{i,i} = (\alpha - n)\dot{\varepsilon}_{ii} + \frac{1}{Q}\dot{p} \quad (102.107)$$

From the modified equation set (102.105), (102.106) and (102.107), it is noted that only \ddot{u}_i occurs in the first equation, and only \ddot{U}_i in the second, thus leading to a convenient diagonal form in discretization.

Obtained is a complete equation system given by (102.105), (102.106) and (102.107). With the basic definitions introduced earlier, there are three essential unknowns:

1. three solid displacement u_i
2. pore pressure p
3. three fluid displacement U_i

The boundary conditions imposed on these variables will complete the problem. These boundary conditions are:

- For the momentum balance part,
 - on boundary Γ_t , traction $t_i(t)$ (or $\sigma_{ij}n_j$), where n_i is the i -th component of the normal to the boundary.
 - On boundary Γ_u , the displacement u_i is given.
- For the fluid part, again the boundary is divided into two parts:
 - On Γ_p , the pressure p is specified,
 - on Γ_w , the normal outflow \dot{w}_n is specified. For impermeable boundary a zero value for the outflow should be specified.

The boundary conditions can be summarized below

$$\begin{aligned}\Gamma &= \Gamma_t \cup \Gamma_u \\ t_i &= \sigma_{ij}n_j = \bar{t}_i \quad \text{on} \quad \Gamma = \Gamma_t \\ u_i &= \bar{u}_i \quad \text{on} \quad \Gamma = \Gamma_u\end{aligned}\tag{102.108}$$

and

$$\begin{aligned}\Gamma &= \Gamma_p \cup \Gamma_w \\ p &= \bar{p} \quad \text{on} \quad \Gamma = \Gamma_p \\ n^T w &= w_n \quad \text{on} \quad \Gamma = \Gamma_w\end{aligned}\tag{102.109}$$

102.12.1.4 Numerical Solution of the u-p-U Governing Equations

The solutions to the problems governed by the modified governing equation set (102.105), (102.106) and (102.107) can be found by solving partial differential equations, which can be written as

$$A\ddot{\Phi} + B\dot{\Phi} + L(\Phi) = 0\tag{102.110}$$

where A, B are constant matrices, and L is an operator involving spatial differentials. The dot notation represents the time differentiation. Vector of dependent variables, Φ represents the displacement u or the pore fluid pressure p .

The finite element solution of a problem proceeds as follows.

1. Discretize or approximate the unknown functions Φ by a finite set of parameters $\bar{\Phi}_k$ and shape function H_k . They are specified in space dimensions. Thus

$$\Phi \cong \Phi^h = \sum_{k=1}^n H_k \bar{\Phi}_k\tag{102.111}$$

2. Insert the value of the approximating function $\hat{\Phi}$ into the differential equations to obtain a residual, then a set of weighted residual equations can be written in the form

$$\int_{\Omega} W_j^T (A\ddot{\Phi}^h + B\dot{\Phi}^h + L(\Phi^h)) d\Omega = 0\tag{102.112}$$

In the finite element method, the weighting functions W_j are usually identical to the shape functions.

The solid displacement u_i , the pore pressure p , and the absolute fluid displacement U_i can be approximated using shape functions and nodal values.

$$\begin{aligned} u_i &= H_K^u \bar{u}_{Ki} \\ p &= H_K^p \bar{p}_K \\ U_i &= H_K^U \bar{U}_{Ki} \end{aligned} \quad (102.113)$$

where H_K^u , H_K^p , and H_K^U are shape functions for solid displacement, pore pressure and fluid displacement, respectively, \bar{u}_{Ki} , \bar{p}_K , \bar{U}_{Ki} are nodal values of solid displacement, pore pressure and fluid displacement, respectively.

Numerical Solution of solid part equilibrium equation. To obtain the numerical solution of the first equation, premultiply equation 102.105 by H_K^u and integrate over the domain.

First term of (102.105) becomes

$$\begin{aligned} \int_{\Omega} H_K^u \sigma''_{ij,j} d\Omega &= \int_{\Gamma_t} H_K^u n_j \sigma''_{ij} d\Gamma - \int_{\Omega} H_{K,j}^u \sigma''_{ij} d\Omega \\ &= \int_{\Gamma_t} H_K^u (\bar{t}_i + n_i \alpha p) d\Gamma - \int_{\Omega} H_{K,j}^u \sigma''_{ij} d\Omega \\ &= (f_1^u)_{Ki} - \int_{\Omega} H_{K,j}^u D_{ijml} \varepsilon_{ml} d\Omega \\ &= (f_1^u)_{Ki} - \left[\int_{\Omega} H_{K,j}^u D_{ijml} H_{P,l}^u d\Omega \right] \bar{u}_{Pm} \\ &= (f_1^u)_{Ki} - K_{KimP}^{EP} \bar{u}_{Pm} \\ &= (f_1^u)_{Ki} - K_{KijL}^{EP} \bar{u}_{Lj} \\ &= (f_1^u) - K^{EP} \bar{u} \end{aligned} \quad (102.114)$$

where K^{EP} is the stiffness matrix of the solid part, n_i is the direction of the normal on the boundary.

Second term of (102.105) becomes

$$\begin{aligned} - \int_{\Omega} H_K^u (\alpha - n) p_{,i} d\Omega &= - \int_{\Gamma_p} H_K^u (\alpha - n) n_i p d\Gamma + \int_{\Omega} H_{K,i}^u (\alpha - n) p d\Omega \\ &= - \int_{\Gamma_p} H_K^u (\alpha - n) n_i p d\Gamma + \left[\int_{\Omega} H_{K,i}^u (\alpha - n) H_M^p d\Omega \right] \bar{p}_M \\ &= -(f_4^u)_{Ki} + (G_1)_{KiM} \bar{p}_M \\ &= -f_4^u + (G_1) \bar{p} \end{aligned} \quad (102.115)$$

Third term of (102.105) (solid body force) is then

$$\int_{\Omega} H_K^u (1-n) \rho_s b_i d\Omega = (f_5^u)_{Ki} \quad (102.116)$$

Fourth term of (102.105) can be written as

$$\begin{aligned} - \int_{\Omega} H_K^u (1-n) \rho_s \delta_{ij} \ddot{u}_j d\Omega &= - \left[\int_{\Omega} H_K^u (1-n) \rho_s \delta_{ij} H_L^u d\Omega \right] \ddot{u}_{Lj} \\ &= -(M_s)_{KijL} \ddot{u}_{Lj} \\ &= -M_s \ddot{\mathbf{u}} \end{aligned} \quad (102.117)$$

where M_s is the mass matrix of solid part. By substituting equations (102.88) and (102.94), last term of (102.105) (Damping Matrix) becomes

$$\begin{aligned} \int_{\Omega} H_K^u n R_i d\Omega &= \int_{\Omega} H_K^u n k_{ij}^{-1} \dot{w}_j d\Omega \\ &= \int_{\Omega} H_K^u n^2 k_{ij}^{-1} \dot{U}_j d\Omega - \int_{\Omega} H_K^u n^2 k_{ij}^{-1} \dot{u}_j d\Omega \\ &= \left[\int_{\Omega} H_K^u n^2 k_{ij}^{-1} H_L^U d\Omega \right] \dot{U}_{Lj} - \left[\int_{\Omega} H_K^u n^2 k_{ij}^{-1} H_L^U d\Omega \right] \dot{u}_{Lj} \\ &= (C_2)_{KijL} \dot{U}_{Lj} - (C_1)_{KijL} \dot{u}_{Lj} \\ &= C_2 \dot{\bar{\mathbf{U}}} - C_1 \dot{\mathbf{u}} \end{aligned} \quad (102.118)$$

Equation (102.105) becomes

$$-K^{EP} \bar{\mathbf{u}} + f_1^u - f_4^u + G_1 \bar{\mathbf{p}} + f_5^u + M_s \ddot{\mathbf{u}} + C_2 \dot{\bar{\mathbf{U}}} - C_1 \dot{\mathbf{u}} = 0 \quad (102.119)$$

or

$$K^{EP} \bar{\mathbf{u}} - G_1 \bar{\mathbf{p}} - C_2 \dot{\bar{\mathbf{U}}} + C_1 \dot{\mathbf{u}} + M_s \ddot{\mathbf{u}} = \bar{\mathbf{f}}_s \quad (102.120)$$

where

$$\bar{\mathbf{f}}_s = f_1^u - f_4^u + f_5^u \quad (102.121)$$

and in index form

$$K_{KijL}^{EP} - (G_1)_{KiL} \bar{p}_L + (C_2)_{KijL} \dot{\bar{U}}_{Lj} - (C_1)_{KijL} \dot{u}_{Lj} + (M_s)_{KijL} \ddot{u}_{Ki} = (\bar{f}_s)_{Ki} \quad (102.122)$$

where

$$\begin{aligned}
 \mathbf{K}^{EP} = (K^{EP})_{KimP} &= \int_{\Omega} H_{K,j}^u D_{ijml} H_{P,l}^u d\Omega \\
 \mathbf{G}_1 = (G_1)_{KiM} &= \int_{\Omega} H_{K,i}^u (\alpha - n) H_M^p d\Omega \\
 \mathbf{C}_2 = (C_2)_{KijL} &= \int_{\Omega} H_K^u n^2 k_{ij}^{-1} H_L^u d\Omega \\
 \mathbf{C}_1 = (C_1)_{KijL} &= \int_{\Omega} H_K^u n^2 k_{ij}^{-1} H_L^u d\Omega \\
 \mathbf{M}_s = (M_s)_{KijL} &= \int_{\Omega} H_K^u (1 - n) \rho_s \delta_{ij} H_L^u d\Omega \\
 \bar{\mathbf{f}} = (\bar{f}_s)_{Ki} &= (f_1^u)_{Ki} - (f_4^u)_{Ki} + (f_5^u)_{Ki}
 \end{aligned} \tag{102.123}$$

Numerical Solution of fluid part equilibrium equation. From equations (102.88) and (102.94),

$$R_i = nk_{ij}^{-1} (\dot{U}_j - \dot{u}_j) \tag{102.124}$$

By substituting (102.124) into equation (102.106),

$$-np_{,i} + n\rho_f b_i - n\rho_f \ddot{U}_i - n^2 k_{ij}^{-1} (\dot{U}_j - \dot{u}_j) = 0 \tag{102.125}$$

By premultiplying (102.125) by H_K^U and integrating over the domain, first term of (102.125) becomes

$$\begin{aligned}
 - \int_{\Omega} n H_K^U p_{,i} d\Omega &= - \int_{\Gamma_p} n H_K^U n_i p d\Gamma + \int_{\Omega} n H_{K,i}^U p d\Omega \\
 &= -(f_1)_{Ki} + \left[\int_{\Omega} n H_{K,i}^U H_M^p d\Omega \right] \bar{p}_M \\
 &= -(f_1)_{Ki} + (G_2)_{KiM} \bar{p}_M \\
 &= -(\mathbf{f}_1)_{Ki} + (\mathbf{G}_2)_{Ki} \bar{\mathbf{p}}
 \end{aligned} \tag{102.126}$$

Second term of (102.125) is then

$$\int_{\Omega} H_K^U \rho_f b_i d\Omega = (f_2)_{Ki} \tag{102.127}$$

Third term of (102.125) (Lumped mass matrix obtained by multiplying δ_{ij}) becomes

$$\begin{aligned}
 - \int_{\Omega} H_K^U n \rho_f \delta_{ij} \ddot{U}_j d\Omega &= - \left[\int_{\Omega} H_K^U n \rho_f \delta_{ij} H_L^U d\Omega \right] \ddot{\bar{U}}_{Lj} \\
 &= -(\mathbf{M}_f)_{KijL} \ddot{\bar{U}}_{Lj} \\
 &= -\mathbf{M}_f \ddot{\bar{\mathbf{U}}}
 \end{aligned} \tag{102.128}$$

Forth term of (102.125) becomes

$$-\int_{\Omega} H_K^U n^2 k_{ij}^{-1} \dot{U}_j d\Omega + \int_{\Omega} H_K^U n^2 k_{ij}^{-1} \dot{u}_j d\Omega = -[\int_{\Omega} H_K^U n^2 k_{ij}^{-1} H_L^U d\Omega] \bar{U}_{Lj} \quad (102.129)$$

$$\begin{aligned} & + [\int_{\Omega} H_K^U n^2 k_{ij}^{-1} H_L^u d\Omega] \bar{u}_{Lj} \\ & = -(C_3)_{KijL} \bar{U}_{Lj} + (C_2)_{LjiK}^T \bar{u}_{Lj} \\ & = C_3 \dot{\bar{U}} + C_2^T \dot{\bar{u}} \end{aligned} \quad (102.130)$$

Equation (102.125) becomes

$$-f_1 + G_2 \bar{p} + f_2 - M_f \ddot{\bar{U}} - C_3 \dot{\bar{U}} + C_2^T \dot{\bar{u}} = 0 \quad (102.131)$$

or

$$-G_2 \bar{p} - C_2^T \dot{\bar{u}} + C_3 \dot{\bar{U}} + M_f \ddot{\bar{U}} = \bar{f}_f \quad (102.132)$$

where

$$\bar{f}_f = f_2 - f_1 \quad (102.133)$$

and in index form

$$-(G_2)_{KiM} \bar{p}_M - (C_2)_{LjiK}^T \dot{\bar{u}}_{Lj} + (C_3)_{KijL} \dot{\bar{U}}_{Lj} + (M_f)_{KijL} \ddot{\bar{U}}_{Lj} = (\bar{f}_f)_{Ki} \quad (102.134)$$

where

$$\begin{aligned} (\bar{f}_f)_{Ki} &= (f_1)_{Ki} - (f_2)_{Ki} \\ G_2 &= (G_2)_{KiN} = \int_{\Omega} n H_{K,i}^U H_M^P d\Omega \\ C_2^T &= (C_2^T)_{KijL} = \int_{\Omega} H_K^U n^2 k_{ij}^{-1} H_L^u d\Omega \\ C_3 &= (C_3)_{KijL} = \int_{\Omega} H_K^U n^2 k_{ij}^{-1} H_L^U d\Omega \\ M_f &= (M_f)_{KijL} = \int_{\Omega} H_K^U n \rho_f \delta_{ij} H_L^U d\Omega \end{aligned} \quad (102.135)$$

Numerical Solution of flow conservation equation. By integrating (102.107) in time and noticing that

$$\varepsilon_{ii} = u_{i,i},$$

$$-n U_{i,i} = (\alpha - n) \varepsilon_{ii} + \frac{1}{Q} p \quad (102.136)$$

By multiplying (102.136) by H_M^P and integrating over domain, first term of (102.136) becomes

$$-[\int_{\Omega} H_M^P n H_{L,j}^U d\Omega] \bar{U}_{Lj} = -(G_2)_{MLj} \bar{U}_{Lj} = -G_2^T \bar{U} \quad (102.137)$$

Second term of (102.136) is

$$\begin{aligned}
 \int_{\Omega} H_M^p (\alpha - n) u_{i,i} d\Omega &= \left[\int_{\Omega} H_M^p (\alpha - n) H_{Lj}^u d\Omega \right] \bar{u}_{Lj} \\
 &= (G_1)_{LjM} \bar{u}_{Lj} \\
 &= \mathbf{G}_1^T \bar{\mathbf{u}}
 \end{aligned} \tag{102.138}$$

Third term of (102.136) becomes

$$\left[\int_{\Omega} H_N^p \frac{1}{Q} H_M^p d\Omega \right] p_N = P_{NMP_M} = \mathbf{P} \bar{\mathbf{p}} \tag{102.139}$$

The equation (102.136) becomes

$$\mathbf{G}_2^T \bar{\mathbf{U}} + \mathbf{G}_1^T \bar{\mathbf{u}} + \mathbf{P} \bar{\mathbf{p}} = \mathbf{0} \tag{102.140}$$

in index form

$$(G_2)_{LiK} \bar{U}_{Li} + (G_1)_{LiK} \bar{u}_{Li} + P_{KL} \bar{p}_L = 0 \tag{102.141}$$

102.12.1.5 Matrix form of the governing equations.

The numerical forms of governing equations (102.120), (102.132) and (102.140) can be written together in the matrix form as

$$\begin{aligned}
 \begin{bmatrix} M_s & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & M_f \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \ddot{\bar{\mathbf{u}}} \\ \ddot{\bar{\mathbf{p}}} \\ \ddot{\bar{\mathbf{U}}} \end{bmatrix} + \begin{bmatrix} C_1 & 0 & -C_2 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \\ -C_2^T & 0 & C_3 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \dot{\bar{\mathbf{u}}} \\ \dot{\bar{\mathbf{p}}} \\ \dot{\bar{\mathbf{U}}} \end{bmatrix} + \begin{bmatrix} K^{EP} & -G_1 & 0 \\ -G_1^T & -P & -G_2^T \\ 0 & -G_2 & 0 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \bar{\mathbf{u}} \\ \bar{\mathbf{p}} \\ \bar{\mathbf{U}} \end{bmatrix} \\
 = \begin{bmatrix} \bar{f}_s \\ 0 \\ \bar{f}_f \end{bmatrix}
 \end{aligned} \tag{102.142}$$

or in index form

$$\begin{aligned}
 \begin{bmatrix} (M_s)_{KijL} & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & (M_f)_{KijL} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \ddot{\bar{u}}_{Lj} \\ \ddot{\bar{p}}_N \\ \ddot{\bar{U}}_{Lj} \end{bmatrix} + \begin{bmatrix} (C_1)_{KijL} & 0 & -(C_2)_{KijL} \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \\ -(C_2)_{LjiK} & 0 & (C_3)_{KijL} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \dot{\bar{u}}_{Lj} \\ \dot{\bar{p}}_N \\ \dot{\bar{U}}_{Lj} \end{bmatrix} \\
 + \begin{bmatrix} (K^{EP})_{KijL} & -(G_1)_{KiM} & 0 \\ -(G_1)_{LjM} & -P_{MN} & -(G_2)_{LjM} \\ 0 & -(G_2)_{KiL} & 0 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \bar{u}_{Lj} \\ \bar{p}_M \\ \bar{U}_{Lj} \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} \bar{f}_{Ki}^{solid} \\ 0 \\ \bar{f}_{Ki}^{fluid} \end{bmatrix}
 \end{aligned} \tag{102.143}$$

where

$$\begin{aligned}
 \mathbf{M}_s &= (\mathbf{M}_s)_{KijL} = \int_{\Omega} H_K^u (1-n) \rho_s \delta_{ij} H_L^u d\Omega \\
 \mathbf{M}_f &= (\mathbf{M}_f)_{KijL} = \int_{\Omega} H_K^U n \rho_f \delta_{ij} H_L^U d\Omega \\
 \mathbf{C}_1 &= (\mathbf{C}_1)_{KijL} = \int_{\Omega} H_K^u n^2 k_{ij}^{-1} H_L^u d\Omega \\
 \mathbf{C}_2 &= (\mathbf{C}_2)_{KijL} = \int_{\Omega} H_K^u n^2 k_{ij}^{-1} H_L^U d\Omega \\
 \mathbf{C}_3 &= (\mathbf{C}_3)_{KijL} = \int_{\Omega} H_K^U n^2 k_{ij}^{-1} H_L^U d\Omega \\
 \mathbf{K}^{EP} &= (\mathbf{K}^{EP})_{KijL} = \int_{\Omega} H_{K,m}^u D_{imjn} H_{L,n}^u d\Omega \\
 \mathbf{G}_1 &= (\mathbf{G}_1)_{KiM} = \int_{\Omega} H_{K,i}^u (\alpha - n) H_M^p d\Omega \\
 \mathbf{G}_2 &= (\mathbf{G}_2)_{KiM} = \int_{\Omega} n H_{K,i}^U H_M^p d\Omega \\
 \mathbf{P} &= P_{NM} = \int_{\Omega} H_N^p \frac{1}{Q} H_M^p d\Omega
 \end{aligned} \tag{102.144}$$

$$\begin{aligned}
 \bar{f}_{Ki}^{solid} &= (f_1^u)_{Ki} - (f_4^u)_{Ki} + (f_5^u)_{Ki} \\
 \bar{f}_{Ki}^{fluid} &= -(f_1^U)_{Ki} + (f_2^U)_{Ki} \\
 (f_1^u)_{Ki} &= \int_{\Gamma_t} H_K^u n_j \sigma_{ij}'' d\Gamma \\
 (f_4^u)_{Ki} &= \int_{\Gamma_p} H_K^u (\alpha - n) n_i p d\Gamma \\
 (f_5^u)_{Ki} &= \int_{\Omega} H_K^u (1-n) \rho_s b_i d\Omega \\
 (f_1^U)_{Ki} &= \int_{\Gamma_p} n H_K^U n_i p d\Gamma \\
 (f_2^U)_{Ki} &= \int_{\Omega} n H_K^U \rho_f b_i d\Omega
 \end{aligned} \tag{102.145}$$

Functions N^u, N^p, N^U are shape functions for unknown field of skeleton displacements, pore fluid pressures and fluid displacements, respectively, while ρ, ρ_s, ρ_f are the density of the total, solid and fluid phases, respectively, n is the porosity, and by its definition $\rho = (1-n)\rho_s + n\rho_f$, the symbol n_i is the direction of the normal on the boundary, u_i is the displacement of the solid part, p is pore fluid pressure and U_i is the absolute displacement of the fluid part. Equation (102.142) represents the general form $(u - p - U)$ for coupled system which can be written in a familiar form as

$$\mathbf{M}\ddot{\mathbf{x}} + \mathbf{C}\dot{\mathbf{x}} + \mathbf{K}\mathbf{x} = \mathbf{f} \tag{102.146}$$

where x represents the generalized unknown variable. The solution of this equation for each time step will render an unknown field for given initial and boundary conditions.

102.12.1.6 Choice of shape functions

Isoparametric elements are used in previous sections, where the coordinates are interpolated using the same shape functions as for the unknown. This mapping allows using elements of more arbitrary shape than simple forms such as rectangles and triangles. But in static or dynamic undrained analysis the permeability (and compressibility) matrices are zero, i.e. ($Q \rightarrow \infty$, and $P \rightarrow 0$), resulting in a zero-matrix diagonal term in the equation (102.143).

The matrix to be solved is the same as that in the solutions of problems of incompressible elasticity or fluid mechanics. Actually, a wide choice of shape functions is available if the limiting (undrained) condition is never imposed. Due to the presence of first derivatives in space in all the equations, it is necessary to use " C_0 -continuous" interpolation functions and the suitable element forms are shown in Fig. 102.11.

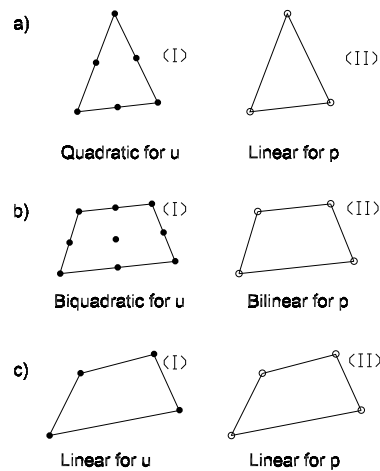


Figure 102.11: Shape functions used for coupled analysis, displacement u and pore pressure p formulation

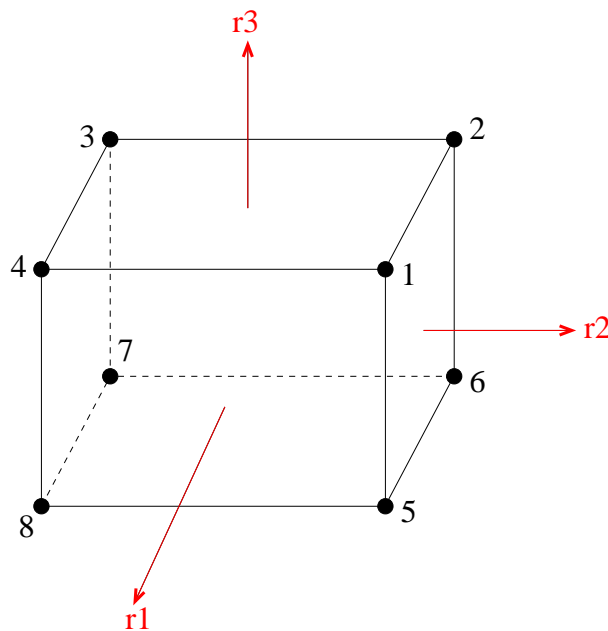


Figure 102.12: 8 node u-p-U brick element. Note that all seven DOFs (three porous solid displacements u_i , pore fluid pressure p and pore fluid displacements U_i are defined at each node.

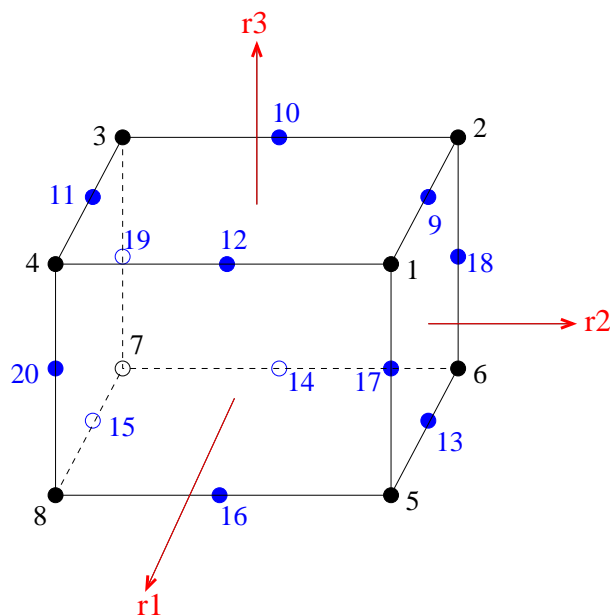


Figure 102.13: 20 node brick element. Note that all seven DOFs (three porous solid displacements u_i , pore fluid pressure p and pore fluid displacements U_i are defined at each node.

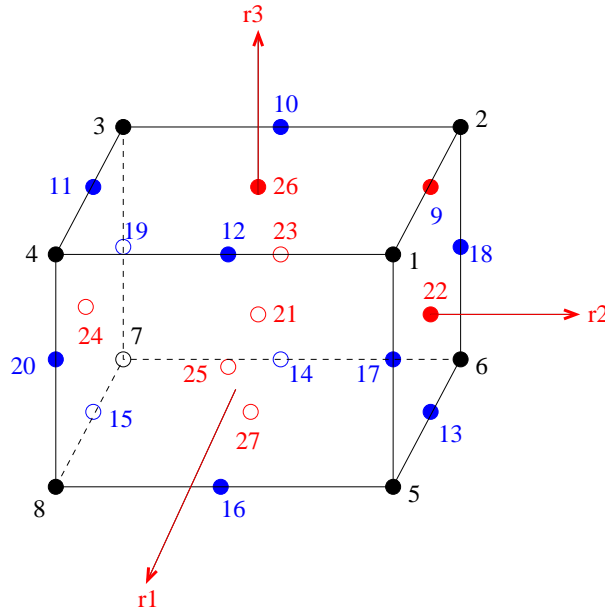


Figure 102.14: 27 node brick element. Note that all seven DOFs (three porous solid displacements u_i , pore fluid pressure p and pore fluid displacements U_i are defined at each node.

102.12.1.7 8 Node $u-p-U$ Brick

102.12.1.8 20 Node $u-p-U$ Brick

102.12.1.9 27 Node $u-p-U$ Brick

102.12.2 $u-p-U$ Formulation for Partially Saturated, Unsaturated Material

Coming SOON, by end of Winter 2020

102.12.3 $u-p$ Formulation

102.12.3.1 Governing Equations of Porous Media

The formulation given here is based on [Zienkiewicz et al. \(1999b\)](#).

The first governing equation of porous media is total momentum balance equation:

$$\sigma_{ij,j} - \rho \ddot{u}_i + \rho b_i = 0 \quad (102.147)$$

where $\sigma_{ij} = \sigma_{ij}'' - \alpha p \delta_{ij}$ and $\rho = (1-n)\rho_s + n\rho_f$.

The second governing equation is the fluid mass balance equation:

$$(k_{ij}(-p_{,j} + \rho_f b_{j,i}))_{,i} + \alpha \dot{u}_{i,i} + \frac{\dot{p}}{Q_{sf}} = 0 \quad (102.148)$$

where

$$k_{ij} = \frac{k'_{ij}}{g\rho_f} = \frac{k'_{ij}}{\gamma_f} \quad (102.149)$$

and k'_{ij} is the permeability in Darcy's law with the same unit as velocity.

$$Q_{sf} = \frac{K_s K_f}{K_s + K_f} \quad (102.150)$$

is the total compression modulus, K_s and K_f are solid and fluid compression modulus, respectively.

The boundary conditions are

$$\sigma_{ij}n_j = \bar{t}_i \quad \text{on} \quad \Gamma = \Gamma_t \quad (102.151)$$

$$u_i = \bar{u}_i \quad \text{on} \quad \Gamma = \Gamma_u \quad (102.152)$$

$$n_i w_i = n_i k_{ij}(-p_{,j} + \rho_f b_j) = \bar{w} = -\bar{q} \quad \text{on} \quad \Gamma = \Gamma_w \quad (102.153)$$

$$p = \bar{p} \quad \text{on} \quad \Gamma = \Gamma_p \quad (102.154)$$

where \bar{w} is the outflow and \bar{q} is the influx.

102.12.3.2 Numerical Solutions of the Governing Equations

The solid displacement u_i and the pore pressure p can be approximated using shape functions and nodal values:

$$u_i = N_K^u \bar{u}_{Ki} \quad (102.155)$$

$$p = N_L^p \bar{p}_L \quad (102.156)$$

Similar approximations are applied to \dot{u}_i , \ddot{u}_i , \dot{p} and \ddot{p} .

Numerical solution of the total momentum balance The numerical solution of the total momentum balance is

$$\int_{\Omega} N_K^u (\sigma_{ij,j} - \rho \ddot{u}_i + \rho b_i) d\Omega = 0 \quad (102.157)$$

First-term of (102.157) becomes

$$\begin{aligned}
 \int_{\Omega} N_K^u \sigma_{ij,j} d\Omega &= \int_{\Gamma_t} N_K^u \sigma_{ij,j} n_j d\Omega - \int_{\Omega} N_{K,j}^u \sigma_{ij} d\Omega \\
 &= \int_{\Gamma_t} N_K^u \bar{t}_i d\Omega - \int_{\Omega} N_{K,j}^u (\sigma_{ij}'' - \alpha p \delta_{ij}) d\Omega \\
 &= (f_1^u)_{Ki} - \int_{\Omega} N_{K,j}^u \sigma_{ij}'' d\Omega + \int_{\Omega} N_{K,i}^u \alpha p d\Omega \\
 &= (f_1^u)_{Ki} - \int_{\Omega} N_{K,j}^u D_{ijml} \varepsilon_{ml} d\Omega + \left[\int_{\Omega} \alpha N_{K,i}^u N_N^p d\Omega \right] \bar{p}_N \\
 &= (f_1^u)_{Ki} - \left[\int_{\Omega} N_{K,j}^u D_{ijml} N_{P,m}^u d\Omega \right] \bar{u}_{Pm} + \left[\int_{\Omega} \alpha N_{K,i}^u N_N^p d\Omega \right] \bar{p}_N \\
 &= (f_1^u)_{Ki} - (K_{Kimp}^{ep}) \bar{u}_{Pm} + (Q_{KiN}) \bar{p}_N \\
 &= f_1^u - (K^{ep}) \bar{u} + Q \bar{p}
 \end{aligned} \tag{102.158}$$

Second term of (102.157) becomes

$$\begin{aligned}
 - \int_{\Omega} N_K^u \rho \ddot{u}_i d\Omega &= - \int_{\Omega} N_K^u \rho N_L^u d\Omega \ddot{u}_{Li} \\
 &= - \left[\int_{\Omega} N_K^u \rho N_L^u d\Omega \right] \ddot{u}_{Li} \\
 &= - [\delta_{ij} \int_{\Omega} N_K^u \rho N_L^u d\Omega] \ddot{u}_{Lj} \\
 &= -(M_{KijL}) \ddot{u}_{Lj} \\
 &= -M \ddot{u}
 \end{aligned} \tag{102.159}$$

The third term of (102.157) becomes

$$\begin{aligned}
 \int_{\Omega} N_K^u \rho b_i d\Omega &= (f_2^u)_{Ki} \\
 &= f_2^u
 \end{aligned} \tag{102.160}$$

The equation (102.157) thus becomes

$$(M_{KijL}) \ddot{u}_{Lj} - (Q_{KiN}) \bar{p}_N + (K_{KijL}^{ep}) \bar{u}_{Lj} = (f_1^u)_{Ki} + (f_2^u)_{Ki} = (f^u)_{Ki} \tag{102.161}$$

or

$$M \ddot{u} - Q \bar{p} + (K^{ep}) \bar{u} = f_1^u + f_2^u = f^u \tag{102.162}$$

Numerical solution of the fluid mass balance The numerical solution of the fluid mass balance is

$$\int_{\Omega} N_M^p \left(k_{ij} (-p_{,j} + \rho_f b_{j,j}) + \alpha \dot{u}_{i,i} + \frac{\dot{p}}{Q_{sf}} \right) d\Omega = 0 \tag{102.163}$$

First term of (102.163) becomes

$$\begin{aligned}
 & \int_{\Omega} N_M^p (k_{ij}(-p_{,j} + \rho_f b_j))_{,i} d\Omega \quad (102.164) \\
 &= \int_{\gamma_w} N_M^p w_i n_i d\Omega - \int_{\Omega} N_{M,i}^p k_{ij}(-p_{,j} + \rho_f b_j) d\Omega \\
 &= \int_{\gamma_w} N_M^p \bar{w} d\Omega + \int_{\Omega} N_{M,i}^p k_{ij} p_{,j} d\Omega - \int_{\Omega} N_{M,i}^p k_{ij} \rho_f b_j d\Omega \\
 &= (f_1^p)_M + \int_{\Omega} N_{M,i}^p k_{ij} p_{,j} d\Omega - \int_{\Omega} N_{M,i}^p k_{ij} \rho_f b_j d\Omega \\
 &= (f_1^p)_M + [\int_{\Omega} N_{M,i}^p k_{ij} N_{N,j}^p d\Omega] \bar{p}_N - (f_2^p)_M \\
 &= (f_1^p)_M + (H_{MN}) \bar{p}_N - (f_2^p)_M \\
 &= f_1^p + H \bar{p} - f_2^p \quad (102.165)
 \end{aligned}$$

Second term of (102.163) becomes

$$\begin{aligned}
 \int_{\Omega} N_M^p \alpha \dot{u}_{i,i} d\Omega &= [\int_{\Omega} N_M^p \alpha N_{L,j}^u d\Omega] \dot{u}_{Lj} \\
 &= (Q_{LjM}) \dot{u}_{Lj} \\
 &= Q^T \dot{u} \quad (102.166)
 \end{aligned}$$

The third term of (102.163) becomes

$$\begin{aligned}
 \int_{\Omega} N_M^p \frac{\dot{p}}{Q_{sf}} d\Omega &= [\int_{\Omega} N_M^p \frac{1}{Q_{sf}} N_N^p d\Omega] \dot{p}_N \\
 &= (S_{MN}) \dot{p}_N \\
 &= S \dot{p} \quad (102.167)
 \end{aligned}$$

The equation (102.163) thus becomes

$$(H_{MN}) \bar{p}_N + (Q_{LjM}) \dot{u}_{Lj} + (S_{MN}) \dot{p}_N = -(f_1^p)_M + (f_2^p)_M = (f^p)_M \quad (102.168)$$

or

$$H \bar{p} + Q^T \dot{u} + S \dot{p} = -f_1^p + f_2^p = f^p \quad (102.169)$$

Matrix form of the governing equations Combine equation (102.161) and (102.168), to obtain

$$\begin{aligned}
 & \begin{bmatrix} M_{KiLj} & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \ddot{u}_{Lj} \\ \ddot{p}_N \end{bmatrix} + \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ Q_{LjM} & S_{MN} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \dot{u}_{Lj} \\ \dot{p}_N \end{bmatrix} \\
 & + \begin{bmatrix} (K^{ep})_{KiLj} & -Q_{KiN} \\ 0 & H_{MN} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} u_{Lj} \\ p_N \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} f_{Ki}^u \\ f_M^p \end{bmatrix} \quad (102.170)
 \end{aligned}$$

or, by combining equations (102.162) and (102.169), obtain

$$\begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{M} & \mathbf{0} \\ \mathbf{0} & \mathbf{0} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \ddot{\mathbf{u}} \\ \ddot{\mathbf{p}} \end{bmatrix} + \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{0} & \mathbf{0} \\ \mathbf{Q}^T & \mathbf{S} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \dot{\mathbf{u}} \\ \dot{\mathbf{p}} \end{bmatrix} + \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{K}^{ep} & \mathbf{Q} \\ \mathbf{0} & \mathbf{H} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{u} \\ \mathbf{p} \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{f}^u \\ \mathbf{f}^p \end{bmatrix} \quad (102.171)$$

where

$$\mathbf{f}^u \leftrightarrow f_{Ki}^u = (f_1^u)_{Ki} + (f_2^u)_{Ki} \quad (102.172)$$

$$\mathbf{f}^p \leftrightarrow f_M^p = -(f_1^p)_M + (f_2^p)_M \quad (102.173)$$

and

$$f_1^u \leftrightarrow (f_1^u)_{Ki} = \int_{\Gamma_t} N_K^u \bar{t}_i d\Gamma \quad (102.174)$$

$$f_2^u \leftrightarrow (f_2^u)_{Ki} = \int_{\Omega} N_K^u \rho b_i d\Omega \quad (102.175)$$

$$f_1^p \leftrightarrow (f_1^p)_M = \int_{\Gamma_w} N_M^p \bar{w} d\Gamma \quad (102.176)$$

$$f_2^p \leftrightarrow (f_2^p)_M = \int_{\Omega} N_{M,i}^p k_{ij} \rho_f b_j d\Omega \quad (102.177)$$

$$\mathbf{M} \leftrightarrow M_{KiLj} = \delta_{ij} \int_{\Omega} N_K^u \rho N_L^u d\Omega \quad (102.178)$$

$$\mathbf{Q} \leftrightarrow Q_{KiN} = \int_{\Omega} \alpha N_{K,i}^u N_N^p d\Omega \quad (102.179)$$

$$\mathbf{S} \leftrightarrow S_{MN} = \int_{\Omega} N_M^p \frac{1}{Q_{sf}} N_N^p d\Omega \quad (102.180)$$

$$\mathbf{H} \leftrightarrow H_{MN} = \int_{\Omega} N_{M,i}^p k_{ij} N_{N,j}^p d\Omega \quad (102.181)$$

102.12.3.3 8 Node $u-p$ Brick

102.13 Material and Geometric Non-Linear Finite Element Formulation

102.13.1 Introduction

Presented here is a detailed formulation of material and geometric non-linear static finite element system of equations. The configuration of choice is material or Lagrangian. Eulerian and mixed Eulerian-Lagrangian configuration will be mentioned as need be.

102.13.2 Equilibrium Equations

The local form of equilibrium equations in material format (Lagrangian) for static case can be written as:

$$P_{iJ,J} - \rho_0 b_i = 0 \quad (102.182)$$

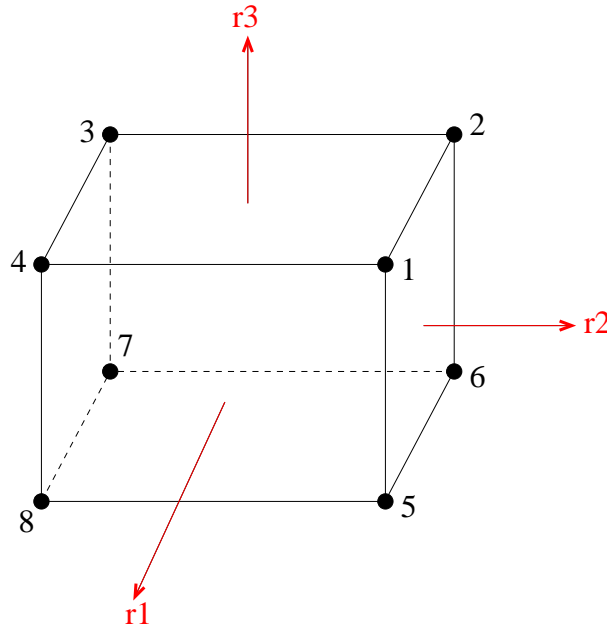


Figure 102.15: 8 node $u-p$ brick element. Note that all four DOFs (three porous solid displacements u_i and a pore fluid pressure p are defined at each node.

where $P_{iJ} = S_{IJ}(F_{iI})^I$ and S_{IJ} are first and second Piola–Kirchhoff stress tensors, respectively and b_I are body forces.

Weak form of equilibrium equations is obtained by premultiplying 102.182 with virtual displacements δu_i and integrating by parts on the initial configuration B_0 (initial volume V_0):

$$\int_{V_0} \delta u_{i,j} P_{ij} dV = \int_{V_0} \rho_0 \delta u_i b_i dV - \int_{S_0} \delta u_i \bar{t}_i dS \quad (102.183)$$

It proves beneficial to rewrite Lagrangian format of weak form of equilibrium equilibrium by using symmetric second Piola–Kirchhoff stress tensor S_{ij} :

$$\begin{aligned} \int_{V_0} \delta u_{i,j} F_{jl} S_{il} dV &= \\ \int_{V_0} \frac{1}{2} (\delta u_{i,j} F_{jl} + F_{lj} \delta u_{j,i}) S_{il} dV &= \\ \int_{V_0} \frac{1}{2} (\delta u_{i,j} (\delta_{jl} + u_{j,l}) + (\delta_{lj} + u_{l,j}) \delta u_{j,i}) S_{il} dV &= \\ \int_{V_0} \frac{1}{2} (\delta u_{i,l} + \delta u_{l,i} + \delta u_{i,j} u_{j,l} + (\delta u_{l,i} + u_{l,j} \delta u_{j,i})) S_{il} dV &= \\ \int_{V_0} \frac{1}{2} ((\delta u_{i,l} + \delta u_{l,i}) + (\delta u_{i,j} u_{j,l} + u_{l,j} \delta u_{j,i})) S_{il} dV &= \end{aligned} \quad (102.184)$$

where symmetry of S_{il} was used, definition for deformation gradient $F_{ki} = \delta_{ki} + u_{k,i}$. In addition, conveniently defined was differential operator $\hat{E}_{il}(\delta u_i, u_i)$ as

$$\hat{E}_{il}(\delta u_i, u_i) = \frac{1}{2} (\delta u_{l,i} + \delta u_{i,l}) + \frac{1}{2} (u_{l,j} \delta u_{j,i} + \delta u_{i,j} u_{j,l}) \quad (102.185)$$

102.13.3 Formulation of Non-Linear Finite Element Equations

Consider the motion of a general solid in a fixed, non-moving Cartesian coordinate system, as shown in Figure (102.16), and assume that the solid can experience large displacements, large strains, and nonlinear constitutive response. The aim is to evaluate the equilibrium positions of the complete solid at discrete time points $0, \Delta t, 2\Delta t, \dots$, where Δt is an increment in time. To develop the solution strategy, assume that the solutions for the static and kinematic variables for all time steps from 0 to time t inclusive, have been obtained. The solution process for the next required equilibrium position corresponding to time $t + \Delta t$ is typical and would be applied repetitively until a complete solution path has been found. Hence, in the analysis one follows all particles of the solid in their motion, from the original to the final configuration of the solid. In so doing, a Lagrangian (or material) formulation of the problem was adopted.

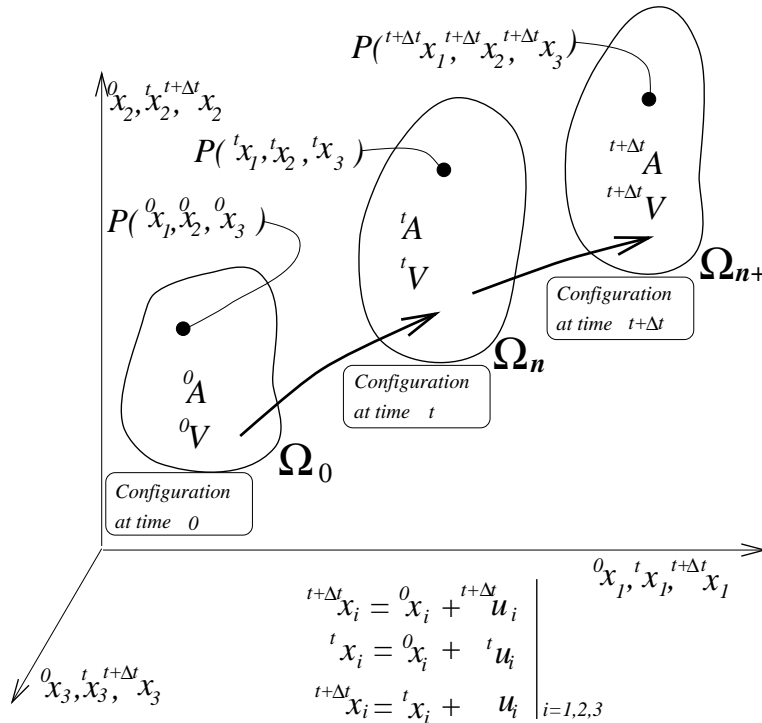


Figure 102.16: Motion of a solid in non-moving Cartesian coordinate system.

Weak format of the equilibrium equations can be obtained by premultiplying 102.182 with virtual

displacements δu_i and integrating by parts. We obtain the virtual work equations in the Lagrangian format:

$$\int_{V_0} \delta u_{i,j} P_{ij} dV = \int_{V_0} \rho_0 \delta u_i b_i dV - \int_{S_0} \delta u_i \bar{t}_i dV \quad (102.186)$$

Virtual work equations can also be written in terms of second Piola–Kirchhoff stress tensor S_{IJ} as:

$$\int_{V_0} \delta u_{i,j} F_{jl} S_{il} dV = \int_{V_0} \rho_0 \delta u_i b_i dV + \int_{S_0} \delta u_i \bar{t}_i dV \quad (102.187)$$

which after some algebraic manipulations, and after observing that $S_{IJ} = S_{JI}$ yields (SEE ABOVE!) By introducing a differential operator $\hat{E}(u_1, u_2)$ as:

$$\hat{E}_{il}(^1u_i, ^2u_i) = \frac{1}{2} \left(^1u_{i,l} + ^1u_{l,i} \right) + \frac{1}{2} \left(^1u_{l,j} ^2u_{j,i} + ^2u_{i,j} ^1u_{j,l} \right) \quad (102.188)$$

virtual work equation 102.185 can be written as:

$$\int_{V_0} \hat{E}_{il}(\delta u_i, u_i) S_{il} dV = \int_{V_0} \rho_0 \delta u_i b_i dV + \int_{S_0} \delta u_i \bar{t}_i dV \quad (102.189)$$

or as:

$$W(\delta u_i, u_i^{(k)})^{int} + W^{ext}(\delta u_i) = 0 \quad (102.190)$$

with:

$$\begin{aligned} W^{int}(\delta u_i, {}^{n+1}_0 u_i^{(k)}) &= \int_{\Omega_c} \hat{E}_{ij}(\delta u_i, {}^{n+1}_0 u_i^{(k)}) {}^{n+1}_0 S_{ij}^{(k)} dV \\ &= \int_{\Omega_c} \left((\delta u_{j,i} + \delta u_{i,j}) + (u_{j,r} \delta u_{r,i} + \delta u_{i,r} u_{r,j}) \right) S_{ij}^{(k)} dV \end{aligned} \quad (102.191)$$

$$W^{ext}(\delta u_i) = - \int_{\Omega_c} \rho_0 \delta u_i {}^{n+1}_0 b_i dV - \int_{\partial\Omega_c} \delta u_i {}^{n+1}_0 t_i dS \quad (102.192)$$

102.13.4 Computational Domain in Incremental Analysis

This chapter elaborates on the choice of Total Lagrangian (TL) formulations as a computational domain. In addition, a Newton-type procedure is chosen for satisfying equilibrium, i.e., virtual work for a given computational domain. Given the displacement field $u_i^{(k)}(X_j)$, in iteration k , the iterative change δu_i

$$u_i^{(k+1)} = u_i^{(k)} + \Delta u_i \quad (102.193)$$

is obtained from the linearized virtual work expression

$$W(\delta u_i, u_i^{(k+1)}) \simeq W(\delta u_i, u_i^{(k)}) + \Delta W(\delta u_i, \Delta u_i; u_i^{(k)}) \quad (102.194)$$

Here, $W(\delta u_i, u_i^{(k)})$ is the virtual work expression

$$W(\delta u_i, u_i^{(k)}) = W(\delta u_i, u_i^{(k)})^{int} + W^{ext}(\delta u_i) \quad (102.195)$$

with

$$W^{int}(\delta u_i, {}^{n+1}_0 u_i^{(k)}) = \int_{\Omega_c} \hat{E}_{ij}(\delta u_i, {}^{n+1}_0 u_i^{(k)}) {}^{n+1}_0 S_{ij}^{(k)} dV \quad (102.196)$$

$$W^{ext}(\delta u_i) = - \int_{\Omega_c} \rho_0 \delta u_i {}^{n+1}_0 b_i dV - \int_{\partial\Omega_c} \delta u_i {}^{n+1}_0 t_i dS \quad (102.197)$$

and the $\Delta W(\delta u_i, \Delta u_i; u_i^{(k)})$ is the linearization of virtual work

$$\begin{aligned} \Delta W(\delta u_i, \Delta u_i; u_i^{(k)}) &= \lim_{\epsilon \rightarrow 0} \frac{\partial W(\delta u_i, u_i + \epsilon \Delta u_i)}{\partial \epsilon} \\ &= \int_{\Omega_c} \hat{E}_{ij}(\delta u_i, u_i) dS_{ij} dV + \int_{\Omega_c} \Delta \hat{E}_{ij}(\delta u_i, u_i) S_{ij} dV \\ &= \int_{\Omega_c} \hat{E}_{ij}(\delta u_i, u_i) \mathcal{L}_{ijkl} \hat{E}_{kl}(\Delta u_i, u_i) dV + \int_{\Omega_c} \Delta \hat{E}_{ij}(\delta u_i, u_i) S_{ij} dV \end{aligned} \quad (102.198)$$

Here it was used that $dS_{ij} = 1/2 \mathcal{L}_{ijkl} dC_{kl} = \mathcal{L}_{ijkl} \hat{E}_{kl}(\Delta u_i, u_i)$.

In order to obtain expressions for stiffness matrix, work is done on equation 102.198 in some more details. To this end, equation 102.198 can be rewritten by expanding definitions for \hat{E} as

$$\begin{aligned} \Delta W(\delta u_i, \Delta u_i; u_i^{(k)}) &= \\ \frac{1}{4} \int_{\Omega_c} ((\delta u_{j,i} + \delta u_{i,j}) + (u_{j,r} \delta u_{r,i} + \delta u_{i,r} u_{r,j})) \mathcal{L}_{ijkl} ((\Delta u_{k,l} + \Delta u_{l,k}) + (u_{k,s} \Delta u_{s,l} + \Delta u_{l,s} u_{s,k})) dV + \\ &\quad + \int_{\Omega_c} \frac{1}{2} (\Delta u_{j,l} \delta u_{l,i} + \delta u_{i,l} \Delta u_{l,j}) S_{ij} dV \end{aligned} \quad (102.199)$$

Or, by conveniently splitting the above equation

$$\begin{aligned} \Delta^1 W(\delta u_i, \Delta u_i; u_i^{(k)}) &= \\ \frac{1}{4} \int_{\Omega_c} ((\delta u_{j,i} + \delta u_{i,j}) + (u_{j,r} \delta u_{r,i} + \delta u_{i,r} u_{r,j})) \mathcal{L}_{ijkl} ((\Delta u_{k,l} + \Delta u_{l,k}) + (u_{k,s} \Delta u_{s,l} + \Delta u_{l,s} u_{s,k})) dV \end{aligned} \quad (102.200)$$

$$\Delta^2 W(\delta u_i, \Delta u_i; u_i^{(k)}) = \int_{\Omega_c} \frac{1}{2} (\Delta u_{j,l} \delta u_{l,i} + \delta u_{i,l} \Delta u_{l,j}) S_{ij} dV \quad (102.201)$$

By further working on equation 102.200

$$\begin{aligned} \Delta^1 W(\delta u_i, \Delta u_i; u_i^{(k)}) &= \int_{\Omega_c} \left(\frac{1}{2} (\delta u_{j,i} + \delta u_{i,j}) \right) \mathcal{L}_{ijkl} \left(\frac{1}{2} (\Delta u_{k,l} + \Delta u_{l,k}) \right) dV \\ &\quad + \int_{\Omega_c} \left(\frac{1}{2} (\delta u_{j,i} + \delta u_{i,j}) \right) \mathcal{L}_{ijkl} \left(\frac{1}{2} (u_{k,s} \Delta u_{s,l} + \Delta u_{l,s} u_{s,k}) \right) dV \\ &\quad + \int_{\Omega_c} \frac{1}{2} (u_{j,r} \delta u_{r,i} + \delta u_{i,r} u_{r,j}) \mathcal{L}_{ijkl} \frac{1}{2} (u_{k,s} \Delta u_{s,l} + \Delta u_{l,s} u_{s,k}) dV \\ &\quad + \int_{\Omega_c} \frac{1}{2} (u_{j,r} \delta u_{r,i} + \delta u_{i,r} u_{r,j}) \mathcal{L}_{ijkl} \left(\frac{1}{2} (\Delta u_{k,l} + \Delta u_{l,k}) \right) dV \end{aligned} \quad (102.202)$$

It should be noted that the Algorithmic Tangent Stiffness (ATS) tensor \mathcal{L}_{ijkl} poses both minor symmetries ($\mathcal{L}_{ijkl} = \mathcal{L}_{jikl} = \mathcal{L}_{ijlk}$). However, Major symmetry cannot be guaranteed. Non-associated flow rules in elastoplasticity lead to the loss of major symmetry ($\mathcal{L}_{ijkl} \neq \mathcal{L}_{klij}$). Moreover, it can be shown (i.e., Jeremić and Sture (1997)) that there is algorithmic induced symmetry loss even for associated flow rules.

With the minor symmetry of \mathcal{L}_{ijkl} one can write (102.202) as:

$$\begin{aligned} \Delta^1 W(\delta u_i, \Delta u_i; u_i^{(k)}) = & \int_{\Omega_c} \delta u_{i,j} \mathcal{L}_{ijkl} \Delta u_{l,k} dV \\ & + \int_{\Omega_c} \delta u_{i,j} \mathcal{L}_{ijkl} u_{k,s} \Delta u_{l,s} dV \\ & + \int_{\Omega_c} \delta u_{i,r} u_{r,j} \mathcal{L}_{ijkl} u_{k,s} \Delta u_{l,s} dV \\ & + \int_{\Omega_c} \delta u_{i,r} u_{r,j} \mathcal{L}_{ijkl} \Delta u_{l,k} dV \end{aligned} \quad (102.203)$$

Similarly, by observing symmetry of second Piola–Kirchhoff stress tensor S_{ij}

$$\Delta^2 W(\delta u_i, \Delta u_i; u_i^{(k)}) = \int_{\Omega_c} \delta u_{i,l} \Delta u_{l,j} S_{ij} dV \quad (102.204)$$

Weak form of equilibrium expressions (i.e. (102.192) and (102.192)) for internal (W^{int}) and external (W^{ext}) virtual work, with the above mentioned symmetry of S_{ij} can be written as

$$W^{int}(\delta u_i, {}^{n+1}_0 u_i^{(k)}) = \int_{\Omega_c} \delta u_{i,j} S_{ij} dV + \int_{\Omega_c} \delta u_{i,r} u_{r,j} S_{ij} dV \quad (102.205)$$

$$W^{ext}(\delta u_i) = - \int_{\Omega_c} \rho_0 \delta u_i b_i dV - \int_{\partial\Omega_c} \delta u_i t_i dS \quad (102.206)$$

Standard finite element discretization of displacement field yields:

$$u_i \approx \hat{u}_i = H_I \bar{u}_{Ii} \quad (102.207)$$

where \hat{u}_i is the approximation to exact, analytic (if it exists) displacement field u_i , H_I are standard FEM shape functions and \bar{u}_{Ii} are nodal displacements. With this approximation

$$\begin{aligned} \Delta^1 W(\delta u_i, \Delta u_i; u_i^{(k)}) = & \int_{\Omega_c} (H_{I,j} \delta \bar{u}_{Ii}) \mathcal{L}_{ijkl} (H_{Q,k} \Delta \bar{u}_{Ql}) dV \\ & + \int_{\Omega_c} (H_{I,j} \delta \bar{u}_{Ii}) \mathcal{L}_{ijkl} (H_{J,k} \bar{u}_{Js}) (H_{Q,s} \Delta \bar{u}_{Ql}) dV \\ & + \int_{\Omega_c} (H_{I,r} \delta \bar{u}_{Ii}) (H_{J,j} \bar{u}_{Jr}) \mathcal{L}_{ijkl} (H_{J,k} \bar{u}_{Js}) (H_{Q,s} \Delta \bar{u}_{Ql}) dV \\ & + \int_{\Omega_c} (H_{I,r} \delta \bar{u}_{Ii}) (H_{J,j} \bar{u}_{Jr}) \mathcal{L}_{ijkl} (H_{Q,k} \Delta \bar{u}_{Ql}) dV \end{aligned} \quad (102.208)$$

$$\Delta^2 W(\delta u_i, \Delta u_i; u_i^{(k)}) = \int_{\Omega_c} (H_{I,l} \delta \bar{u}_{li}) (H_{Q,j} \Delta \bar{u}_{Ql}) S_{ij} dV \quad (102.209)$$

$$W^{int}(\delta u_i, {}^{n+1}_0 u_i^{(k)}) = \int_{\Omega_c} (H_{I,j} \delta \bar{u}_{li}) S_{ij} dV + \int_{\Omega_c} (H_{I,r} \delta \bar{u}_{li}) (H_{J,j} \bar{u}_{Jr}) S_{ij} dV \quad (102.210)$$

$$W^{ext}(\delta u_i) = - \int_{\Omega_c} \rho_0 (H_I \delta \bar{u}_{li}) b_i dV - \int_{\partial \Omega_c} (H_I \delta \bar{u}_{li}) t_i dS \quad (102.211)$$

Upon noting that virtual nodal displacements δu_{li} are any non-zero, continuous displacements, and since they occur in all expressions for linearized virtual work (from Equations (102.194), (102.195), (102.196), (102.197) and (102.198)) they can be factored out so that (while remembering that $\Delta W^1 + \Delta W^2 + W^{ext} + W^{int} = 0$):

$$\begin{aligned} & \int_{\Omega_c} (H_{I,j}) \mathcal{L}_{ijkl} (H_{Q,k} \Delta \bar{u}_{Ql}) dV \\ & + \int_{\Omega_c} (H_{I,j}) \mathcal{L}_{ijkl} (H_{J,k} \bar{u}_{Js}) (H_{Q,s} \Delta \bar{u}_{Ql}) dV \\ & + \int_{\Omega_c} (H_{I,r}) (H_{J,j} \bar{u}_{Jr}) \mathcal{L}_{ijkl} (H_{J,k} \bar{u}_{Js}) (H_{Q,s} \Delta \bar{u}_{Ql}) dV \\ & + \int_{\Omega_c} (H_{I,r}) (H_{J,j} \bar{u}_{Jr}) \mathcal{L}_{ijkl} (H_{Q,k} \Delta \bar{u}_{Ql}) dV \\ & + \int_{\Omega_c} (H_{I,l}) (H_{Q,j} \Delta \bar{u}_{Ql}) S_{ij} dV \\ & + \int_{\Omega_c} (H_{I,j}) S_{ij} dV + \int_{\Omega_c} (H_{I,r}) (H_{J,j} \bar{u}_{Jr}) S_{ij} dV \\ & = \int_{\Omega_c} \rho_0 (H_I) b_i dV + \int_{\partial \Omega_c} (H_I) t_i dS \end{aligned} \quad (102.212)$$

By rearranging previous equations, one can write:

$$\begin{aligned} & \left(\int_{\Omega_c} H_{I,j} \mathcal{L}_{ijkl} H_{Q,k} dV + \int_{\Omega_c} H_{I,j} \mathcal{L}_{ijkl} H_{J,k} \bar{u}_{Js} H_{Q,s} dV + \int_{\Omega_c} H_{I,r} H_{J,j} \bar{u}_{Jr} \mathcal{L}_{ijkl} H_{J,k} \bar{u}_{Js} H_{Q,s} dV \right. \\ & + \left. \int_{\Omega_c} H_{I,r} H_{J,j} \bar{u}_{Jr} \mathcal{L}_{ijkl} H_{Q,k} dV + \int_{\Omega_c} H_{I,l} H_{Q,j} S_{ij} dV \right) \Delta \bar{u}_{Ql} \\ & + \int_{\Omega_c} (H_{I,j}) S_{ij} dV + \int_{\Omega_c} (H_{I,r}) (H_{J,j} \bar{u}_{Jr}) S_{ij} dV \\ & = \int_{\Omega_c} \rho_0 (H_I) b_i dV + \int_{\partial \Omega_c} (H_I) t_i dS \end{aligned} \quad (102.213)$$

The vectors of external and internal forces are

$$\mathbf{f}_{int} = \frac{\partial(W^{int}(\delta u_i, {}^{n+1}_0 u_i^{(k)}))}{\partial(\delta u_i)} \quad (102.214)$$

$$\mathbf{f}_{ext} = \frac{\partial(W^{ext}(\delta u_i))}{\partial(\delta u_i)} \quad (102.215)$$

The Algorithmic Tangent Stiffness (ATS) tensor \mathcal{L}_{ijkl}^{ATS} is defined as a linearization of second Piola–Kirchhoff stress tensor S_{ij} with respect to the right deformation tensor C_{kl}

$$dS_{ij} = \frac{1}{2} \mathcal{L}_{ijkl} dC_{kl} \quad \text{with} \quad dC_{kl} = 2 \hat{E}_{kl}(du_i, u_i) \quad (102.216)$$

Then, the global algorithmic tangent stiffness matrix (tensor) is given as

$$\mathbf{K}_I = \frac{\partial(\Delta W(\delta u_i, \Delta u_i; u_i^{(k)}))}{\partial(\delta u_i)} \quad (102.217)$$

The iterative change in displacement vector Δu_i is obtained by setting a linearized virtual work to zero

$$W(\delta u_i, u_i^{(k+1)}) = 0 \Rightarrow W(\delta u_i, u_i^{(k)}) = -\Delta W(\delta u_i, \Delta u_i; u_i^{(k)}) \quad (102.218)$$

102.13.4.1 Total Lagrangian Format

The undeformed configuration Ω_0 is chosen as the computational domain ($\Omega_c = \Omega_0$). The iterative displacement Δu_i is obtained from the equation

$$W(\delta u_i, {}^{n+1}u_i^{(k)}) = -\Delta W(\delta u_i, \Delta u_i; {}^{n+1}u_i^{(k)}) \quad (102.219)$$

where

$$\begin{aligned} W(\delta u_i, {}^{n+1}u_i^{(k)}) &= \int_{\Omega_c} \hat{E}_{ij}(\delta u_i, {}^{n+1}u_i^{(k)}) {}^{n+1}S_{ij}^{(k)} dV \\ &\quad - \int_{\Omega_c} \rho_0 \delta u_i {}^{n+1}b_i dV - \int_{\partial\Omega_c} \delta u_i {}^{n+1}t_i dS \end{aligned} \quad (102.220)$$

and

$$\begin{aligned} \Delta W(\delta u_i, \Delta u_i; {}^{n+1}u_i^{(k)}) &= \int_{\Omega_c} \hat{E}_{ij}(\delta u_i, {}^{n+1}u_i^{(k)}) {}^{n+1}\mathcal{L}_{ijkl}^{(k)} \hat{E}_{kl}(\Delta u_i, {}^{n+1}u_i^{(k)}) dV \\ &\quad + \int_{\Omega_c} d\hat{E}_{ij}(\delta u_i, \Delta u_i) {}^{n+1}S_{ij}^{(k)} dV \end{aligned} \quad (102.221)$$

In the case of hyperelastic–plastic response, second Piola–Kirchhoff stress ${}^{n+1}S_{ij}^{(k)}$ is obtained by integrating the constitutive law, described in Chapter 106.4. It should be noted that by integrating in the intermediate configuration, obtained is Mandel stress ${}^{n+1}\bar{T}_{ij}$ and subsequently²⁴ the second Piola–Kirchhoff stress \bar{S}_{kj} . The ATS tensor $\bar{\mathcal{L}}_{ijkl}$ is then obtained based on \bar{S}_{kj} . In order to obtain second Piola–Kirchhoff stress S_{kj} and ATS tensor in initial configuration, a pull-back from the intermediate configuration to the initial configuration is performed

$${}^{n+1}S_{ij} = {}^{n+1}F_{ip}^p {}^{n+1}F_{jq}^p {}^{n+1}\bar{S}_{pq} \quad (102.222)$$

$${}^{n+1}\mathcal{L}_{ijkl} = \frac{{}^{n+1}F_{im}^p {}^{n+1}F_{jn}^p {}^{n+1}F_{kr}^p {}^{n+1}F_{ls}^p {}^{n+1}\bar{\mathcal{L}}_{mnrs}}{({}^{n+1}\bar{C}_{ik})^{-1} \bar{T}_{ij}} \quad (102.223)$$

²⁴ $\bar{S}_{kj} = (\bar{C}_{ik})^{-1} \bar{T}_{ij}$

102.13.5 Finite Element Formulations

Presented here is a slightly different approach to developing large deformation FEM in total Lagrangian form. Lower case indices are used for variables in current configuration, while the capital case indices are used for the reference configuration.

102.13.5.1 Strong Form

The static, strong form of momentum balance in the current configuration is

$$\frac{\partial \sigma_{ij}}{\partial x_j} + \rho b_i = 0 \quad (102.224)$$

where σ_{ij} is the Cauchy stress, ρ is the material density, b_i is the material body force.

Used here was the so-called Total Lagrangian formulation that is based on the reference configuration. The strong form of momentum balance can be expressed in the reference configuration

$$\frac{\partial P_{iJ}}{\partial X_J} + \rho_0 b_i = 0 \quad (102.225)$$

where P_{iJ} is the first Piola-Kirchhoff stress, ρ_0 is the material Lagrangian density and $\rho_0 = J\rho$.

102.13.5.2 Weak Form

The corresponding weak form of Equation 102.225 can be expressed as

$$\int_{\Omega_0} \delta u_i \left(\frac{\partial P_{iJ}}{\partial X_J} + \rho_0 b_i \right) dV = 0 \quad (102.226)$$

where δu_i is some arbitrary virtual displacement, Ω_0 is the concerned domain of the reference configuration. Using the partial integration rule, the above equation can be alternatively expressed as

$$\int_{\Omega_0} \frac{\partial}{\partial X_J} (P_{iJ} \delta u_i) dV - \int_{\Omega_0} P_{iJ} \frac{\partial \delta u_i}{\partial X_J} dV + \int_{\Omega_0} \rho_0 b_i \delta u_i dV = 0 \quad (102.227)$$

The first term of Equation 102.227 can be rewritten in terms of the surface traction

$$\int_{\Omega_0} \frac{\partial}{\partial X_J} (P_{iJ} \delta u_i) dV = \int_{\partial\Omega_0} \delta u_i P_{iJ} H_J dA = \int_{\partial\Omega_0} t_i \delta u_i dA \quad (102.228)$$

with the traction $t_i = P_{iJ} H_J$, where H_J the unit surface normal vector in the reference configuration, and $\partial\Omega_0$ is the boundary of the reference domain Ω_0 .

The second term of Equation 102.227 can be rewritten as

$$\int_{\Omega_0} P_{iJ} \frac{\partial \delta u_i}{\partial X_J} dV = \int_{\Omega_0} P_{iJ} \delta F_{iJ} dV = \int_{\Omega_0} S_{IJ} \delta E_{IJ} dV \quad (102.229)$$

where S_{IJ} is the second Piolo-Kirchhoff stress and E_{IJ} is the Lagrangian-Green strain. $\delta F_{iJ} = \partial \delta u_i / \partial X_J$ is used.

The overall weak form in the reference configuration is now

$$\int_{\Omega_0} S_{IJ} \delta E_{IJ} dV = \int_{\partial\Omega_0} t_i \delta u_i dA + \int_{\Omega_0} \rho_0 b_i \delta u_i dV \quad (102.230)$$

102.13.5.3 Linearized Form

To utilize the iterative algorithm for incremental strategy, needed is the linearized form the governing equation 102.230.

The first term linearization of Equation 102.230 is

$$\begin{aligned} \Delta \int_{\Omega_0} S_{IJ} \delta E_{IJ} &= \int_{\Omega_0} [\Delta S_{IJ} \delta E_{IJ} + S_{IJ} \delta(\Delta E_{IJ})] dV \\ &= \int_{\Omega_0} [\mathcal{L}_{IJKL} \Delta E_{KL} \delta E_{IJ} + S_{IJ} \delta(\Delta E_{IJ})] dV \end{aligned} \quad (102.231)$$

where \mathcal{L}_{IJKL} is the Lagrangian stiffness linked the second Piolo-Kirchhoff stress S_{IJ} and the Lagrangian-Green strain E_{KL} by the relation

$$S_{IJ} = \mathcal{L}_{IJKL} E_{KL} \quad (102.232)$$

The linearization of E_{KL} is

$$\Delta E_{KL} = \text{Sym} \left(F_K \frac{\partial \Delta u_b}{\partial X_L} \right) \quad (102.233)$$

where Sym is the operator of tensor symmetry, defined as $\text{Sym}(A_{ij}) := (1/2)(A_{ij} + A_{ji})$. Similarly,

$$\delta E_{IJ} = \text{Sym} \left(F_{aI} \frac{\partial \delta u_a}{\partial X_J} \right) \quad (102.234)$$

and

$$\delta(\Delta E_{IJ}) = \text{Sym} \left(\frac{\partial \delta u_c}{\partial X_I} \frac{\partial \Delta u_c}{\partial X_J} \right) \quad (102.235)$$

Note that S_{IJ} is a symmetric tensor, and \mathcal{L}_{IJKL} is a tensor with major and minor symmetries, Equation 102.231 can be expressed as

$$\begin{aligned} \Delta \int_{\Omega_0} S_{IJ} \delta E_{IJ} &= \int_{\Omega_0} \left[\mathcal{L}_{IJKL} \left(F_{bK} \frac{\partial \Delta u_b}{\partial X_L} \right) \left(F_{aI} \frac{\partial \delta u_a}{\partial X_J} \right) + S_{IJ} \left(\frac{\partial \delta u_c}{\partial X_I} \frac{\partial \Delta u_c}{\partial X_J} \right) \right] dV \\ &= \int_{\Omega_0} \left[\frac{\partial \delta u_a}{\partial X_J} (F_{aI} F_{bK} \mathcal{L}_{IJKL} + \delta_{ab} S_{JL}) \frac{\partial \Delta u_b}{\partial X_L} \right] dV \end{aligned} \quad (102.236)$$

The overall linearization form is thus

$$\int_{\Omega_0} \left[\frac{\partial \delta u_a}{\partial X_J} (F_{aI} F_{bK} \mathcal{L}_{IJKL} + \delta_{ab} S_{JL}) \frac{\partial \Delta u_b}{\partial X_L} \right] dV = \int_{\partial\Omega_0} \Delta t_i \delta u_i dA + \int_{\Omega_0} \rho_0 \Delta b_i \delta u_i dV \quad (102.237)$$

102.13.5.4 Finite Element Form

In finite element form, the displacements u_i are interpolated from the element nodal displacements \bar{u}_{Ai} :

$$u_i = H_A \bar{u}_{Ai} \quad (102.238)$$

where H_A is the element shape function of the node A , \bar{u}_{Ai} is the node A displacements, and

$$\frac{\partial \delta u_a}{\partial X_J} = \frac{\partial H_A}{\partial X_J} \delta \bar{u}_{Aa}, \quad \frac{\partial \Delta u_b}{\partial X_L} = \frac{\partial H_B}{\partial X_L} \Delta \bar{u}_{Bb} \quad (102.239)$$

Equation 102.237 can be expressed as

$$(K_{AaBb} \Delta \bar{u}_{Bb} - \Delta f_{Aa}^{ex}) \delta \bar{u}_{Aa} = 0 \quad (102.240)$$

where

$$K_{AaBb} = \int_{\Omega_0} \frac{\partial H_A}{\partial X_J} (F_{aI} F_{bK} \mathcal{L}_{IJKL} + \delta_{ab} S_{JL}) \frac{\partial H_B}{\partial X_L} dV \quad (102.241)$$

$$\Delta f_{Aa}^{ex} = \int_{\partial \Omega_0} H_A \Delta t_i dA + \int_{\Omega_0} \rho_0 H_A \Delta b_i dV \quad (102.242)$$

Due to the arbitrariness of the virtual nodal displacements, the expression in the parentheses should be zero in Equation 102.240, which gives the incremental finite element form:

$$K_{AaBb} \Delta \bar{u}_{Bb} = \Delta f_{Aa}^{ex} \quad (102.243)$$

102.14 Cosserat Continuum Finite Element Formulation

102.14.1 Introduction

The classical theory of elasticity describes well the behavior of metals, like steel and aluminum. But when the micro-structure of the material becomes significant, like soil and sand, the classical elasticity lacks the ability to represent the granular media properties. In 1909, Cosserat [Cosserat \(1909\)](#) brothers published their prominent work on the Cosserat continua to remove the shortcomings of the classical elasticity. Compared to the classical continua, Cosserat continua has the additional couple stress to reflect the free rotations on the particles.

102.14.1.1 3D Finite Element Formulation for Cosserat Continua

Pothier [Pothier and Rencis \(1994\)](#) proposed the three-dimensional finite element formulation for micro-polar elasticity with both classical strain and the micro-polar strain components. Riahi [Dehkordi \(2008\)](#) developed the finite element Cosserat formulation with the application in layered structures. This article

contributes the three-dimensional finite element formulation with the micro-polar strain, which simplifies further development in the elastoplasticity algorithm. In addition, the formulation for the isoparametric brick element is provided.

102.14.1.2 Cosserat Elastoplastic Algorithm

Vardoulakis et al. [Vardoulakis \(1989\)](#); [Papamichos et al. \(1990\)](#) developed the 2D Cosserat plasticity to predict the thickness of shear bands in granular materials. De Borst [de Borst \(1993, 1991\)](#) applied the 2D Cosserat elastoplasticity to analyze the strain localization. Li [Li and Bing Chen \(2005\)](#) applied the 2D pressure-dependent Cosserat elastoplasticity to simulate the strain localization. Grammenoudis [Grammenoudis and Tsakmakis \(2005\)](#) implemented the micro-polar plasticity in the finite deformation framework. This article developed the implicit algorithms for 3D Cosserat plasticity. Rotational kinematic hardening is introduced to the Cosserat elastoplasticity.

102.14.2 Cosserat Elasticity

The Cosserat (micro-polar) elasticity has 6 parameters [Pothier and Rencis \(1994\)](#) , including λ , μ , χ , π_1 , π_2 , π_3 .

The units of λ , μ , and χ are *Newton/(meter²)*. The units of π_1 , π_2 , and π_3 are *Newton*.

102.14.2.1 Stress

The stress is the same to the classical elastic stress [Riahi and Curran \(2009\)](#); [Dehkordi \(2008\)](#),

$$\sigma = \begin{pmatrix} \sigma_{11} & \sigma_{12} & \sigma_{13} \\ \sigma_{21} & \sigma_{22} & \sigma_{23} \\ \sigma_{31} & \sigma_{32} & \sigma_{33} \end{pmatrix} \quad (102.244)$$

where the unit of σ is force per unit area (*Newton/meter²*).

102.14.2.2 Couple Stress

The couple-stress is the couple stress of the classical elastic stress.

$$\mathbf{t} = \begin{pmatrix} t_{11} & t_{12} & t_{13} \\ t_{21} & t_{22} & t_{23} \\ t_{31} & t_{32} & t_{33} \end{pmatrix} \quad (102.245)$$

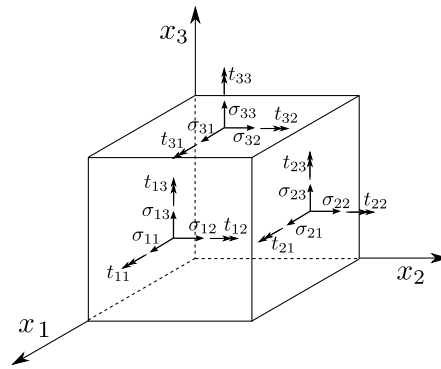


Figure 102.17: Illustration of Stress and Couple Stress

where the unit of t is torque per unit area (*Newton/meter*).

In the classical elasticity, the stress is symmetric: $\sigma_{12} = \sigma_{21}$. This is no longer true in the Cosserat materials. Namely, $\sigma_{12} \neq \sigma_{21}$ due to the couple stress.

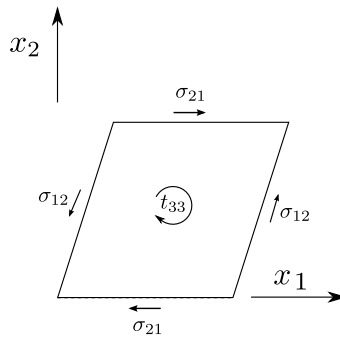


Figure 102.18: Illustration of Asymmetric Stress due to Couple Stress

102.14.2.3 Generalized Stress

In the calculation, for the purpose of simplification, the generalized stress are defined by :

$$\sigma = [\sigma : t] \quad (102.246)$$

$$\sigma = [\sigma_{11} \ \sigma_{12} \ \sigma_{13} \ \sigma_{21} \ \sigma_{22} \ \sigma_{23} \ \sigma_{31} \ \sigma_{32} \ \sigma_{33} : t_{11} \ t_{12} \ t_{13} \ t_{21} \ t_{22} \ t_{23} \ t_{31} \ t_{32} \ t_{33}]$$

Namely, the generalized stress σ (18×1) is a horizontal combination of σ and t .

102.14.2.4 Cosserat Strain

$$\epsilon = u_{j,i} - e_{ijk}\phi_k = \begin{pmatrix} u_{1,1} & u_{2,1} - \phi_3 & u_{3,1} + \phi_2 \\ u_{1,2} + \phi_3 & u_{2,2} & u_{3,2} - \phi_1 \\ u_{1,3} - \phi_2 & u_{2,3} + \phi_1 & u_{3,3} \end{pmatrix} \quad (102.247)$$

where e_{ijk} is the permutation symbol.

where u and ϕ are the displacement and micro-rotation respectively.

Note that generally $\epsilon_{12} \neq \epsilon_{21}$ even when $\phi = 0$.

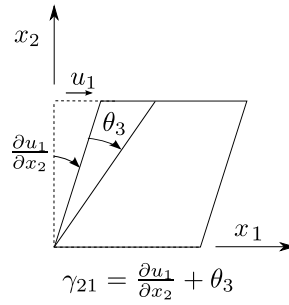


Figure 102.19: Illustration of Asymmetric Strain due to Rotations

102.14.2.5 Curvature

$$\omega = \phi_{i,j} = \begin{pmatrix} \phi_{1,1} & \phi_{1,2} & \phi_{1,3} \\ \phi_{2,1} & \phi_{2,2} & \phi_{2,3} \\ \phi_{3,1} & \phi_{3,2} & \phi_{3,3} \end{pmatrix} \quad (102.248)$$

where ϕ is called the micro-rotation and ω is called the Cosserat rotation gradient (curvature).

102.14.2.6 Generalized Strain

In the calculation, for the purpose of simplification, the Generalized Strain are defined by :

$$\xi = [\epsilon : \omega] \quad (102.249)$$

$$\xi = [\epsilon_{11} \ \epsilon_{12} \ \epsilon_{13} \ \epsilon_{21} \ \epsilon_{22} \ \epsilon_{23} \ \epsilon_{31} \ \epsilon_{32} \ \epsilon_{33} : \omega_{11} \ \omega_{12} \ \omega_{13} \ \omega_{21} \ \omega_{22} \ \omega_{23} \ \omega_{31} \ \omega_{32} \ \omega_{33}]$$

The generalized strain ξ (18×1) is a horizontal combination of ϵ and κ .

102.14.2.7 Constitutive Equations

Force Tangent: The relationship between the stress and strain [Pothier and Rencis \(1994\)](#) is

$$\sigma_{ij} = \lambda \epsilon_{kk} \delta_{ij} + \mu \epsilon_{ij} + (\mu + \chi) \epsilon_{ji} \quad (102.250)$$

Therefore, the tangent between stress and strain is

$$E_{ijkl} = \lambda \delta_{ij} \delta_{kl} + \mu \delta_{ik} \delta_{jl} + (\mu + \chi) \delta_{jk} \delta_{il} \quad (102.251)$$

Curvature Tangent: The relationship between the couple-stress and curvature is

$$t_{ij} = \pi_1 \omega_{kk} \delta_{ij} + \pi_2 \omega_{ij} + \pi_3 \omega_{ji} \quad (102.252)$$

Therefore, the tangent between couple-stress and curvature is

$$C_{ijkl} = \pi_1 \delta_{ij} \delta_{kl} + \pi_2 \delta_{ik} \delta_{jl} + \pi_3 \delta_{jk} \delta_{il} \quad (102.253)$$

102.14.2.8 Relation to the classical elasticity tangent

When $\chi = \pi_1 = \pi_2 = \pi_3 = 0$, the curvature tangent is zero, and the force tangent is the same to the classical elasticity tangent.

Full tangent matrix for one Cosserat point:

$$\mathcal{D}_{18 \times 18}^{full} = \begin{pmatrix} D_{9 \times 9}^{force} & [0]_{9 \times 9} \\ [0]_{9 \times 9} & D_{9 \times 9}^{curvature} \end{pmatrix}_{18 \times 18} \quad (102.254)$$

102.14.2.9 Flatten the tensor of force tangent and curvature tangent

Corresponding to the defined generalized stress and generalized strain, flatten the $3 \times 3 \times 3 \times 3$ tensor C_{ijkl} to 9×9 matrix D .

$$D_{9 \times 9} = \begin{pmatrix} C_{1111} & C_{1112} & C_{1113} & C_{1121} & C_{1122} & C_{1123} & C_{1131} & C_{1132} & C_{1133} \\ C_{1211} & C_{1212} & C_{1213} & C_{1221} & C_{1222} & C_{1223} & C_{1231} & C_{1232} & C_{1233} \\ C_{1311} & C_{1312} & C_{1313} & C_{1321} & C_{1322} & C_{1323} & C_{1331} & C_{1332} & C_{1333} \\ C_{2111} & C_{2112} & C_{2113} & C_{2121} & C_{2122} & C_{2123} & C_{2131} & C_{2132} & C_{2133} \\ C_{2211} & C_{2212} & C_{2213} & C_{2221} & C_{2222} & C_{2223} & C_{2231} & C_{2232} & C_{2233} \\ C_{2311} & C_{2312} & C_{2313} & C_{2321} & C_{2322} & C_{2323} & C_{2331} & C_{2332} & C_{2333} \\ C_{3111} & C_{3112} & C_{3113} & C_{3121} & C_{3122} & C_{3123} & C_{3131} & C_{3132} & C_{3133} \\ C_{3211} & C_{3212} & C_{3213} & C_{3221} & C_{3222} & C_{3223} & C_{3231} & C_{3232} & C_{3233} \\ C_{3311} & C_{3312} & C_{3313} & C_{3321} & C_{3322} & C_{3323} & C_{3331} & C_{3332} & C_{3333} \end{pmatrix}_{9 \times 9} \quad (102.255)$$

102.14.3 3D Finite Element Formulation

102.14.3.1 Force Equilibrium

$\sigma_{ji,j} + b_i = \rho \ddot{u}_i$ in dynamic problems.

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial \sigma_{xx}}{\partial x} + \frac{\partial \sigma_{yx}}{\partial y} + \frac{\partial \sigma_{zx}}{\partial z} + b_x &= \rho \ddot{u}_x \\ \frac{\partial \sigma_{xy}}{\partial x} + \frac{\partial \sigma_{yy}}{\partial y} + \frac{\partial \sigma_{zy}}{\partial z} + b_y &= \rho \ddot{u}_y \\ \frac{\partial \sigma_{xz}}{\partial x} + \frac{\partial \sigma_{yz}}{\partial y} + \frac{\partial \sigma_{zz}}{\partial z} + b_z &= \rho \ddot{u}_z \end{aligned} \quad (102.256)$$

where b_i is the body force, and \ddot{u}_i is the acceleration of the point.

102.14.4 Momentum Equilibrium

$t_{ji,j} + e_{ijk}\sigma_{jk} + M_i = J\ddot{\theta}_i$ in dynamic problems.

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial t_{xx}}{\partial x} + \frac{\partial t_{yx}}{\partial y} + \frac{\partial t_{zx}}{\partial z} + \sigma_{xy} - \sigma_{yx} + M_x &= J_x \theta_x \\ \frac{\partial t_{xy}}{\partial x} + \frac{\partial t_{yy}}{\partial y} + \frac{\partial t_{zy}}{\partial z} + \sigma_{zx} - \sigma_{xz} + M_y &= J_y \theta_y \\ \frac{\partial t_{xz}}{\partial x} + \frac{\partial t_{yz}}{\partial y} + \frac{\partial t_{zz}}{\partial z} + \sigma_{yz} - \sigma_{zy} + M_z &= J_z \theta_z \end{aligned} \quad (102.257)$$

where M_i is the body rotation force per unit area (*Newton/meter²*).

102.14.4.1 Illustration in 2D

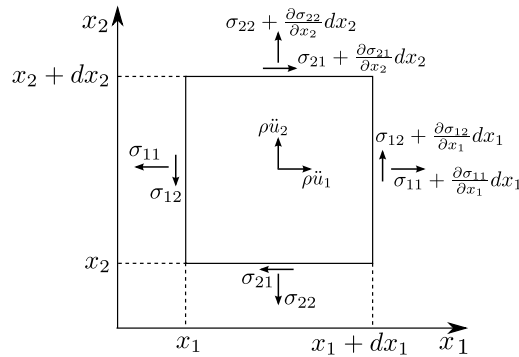


Figure 102.20: Illustration of Force Equilibrium in Cosserat Continua

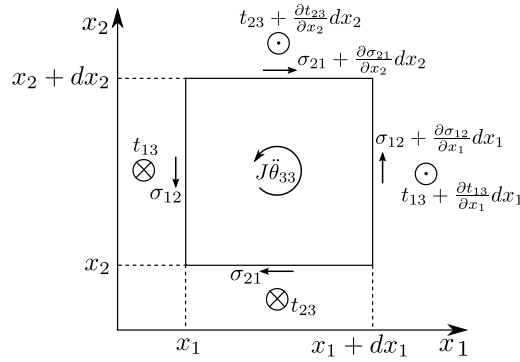


Figure 102.21: Illustration of Moment Equilibrium in Cosserat Continua

102.14.4.2 Strain-Displacement Relationship

Define the DOFs and the generalized strain. For the 8-node brick element. Each node has 6 DOFs.

The vector of nodal DOFs is defined by :

$$\mathcal{U} = [\mathbf{u} \ \phi]^T = [u_x \ u_y \ u_z \ \phi_x \ \phi_y \ \phi_z]^T_{1 \times 6} \quad (102.258)$$

The vector of generalized strain ξ (18×1) is a horizontal combination of ϵ and κ .

$$\xi = [\epsilon_{11} \ \epsilon_{12} \ \epsilon_{13} \ \epsilon_{21} \ \epsilon_{22} \ \epsilon_{23} \ \epsilon_{31} \ \epsilon_{32} \ \epsilon_{33} : \omega_{11} \ \omega_{12} \ \omega_{13} \ \omega_{21} \ \omega_{22} \ \omega_{23} \ \omega_{31} \ \omega_{32} \ \omega_{33}] \quad (102.259)$$

Strain-displacement for one node. Therefore,

$$\xi_{18 \times 1} = \mathcal{B}_{18 \times 6} \mathcal{U}_{6 \times 1} \quad (102.260)$$

So the dimension of matrix \mathcal{B} (strain-displacement matrix) for 1 node is 18×6 .

According to the definition of force strain (Eq 102.247) and curvature (Eq 102.248), express the matrix \mathcal{B} for 1 node [Riahi and Curran \(2009\)](#); [Padovan \(1978\)](#) by

$$\mathcal{B}_N = \begin{pmatrix} \mathcal{B}_{Na} & \mathcal{B}_{Nb} \\ [0]_{9 \times 3} & \mathcal{B}_{Nc} \end{pmatrix}_{18 \times 6} \quad (102.261)$$

where

$$\mathcal{B}_{Na} = \begin{pmatrix} H_{N,x} & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & H_{N,x} & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & H_{N,x} \\ H_{N,y} & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & H_{N,y} & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & H_{N,y} \\ H_{N,z} & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & H_{N,z} & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & H_{N,z} \end{pmatrix}_{9 \times 3}, \quad \mathcal{B}_{Nb} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -H_N \\ 0 & +H_N & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & +H_N \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \\ -H_N & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -H_N & 0 \\ +H_N & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}_{9 \times 3}, \quad (102.262)$$

$$\mathcal{B}_{Nc} = \begin{pmatrix} -H_{N,x} & 0 & 0 \\ -H_{N,y} & 0 & 0 \\ -H_{N,z} & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -H_{N,x} & 0 \\ 0 & -H_{N,y} & 0 \\ 0 & -H_{N,z} & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -H_{N,x} \\ 0 & 0 & -H_{N,y} \\ 0 & 0 & -H_{N,z} \end{pmatrix}_{9 \times 3} \quad (102.263)$$

where H is the shape function. N is the node number, which can be 1, 2, ..., 8.

Strain-displacement for 8 node brick. So the dimension of matrix \mathcal{B} (strain-displacement matrix) for 8 node brick is 18×48 .

$$\mathcal{B} = [\mathcal{B}_1 \mathcal{B}_2 \mathcal{B}_3 \mathcal{B}_4 \mathcal{B}_5 \mathcal{B}_6 \mathcal{B}_7 \mathcal{B}_8]_{18 \times 48} \quad (102.264)$$

Express the 8 node displacement by

$$\mathcal{U} = [\mathcal{U}_1 \mathcal{U}_2 \mathcal{U}_3 \mathcal{U}_4 \mathcal{U}_5 \mathcal{U}_6 \mathcal{U}_7 \mathcal{U}_8]_{48 \times 1}^T \quad (102.265)$$

Note that matrix \mathcal{B} is a field function obtained by the interpolation of the displacements at 8 nodes.

For a specified Gauss point, the Gauss coordinates should be substituted to calculate the corresponding generalized strain.

So the generalized strain at a specific Gauss coordinates is

$$\mathcal{E}|_{x_i, y_i, z_i} = \mathcal{B}|_{x_i, y_i, z_i} \mathcal{U} \quad (102.266)$$

102.14.4.3 Isoparametric 8 Node Brick

For the purpose of completeness, the shape function [Bathe \(1996\)](#) for the isoparametric 8 node brick is given by

$$H_i = \frac{1}{8}(1 + \xi_i\xi)(1 + \eta_i\eta)(1 + \zeta_i\zeta) \quad (102.267)$$

where the values of ξ_i , η_i , ζ_i for eight nodes are listed.

Node	ξ_i	η_i	ζ_i
1	+1	+1	+1
2	-1	+1	+1
3	-1	-1	+1
4	+1	-1	+1
5	+1	-1	+1
6	-1	+1	-1
7	-1	-1	-1
8	+1	-1	-1

In addition, the shape function is used for both the displacement interpolation in Eq (102.268) and coordinate transformation formula in Eq (102.269) from the global coordinate to the natural coordinate system.

$$\begin{aligned} u_x &= \sum_{i=1}^8 H_i(\xi, \eta, \zeta) u_x^i & u_y &= \sum_{i=1}^8 H_i(\xi, \eta, \zeta) u_y^i & u_z &= \sum_{i=1}^8 H_i(\xi, \eta, \zeta) u_z^i \\ \phi_x &= \sum_{i=1}^8 H_i(\xi, \eta, \zeta) \phi_x^i & \phi_y &= \sum_{i=1}^8 H_i(\xi, \eta, \zeta) \phi_y^i & \phi_z &= \sum_{i=1}^8 H_i(\xi, \eta, \zeta) \phi_z^i \end{aligned} \quad (102.268)$$

The coordinate transformation formula from the global coordinate to the natural coordinate system is

$$x = \sum_{i=1}^8 H_i(\xi, \eta, \zeta) x_i \quad y = \sum_{i=1}^8 H_i(\xi, \eta, \zeta) y_i \quad z = \sum_{i=1}^8 H_i(\xi, \eta, \zeta) z_i \quad (102.269)$$

where the x_i , y_i , z_i are the nodal coordinates. Therefore, with the help of Eq (102.269), the global coordinate (x, y, z) become a function of (ξ, η, ζ) , which is the natural coordinate in the isoparametric element.

To construct the strain-displacement matrix, the derivative with respect to the global coordinate (x, y, z) is required. Jacobian transformation is used to calculate the derivatives in Eq (102.262, 102.263).

$$\begin{pmatrix} \frac{\partial H_i}{\partial x} \\ \frac{\partial H_i}{\partial y} \\ \frac{\partial H_i}{\partial z} \end{pmatrix} = \mathbf{J}^{-1} \begin{pmatrix} \frac{\partial H_i}{\partial \xi} \\ \frac{\partial H_i}{\partial \eta} \\ \frac{\partial H_i}{\partial \zeta} \end{pmatrix} \quad (102.270)$$

where

$$\mathbf{J} = \begin{pmatrix} \frac{\partial x}{\partial \xi} & \frac{\partial y}{\partial \xi} & \frac{\partial z}{\partial \xi} \\ \frac{\partial x}{\partial \eta} & \frac{\partial y}{\partial \eta} & \frac{\partial z}{\partial \eta} \\ \frac{\partial x}{\partial \zeta} & \frac{\partial y}{\partial \zeta} & \frac{\partial z}{\partial \zeta} \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} \sum_{i=1}^8 \frac{\partial H_i}{\partial \xi} x_i & \sum_{i=1}^8 \frac{\partial H_i}{\partial \xi} y_i & \sum_{i=1}^8 \frac{\partial H_i}{\partial \xi} z_i \\ \sum_{i=1}^8 \frac{\partial H_i}{\partial \eta} x_i & \sum_{i=1}^8 \frac{\partial H_i}{\partial \eta} y_i & \sum_{i=1}^8 \frac{\partial H_i}{\partial \eta} z_i \\ \sum_{i=1}^8 \frac{\partial H_i}{\partial \zeta} x_i & \sum_{i=1}^8 \frac{\partial H_i}{\partial \zeta} y_i & \sum_{i=1}^8 \frac{\partial H_i}{\partial \zeta} z_i \end{pmatrix} \quad (102.271)$$

Note that \mathcal{B}_{Nb} in Eq (102.262) has the original shape functions. Jacobian transformation is not required on \mathcal{B}_{Nb} because the interpolated rotation is used directly to construct the strain in Eq (102.247)

Chapter 103

Micromechanical Origins of Elasto-Plasticity

(1994-2002-2010-2019-2021-)

103.1 Chapter Summary and Highlights

This chapter is based in large part on lecture notes by Prof. Stein Sture ([Sture, 1993](#)).

103.2 Friction

103.2.1 Early Works

- Leonardo da Vinci, (1452-1519), worked and wrote about friction in 1493... (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Leonardo_da_Vinci)
- Guillaume Amontons (1663-1705), Law of friction, rediscovered in 1699 (since da Vinci's notes were lost), (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Guillaume_Amontons)
- Charles-Augustine de Coulomb (1736-1806), verified laws of friction in 1791 (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Charles-Augustin_de_Coulomb)

Surface with asperities

grain assemblies, loose and dense

Saw-Teeth model analog

Frictional response of solids, friction angle for the polished mineral and dilatancy angle

Particle shapes

Particle rotations

types of packaging of particles

103.3 Particle Contact Mechanics

103.3.1 Particle Contact Mechanics, Axial Behavior

- Hertz contact theory, elastic (1885)
- Cattaneo and Mindlin theories, 1938 elastic and plastic contact

Two equal particles in normal contact

equations for a , Δ , σ_N , σ_N^{max}

Two unequal particles in normal contact

average normal stress and average normal strain

tangent stiffness, function of $\sqrt[3]{\sigma_{avg}}$

Bulk modulus for loose and dense packaging

Mindlin and Deresiewicz (1953)

Hashin (1983)

Rowe (1962)

Cosserat (1909)

103.3.2 Particle Contact Mechanics, Shear Behavior

Shear Behavior

closed form solution for no-slip behavior

equilibrium, integral of τ

slip ring

SLIP ring

There is NO elastic behavior of particles in contact if there is ANY small amount of shear!

Example values for typical contact stress parameters

typical stiffness parameters for sands

103.4 Dilatancy

Chapter 104

Small Deformation Elasto-Plasticity

(1991-1994-2002-2006-2010-2016-2017-2018-2019-2020-2021-)

(In collaboration with Prof. Zhaohui Yang, Dr. Zhao Cheng, Dr. Nima Tafazzoli, Dr. Federico Pisanò, and Prof. Han Yang)

104.1 Chapter Summary and Highlights

104.2 Elasto–plasticity

104.2.1 Constitutive Relations for Infinitesimal Plasticity

A wide range of elasto–plastic materials can be characterized by means of a set of incremental constitutive relations of the general form:

$$d\epsilon_{ij} = d\epsilon_{ij}^e + d\epsilon_{ij}^p \quad (104.1)$$

$$d\sigma_{ij} = E_{ijkl}d\epsilon_{kl}^e \quad (104.2)$$

$$d\epsilon_{ij}^p = d\lambda \frac{\partial Q}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} = d\lambda m_{ij}(\sigma_{ij}, q_*) \quad (104.3)$$

$$dq_* = d\lambda h_*(\tau_{ij}, q_*) \quad (104.4)$$

where, following standard notation ϵ_{ij} , ϵ_{ij}^e and ϵ_{ij}^p denotes the total, elastic and plastic strain tensor, (and $d\epsilon_{ij}$ is an increment of a strain tensor ϵ_{ij}), σ_{ij} is the Cauchy stress tensor, and q_* signifies some suitable set of internal variables¹. The asterisk in the place of indices in q_* replaces n indices². Equation (104.1) expresses the commonly assumed additive decomposition of the infinitesimal strain tensor into elastic and plastic parts. Equation (104.2) represents the generalized Hooke's law³ which linearly relates stresses and elastic strains through a stiffness modulus tensor E_{ijkl} . Equation (104.3) expresses a generally associated or non-associated flow rule for the plastic strain and (104.4) describes a suitable set of hardening laws, which govern the evolution of the plastic variables. In these equations, m_{ij} is the plastic flow direction, h_* the plastic moduli and $d\lambda$ is a plastic parameter to be determined with the aid of the loading—unloading criterion, which can be expressed in terms of the Karush–Kuhn–Tucker condition (Karush, 1939; Kuhn and Tucker, 1951) as:

$$F(\sigma_{ij}, q_*) \leq 0 \quad (104.5)$$

¹In the simplest models of plasticity the internal variables are taken as either plastic strain components ϵ_{ij}^p or the hardening variables κ defined, for example as a function of inelastic (plastic) work, i.e. $\kappa = f(W^p)$. See Lubliner (1990) page 115.

²for example ij if the variable is ϵ_{ij}^p , or nothing if the variable is a scalar value, i.e. κ .

³also Eq. 104.157

$$d\lambda \geq 0 \quad (104.6)$$

$$F d\lambda = 0 \quad (104.7)$$

In the previous equations $F(\sigma_{ij}, q_*)$ denotes the yield function of the material and (104.5) characterizes the corresponding elastic domain, which is presumably convex. Along any process of loading, conditions (104.5), (104.6) and (104.7) must hold simultaneously. For $F < 0$, equation (104.7) yields $d\lambda = 0$, i.e. elastic behavior, while plastic flow is characterized by $d\lambda > 0$, which with (104.7) is possible only if the yield criterion is satisfied, i.e. $F = 0$. From the latter constraint, in the process of plastic loading the plastic consistency conditions⁴ is obtained in the form:

$$dF = \frac{\partial F}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} d\sigma_{ij} + \frac{\partial F}{\partial q_*} dq_* = n_{ij} d\sigma_{ij} + \xi_* dq_* = 0 \quad (104.8)$$

where :

$$n_{ij} = \frac{\partial F}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} \quad (104.9)$$

$$\xi_* = \frac{\partial F}{\partial q_*} \quad (104.10)$$

Equation (104.8) has the effect of confining the stress trajectory to the yield surface⁵. It is worthwhile noting that n_{ij} and ξ_* are normals to the yield surface in stress space and the plastic variable space respectively.

An interesting alternative way of representing non-associated flow rules can be found in Runesson (1987). A fictitious plastic strain derived from associated flow rule, e_{ij}^p is introduced. This fictitious plastic strain is assumed to be related to the real plastic strain ϵ_{ij}^p , which is derived from a non-associated flow rule⁶ through the linear transformation:

$$e_{ij}^p = A_{ijkl} \epsilon_{kl}^p \quad (104.11)$$

Linear transformation tensor A_{ijkl} may be state dependent in general case, and it reduces to the symmetric part of the fourth order identity tensor⁷ for the case of associated plasticity.

⁴first order accuracy condition.

⁵Since it is only linear expansion stress trajectory is confined to the tangential plane only.

⁶as in equation 104.3.

⁷ $A_{ijkl} \equiv I_{ijkl}^{sym} \equiv \frac{1}{2} (\delta_{ik}\delta_{jl} + \delta_{il}\delta_{jk})$.

It is often of interest to model deviatoric strains by an associated flow rule while the volumetric part is non-associated. For this case, A_{ijkl} can be formulated as:

$$A_{ijkl} = \left(\beta \frac{1}{3} (\delta_{ij}\delta_{kl}) + \frac{1}{2} (\delta_{ik}\delta_{jl} + \delta_{il}\delta_{jk}) \right) \quad (104.12)$$

$$A_{ijkl}^{-1} = \left(-\frac{\beta}{1+\beta} \frac{1}{3} (\delta_{ij}\delta_{kl}) + \frac{1}{2} (\delta_{ik}\delta_{jl} + \delta_{il}\delta_{jk}) \right) \quad (104.13)$$

and it is obvious that the non-associated flow rule is obtained with $\beta \neq 0$ and the associated flow rule with $\beta = 0$. It is useful to choose $\beta \geq 0$ and retain nice, positive definite properties of adjusted constitutive tensors later.

Let the $\|\cdot\|$ norm, be the complementary energy norm⁸:

$$\|\sigma_{ij}\|^2 = \sigma_{ij} D_{ijkl} \sigma_{kl} \quad (104.14)$$

where D_{ijkl} is the elastic compliance tensor ($D_{ijkl} = E_{ijkl}^{-1}$), and let us introduce the adjusted complementary energy norm as:

$$^A\|\sigma_{ij}\|^2 = \sigma_{ij} (A_{ijkl} D_{klmn}) \sigma_{mn} = \sigma_{ij} ({}^A D_{ijmn}) \sigma_{mn} \quad (104.15)$$

where ${}^A D_{ijmn}$ is the elastic compliance tensor transformed with respect to the non-associativity involved.

It is clear that when $A_{ijkl} \equiv I_{ijkl}^{sym} \implies {}^A\|\sigma_{ij}\|^2 \equiv \|\sigma_{ij}\|^2$

104.2.2 On Integration Algorithms

In the section Constitutive Relations for Infinitesimal Plasticity we have summarized constitutive equations that are capable of representing a wide variety of elasto-plastic materials. The problem in Computational Elasto-plasticity is to devise accurate and efficient algorithms for the integration of such constitutive relations. In the context of finite element analysis using isoparametric elements, the integration of constitutive equations is carried out at Gauss points. In each step the deformation increments are given or known, and the unknowns to be found are updated stresses and plastic variables. According to [Ortiz and Popov \(1985\)](#) an acceptable algorithm should satisfy:

- consistency with the constitutive relations to be integrated or first order accuracy,
- Numerical stability,

⁸This norm will be reintroduced later on!

- incremental plastic consistency

A non—required but desirable feature to be added to the above list is:

- higher⁹ order accuracy

First two conditions are needed for attaining convergence for the numerical solution as the step or increment becomes vanishingly small. The third condition is the algorithmic counterpart of the plastic consistency condition and requires that the state of stress computed from the algorithm be contained within the elastic domain.

104.2.3 Midpoint Rule Algorithm

A class of algorithms for integrating constitutive equations with potential to satisfy the above mentioned conditions are the Generalized Midpoint rule algorithms. They are given in the following form:

$$d^{(n+1)}\sigma_{ij} = E_{ijkl} \left(d^{(n+1)}\epsilon_{kl} - d^{(n+1)}\epsilon_{kl}^p \right) \quad (104.16)$$

$$d^{(n+1)}\epsilon_{ij}^p = d^{(n)}\epsilon_{ij}^p + d\lambda^{n+\alpha} m_{ij} \quad (104.17)$$

$$d^{(n+1)}q_* = d^{(n)}q_* + d\lambda^{n+\alpha} h_* \quad (104.18)$$

$$F_{n+1} = 0 \quad (104.19)$$

where:

$$^{n+\alpha}m_{ij} = m_{ij} \left((1-\alpha) \ ^n\sigma_{ij} + \alpha \left(^{n+1}\sigma_{ij} \right), (1-\alpha) \ ^nq_* + \alpha \left(^{n+1}q_* \right) \right) \quad (104.20)$$

$$^{n+\alpha}h_* = h_* \left((1-\alpha) \ ^n\sigma_{ij} + \alpha \left(^{n+1}\sigma_{ij} \right), (1-\alpha) \ ^nq_* + \alpha \left(^{n+1}q_* \right) \right) \quad (104.21)$$

It is quite clear that the case $\alpha = 0$ corresponds to the Forward Euler approach¹⁰, the case $\alpha = 1$ corresponds to the Backward Euler approach¹¹, and the case $\alpha = 1/2$ to the Crank – Nicholson scheme. Equations (104.16), (104.17), (104.18), (104.19), (104.20) and (104.21) are the nonlinear algebraic

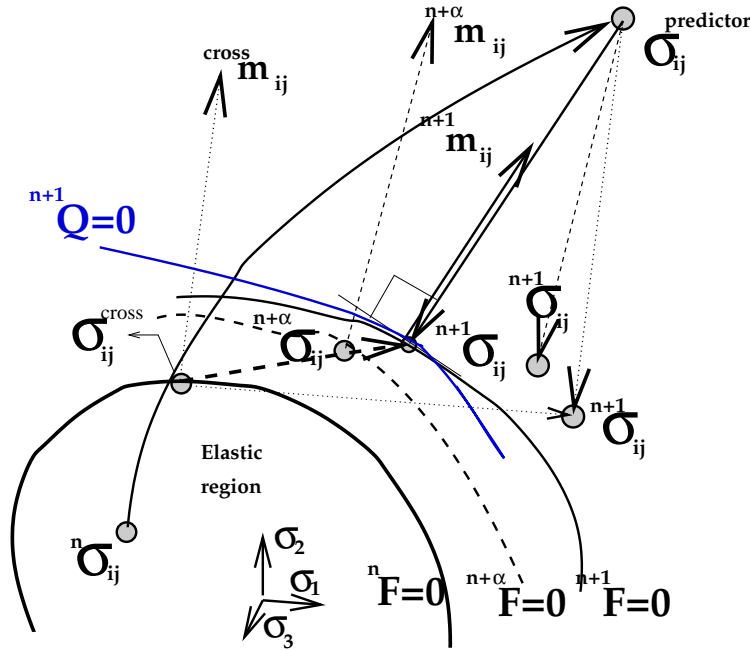


Figure 104.1: integration algorithms in elasto-plasticity

equations to be solved for the unknowns $d(n+1)\sigma_{ij}$, $d(n+1)\epsilon_{ij}^p$, $d(n+1)q_*$ and $d\lambda$. From the Figure (104.1)¹² it can be seen that the Generalized Midpoint rule may be regarded as a returning mapping algorithm in which the elastic predictor $^{pred}\sigma_{ij}$ is projected on the updated yield surface along the flow direction evaluated at the midpoint $(^{n+\alpha}\sigma_{ij}, ^{n+\alpha}q_*)$.

104.2.3.1 Accuracy Analysis

Bearing in mind the context of the displacement based finite element analysis the integration of constitutive equations is performed for the given strain increment. The updated strains $^{n+1}\epsilon_{ij} = \epsilon_{ij}(t_n + \Delta t)$ may be viewed as the known function of the step size Δt . The remaining updated variables $^{n+1}\sigma_{ij}$, $^{n+1}\epsilon_{ij}^p$, $^{n+1}q_*$, as well as the incremental plastic parameter λ become functions of Δt implicitly defined through equations (104.16), (104.17), (104.18) and (104.19). It should be clear from (104.16), (104.17), (104.18) and (104.19) that as $\Delta t \rightarrow 0$ than $^{n+1}\epsilon_{ij} \rightarrow ^n\epsilon_{ij}$, and thus the limiting values of $^{n+1}\sigma_{ij}$, $^{n+1}\epsilon_{ij}^p$, $^{n+1}q_*$ and λ are obtained:

⁹at least second order accuracy.

¹⁰explicit scheme.

¹¹implicit scheme.

¹²it should be pointed out that the vectors, as drawn on this figure, are pointing in the right direction only if we assume that $E_{ijkl} \equiv I_{ijkl}$. For any general elasticity tensor E_{ijkl} all vectors are defined in the E_{ijkl} metric, so the term "normal", as we are used to it, does not apply here.

$$\begin{aligned}
\lim_{\Delta t \rightarrow 0} \left({}^{n+1}\sigma_{ij} \right) &= {}^n\sigma_{ij} \\
\lim_{\Delta t \rightarrow 0} \left({}^{n+1}\epsilon_{ij}^p \right) &= {}^n\epsilon_{ij}^p \\
\lim_{\Delta t \rightarrow 0} \left({}^{n+1}q_* \right) &= {}^nq_* \\
\lim_{\Delta t \rightarrow 0} \lambda &= 0
\end{aligned} \tag{104.22}$$

It can also be argued that, by virtue of the implicit function theorem ((Abraham et al., 1988) Chapter 2.5), ${}^{n+1}\sigma_{ij}$, ${}^{n+1}\epsilon_{ij}^p$, ${}^{n+1}q_*$ and λ are differentiable functions of Δt , if the functions ${}^{n+\alpha}m_{ij}$, ${}^{n+\alpha}h_*$ and F are sufficiently smooth. Sufficient smoothness will be assumed as needed.

First Order Accuracy. First order accuracy¹³ of the algorithm, defined by the equations (104.16), (104.17), (104.18) and (104.19) with the constitutive equations given by (104.1), (104.2), (104.3) and (104.4) necessitates that the numerically integrated variables ${}^{n+1}\sigma_{ij}$, ${}^{n+1}\epsilon_{ij}^p$ and ${}^{n+1}q_*$ agree with their exact values $\sigma_{ij}(t + \Delta t)$, $\epsilon_{ij}^p(t + \Delta t)$ and $q_*(t + \Delta t)$ to within second order terms in the Taylor's expansion around the initial state ${}^n\sigma_{ij} = \sigma_{ij}(t)$, ${}^n\epsilon_{ij}^p = \epsilon_{ij}^p(t)$ and ${}^nq_* = q_*(t)$ in Δt . First order accuracy can be written in the following form:

$$\lim_{\Delta t \rightarrow 0} \frac{d({}^{n+1}\sigma_{ij})}{d(\Delta t)} = \frac{d({}^n\sigma_{ij})}{d(\Delta t)} = E_{ijkl} \left(\frac{d({}^n\epsilon_{ij})}{d(\Delta t)} - \frac{d({}^n\epsilon_{ij}^p)}{d(\Delta t)} \right) \tag{104.23}$$

$$\lim_{\Delta t \rightarrow 0} \frac{d({}^{n+1}\epsilon_{ij}^p)}{d(\Delta t)} = \frac{d({}^n\epsilon_{ij}^p)}{d(\Delta t)} = \frac{d({}^n\lambda)}{d(\Delta t)} {}^nm_{ij} \tag{104.24}$$

$$\lim_{\Delta t \rightarrow 0} \frac{d({}^{n+1}q_*)}{d(\Delta t)} = \frac{d({}^nq_*)}{d(\Delta t)} = \frac{d({}^n\lambda)}{d(\Delta t)} {}^nh_* \tag{104.25}$$

$$\lim_{\Delta t \rightarrow 0} \frac{d(\lambda)}{d(\Delta t)} = \frac{d({}^n\lambda)}{d(\Delta t)} \tag{104.26}$$

and the plastic parameter $d({}^n\lambda)/d(\Delta t)$ is determined with the aid of the plastic consistency condition at t :

¹³first order consistency.

$$\frac{d({}^nF)}{d(\Delta t)} = \frac{\partial({}^nF)}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} \frac{d\sigma_{ij}}{d(\Delta t)} + \frac{\partial({}^nF)}{\partial q_*} \frac{dq_*}{d(\Delta t)} = n_{ij} \frac{d\sigma_{ij}}{d(\Delta t)} + n_{\xi_*} \frac{dq_*}{d(\Delta t)} = 0 \quad (104.27)$$

It is now rather straightforward to check whether the Generalized Midpoint rule satisfies the consistency conditions as given by (104.23), (104.24), (104.25) and (104.26). We can proceed further on by differentiating (104.16), (104.17), (104.18) and (104.19) with respect to Δt ¹⁴:

$$\frac{d({}^{n+1}\sigma_{ij})}{d(\Delta t)} = E_{ijkl} \left(\frac{d({}^{n+1}\epsilon_{kl})}{d(\Delta t)} - \frac{d({}^{n+1}\epsilon_{kl}^p)}{d(\Delta t)} \right) \quad (104.28)$$

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{d({}^{n+1}\epsilon_{ij}^p)}{d(\Delta t)} &= \frac{d\lambda}{d(\Delta t)} ({}^{n+\alpha}m_{ij}) + \lambda \frac{d({}^{n+\alpha}m_{ij})}{d(\Delta t)} = \\ \frac{d\lambda}{d(\Delta t)} ({}^{n+\alpha}m_{ij}) + \lambda \alpha \left(\frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} \Big|_{n+1} \frac{d({}^{n+1}\sigma_{ij})}{d(\Delta t)} + \frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial q_*} \Big|_{n+1} \frac{d({}^{n+1}q_*)}{d(\Delta t)} \right) \end{aligned} \quad (104.29)$$

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{d({}^{n+1}q_*^p)}{d(\Delta t)} &= \frac{d\lambda}{d(\Delta t)} ({}^{n+\alpha}h_*) + \lambda \frac{d({}^{n+\alpha}h_*)}{d(\Delta t)} = \\ \frac{d\lambda}{d(\Delta t)} ({}^{n+\alpha}h_*) + \lambda \alpha \left(\frac{\partial h_*}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} \Big|_{n+1} \frac{d({}^{n+1}\sigma_{ij})}{d(\Delta t)} + \frac{\partial h_*}{\partial q_*} \Big|_{n+1} \frac{d({}^{n+1}q_*)}{d(\Delta t)} \right) \end{aligned} \quad (104.30)$$

$$\frac{d({}^{n+1}F)}{d(\Delta t)} = \frac{\partial({}^{n+1}F)}{\partial({}^{n+1}\sigma_{ij})} \frac{d({}^{n+1}\sigma_{ij})}{d(\Delta t)} + \frac{\partial({}^{n+1}F)}{\partial({}^{n+1}q_*)} \frac{d({}^{n+1}q_*)}{d(\Delta t)} = 0 \quad (104.31)$$

where ${}^{n+\alpha}m_{ij}$ and ${}^{n+\alpha}h_*$ are defined by the equations (104.20) and (104.21).

By taking Δt to the limit value, $\Delta t \rightarrow 0$, in the (104.28), (104.29), (104.30) and (104.31) and using the relations from (104.22) one finds:

¹⁴bearing in mind that values at t are constants and that only variables at $t + \Delta t$ are changing with respect to Δt .

$$\lim_{\Delta t \rightarrow 0} \frac{d \left({}^{n+1}\sigma_{ij} \right)}{d(\Delta t)} = E_{ijkl} \left(\frac{d \left({}^n\epsilon_{kl} \right)}{d(\Delta t)} - \frac{d \left({}^{n+1}\epsilon_{kl}^p \right)_{\Delta t=0}}{d(\Delta t)} \right) \quad (104.32)$$

$$\lim_{\Delta t \rightarrow 0} \frac{d \left({}^{n+1}\epsilon_{ij}^p \right)}{d(\Delta t)} = \frac{d\lambda}{d(\Delta t)} \left({}^nm_{ij} \right) \quad (104.33)$$

$$\lim_{\Delta t \rightarrow 0} \frac{d \left({}^{n+1}q_* \right)}{d(\Delta t)} = \frac{d\lambda}{d(\Delta t)} \left({}^nh_* \right) \quad (104.34)$$

$$\lim_{\Delta t \rightarrow 0} \frac{d \left({}^{n+1}F \right)}{d(\Delta t)} = \frac{\partial ({}^nF)}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} \left(\lim_{\Delta t \rightarrow 0} \frac{d \left({}^{n+1}\sigma_{ij} \right)}{d(\Delta t)} \right) + \frac{\partial ({}^nF)}{\partial q_*} \left(\lim_{\Delta t \rightarrow 0} \frac{d \left({}^{n+1}q_* \right)}{d(\Delta t)} \right) = 0 \quad (104.35)$$

In the previous equations it is quite clear that since $\Delta t = 0$, then equations (104.22) hold and since the variables ${}^n\sigma_{ij}$, ${}^n\epsilon_{ij}^p$ and nq_* are constant with respect to the change in Δt , the result follows readily, i.e. the Midpoint rule satisfies first order accuracy.

Second Order Accuracy To investigate second order accuracy of the algorithm given by (104.16), (104.17), (104.18) and (104.19) together with the constitutive equations given by (104.1), (104.2), (104.3) and (104.4) we shall proceed in the following manner. Second order accuracy actually means that the numerically integrated variables ${}^{n+1}\sigma_{ij}$, ${}^{n+1}\epsilon_{ij}^p$ and ${}^{n+1}q_*$ agree with their "exact" values $\sigma_{ij}(t + \Delta t)$, $\epsilon_{ij}^p(t + \Delta t)$ and $q_*(t + \Delta t)$ to within third order terms in the Taylor's expansion around the initial state ${}^n\sigma_{ij} = \sigma_{ij}(t)$, ${}^n\epsilon_{ij}^p = \epsilon_{ij}^p(t)$ and ${}^nq_* = q_*(t)$ in Δt . This verbal statement can be written in the following mathematical form:

$$E_{ijkl} \left(\lim_{\Delta t \rightarrow 0} \frac{d^2 ({}^{n+1}\epsilon_{kl})}{d(\Delta t)^2} - \lim_{\Delta t \rightarrow 0} \frac{d^2 ({}^n\epsilon_{kl}^p)}{d(\Delta t)^2} \right) = E_{ijkl} \left(\frac{d^2 ({}^{n+1}\sigma_{ij})}{d(\Delta t)^2} - \frac{d^2 ({}^n\epsilon_{kl}^p)}{d(\Delta t)^2} \right) \quad (104.36)$$

$$\begin{aligned} & \lim_{\Delta t \rightarrow 0} \frac{d^2 ({}^{n+1}\epsilon_{ij}^p)}{d(\Delta t)^2} = \\ & \frac{d^2 \lambda}{d(\Delta t)^2} \lim_{\Delta t \rightarrow 0} ({}^{n+1}m_{ij}) + \lim_{\Delta t \rightarrow 0} \frac{d ({}^{n+1}\lambda)}{d(\Delta t)} \frac{d ({}^{n+\alpha}m_{ij})}{d(\Delta t)} = \\ & \frac{d^2 \lambda}{d(\Delta t)^2} ({}^n m_{ij}) + \frac{d ({}^n \lambda)}{d(\Delta t)} \frac{d ({}^{n+\alpha}m_{ij})}{d(\Delta t)} = \\ & \frac{d^2 \lambda}{d(\Delta t)^2} ({}^n m_{ij}) + \frac{d ({}^n \lambda)}{d(\Delta t)} \left(\frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} \Big|_n \frac{d ({}^n \sigma_{ij})}{d(\Delta t)} + \frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial q_*} \Big|_n \frac{d ({}^n q_*)}{d(\Delta t)} \right) \end{aligned} \quad (104.37)$$

$$\begin{aligned} & \lim_{\Delta t \rightarrow 0} \frac{d^2 ({}^{n+1}q_*)}{d(\Delta t)^2} = \\ & \frac{d^2 \lambda}{d(\Delta t)^2} \lim_{\Delta t \rightarrow 0} ({}^{n+1}h_*) + \lim_{\Delta t \rightarrow 0} \frac{d ({}^{n+1}\lambda)}{d\Delta t} \frac{d ({}^{n+1}h_*)}{d(\Delta t)} = \\ & \frac{d^2 \lambda}{d(\Delta t)^2} ({}^n h_*) + \frac{d ({}^{n+1}\lambda)}{d\Delta t} \frac{d ({}^n h_*)}{d(\Delta t)} = \\ & \frac{d^2 \lambda}{d(\Delta t)^2} ({}^n h_*) + \frac{d ({}^{n+1}\lambda)}{d\Delta t} \left(\frac{\partial h_*}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} \Big|_n \frac{d ({}^n \sigma_{ij})}{d(\Delta t)} + \frac{\partial h_*}{\partial q_*} \Big|_n \frac{d ({}^n q_*)}{d(\Delta t)} \right) \end{aligned} \quad (104.38)$$

$$\lim_{\Delta t \rightarrow 0} \frac{d^2 (\lambda)}{d(\Delta t)^2} = \frac{d^2 ({}^n \lambda)}{d(\Delta t)^2} \quad (104.39)$$

and the plastic parameter $d^2 ({}^n \lambda)/d(\Delta t)^2$ is determined with the aid of the second order oscillatory satisfaction of the plastic consistency condition:

$$\frac{d^2 ({}^n F)}{d(\Delta t)^2} = \frac{dn_{ij}}{d\Delta t} \Big|_n \frac{d\sigma_{ij}}{d(\Delta t)} + {}^n n_{ij} \frac{d^2 (\sigma_{ij})}{d(\Delta t)^2} \Big|_n + \frac{d(\xi_*)}{d\Delta t} \Big|_n \frac{d^2 q_*}{d(\Delta t)^2} + {}^n \xi_* \frac{d^2 ({}^n q_*)}{d(\Delta t)^2} = 0 \quad (104.40)$$

Now we can proceed by taking the second derivative of the equations (104.16), (104.17), (104.18) and (104.19) or use the already derived first derivatives from equations (104.28), (104.29), (104.30) and (104.31), and then differentiate them again so that we get:

$$\frac{d^2 ({}^{n+1}\sigma_{ij})}{d(\Delta t)^2} = E_{ijkl} \left(\frac{d^2 ({}^{n+1}\epsilon_{kl})}{d(\Delta t)^2} - \frac{d^2 ({}^{n+1}\epsilon_{kl}^p)}{d(\Delta t)^2} \right) \quad (104.41)$$

$$\begin{aligned} & \frac{d^2 ({}^{n+1}\epsilon_{ij}^p)}{d(\Delta t)^2} = \\ & \frac{d^2 \lambda}{d(\Delta t)^2} ({}^{n+\alpha}m_{ij}) + \\ & 2 \frac{d\lambda}{d(\Delta t)} \alpha \left(\frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} \Big|_{n+1} \frac{d ({}^{n+1}\sigma_{ij})}{d(\Delta t)} + \frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial q_*} \Big|_{n+1} \frac{d ({}^{n+1}q_*)}{d(\Delta t)} \right) + \\ & \lambda \alpha \frac{d}{d(\Delta t)} \left(\frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} \Big|_{n+1} \frac{d ({}^{n+1}\sigma_{ij})}{d(\Delta t)} + \frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial q_*} \Big|_{n+1} \frac{d ({}^{n+1}q_*)}{d(\Delta t)} \right) \end{aligned} \quad (104.42)$$

$$\begin{aligned} & \frac{d^2 ({}^{n+1}q_*^p)}{d(\Delta t)^2} = \\ & \frac{d^2 \lambda}{d(\Delta t)^2} ({}^{n+\alpha}h_*) + \\ & 2 \frac{d\lambda}{d(\Delta t)} \alpha \left(\frac{\partial h_*}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} \Big|_{n+1} \frac{d ({}^{n+1}\sigma_{ij})}{d(\Delta t)} + \frac{\partial h_*}{\partial q_*} \Big|_{n+1} \frac{d ({}^{n+1}q_*)}{d(\Delta t)} \right) + \\ & \lambda \alpha \frac{d}{d(\Delta t)} \left(\frac{\partial h_*}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} \Big|_{n+1} \frac{d ({}^{n+1}\sigma_{ij})}{d(\Delta t)} + \frac{\partial h_*}{\partial q_*} \Big|_{n+1} \frac{d ({}^{n+1}q_*)}{d(\Delta t)} \right) \end{aligned} \quad (104.43)$$

$$\begin{aligned} & \frac{d^2 ({}^{n+1}F)}{d(\Delta t)^2} = \\ & \frac{d ({}^{n+1}n_{ij})}{d\sigma_{ij}} \frac{d ({}^{n+1}\sigma_{ij})}{d(\Delta t)} + {}^{n+1}n_{ij} \frac{d^2 ({}^{n+1}\sigma_{ij})}{d(\Delta t)^2} + \\ & + \frac{d ({}^{n+1}\xi_*)}{d\sigma_{ij}} \frac{d ({}^{n+1}q_*)}{d(\Delta t)} + {}^{n+1}\xi_* \frac{d^2 ({}^{n+1}q_*)}{d(\Delta t)^2} = 0 \end{aligned} \quad (104.44)$$

If we drive Δt to the limit, namely by taking $\lim_{\Delta t \rightarrow 0}$ and keeping in mind equations (104.22) and the assumed consistency of the algorithm¹⁵ as given by the equations (104.23), (104.24), (104.25) and (104.26) one finds:

¹⁵actually the first order accuracy that is already proven.

$$\lim_{\Delta t \rightarrow 0} \frac{d^2 ({}^{n+1}\sigma_{ij})}{d(\Delta t)^2} = E_{ijkl} \left(\frac{d^2 ({}^n\epsilon_{kl})}{d(\Delta t)^2} - \lim_{\Delta t \rightarrow 0} \frac{d^2 ({}^{n+1}\epsilon_{kl}^p)}{d(\Delta t)^2} \right) \quad (104.45)$$

$$\lim_{\Delta t \rightarrow 0} \frac{d^2 ({}^{n+1}\lambda)}{d(\Delta t)^2} ({}^{n+\alpha}m_{ij}) + 2 \frac{d ({}^n\lambda)}{d(\Delta t)} \alpha \left(\frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} \Big|_n \frac{d ({}^n\sigma_{ij})}{d(\Delta t)} + \frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial q_*} \Big|_n \frac{d ({}^nq_*)}{d(\Delta t)} \right) = \lim_{\Delta t \rightarrow 0} \frac{d^2 ({}^{n+1}\epsilon_{ij}^p)}{d(\Delta t)^2} = \quad (104.46)$$

$$\lim_{\Delta t \rightarrow 0} \frac{d^2 ({}^{n+1}\lambda)}{d(\Delta t)^2} ({}^{n+\alpha}h_*) + 2 \frac{d ({}^n\lambda)}{d(\Delta t)} \alpha \left(\frac{\partial h_*}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} \Big|_n \frac{d ({}^n\sigma_{ij})}{d(\Delta t)} + \frac{\partial h_*}{\partial q_*} \Big|_n \frac{d ({}^nq_*)}{d(\Delta t)} \right) = \lim_{\Delta t \rightarrow 0} \frac{d^2 ({}^{n+1}q_*^p)}{d(\Delta t)^2} = \quad (104.47)$$

$$\lim_{\Delta t \rightarrow 0} \frac{d^2 ({}^{n+1}F)}{d(\Delta t)^2} = \frac{d ({}^n n_{ij})}{d\sigma_{ij}} \frac{d ({}^n\sigma_{ij})}{d(\Delta t)} + {}^n n_{ij} \lim_{\Delta t \rightarrow 0} \frac{d^2 ({}^{n+1}\sigma_{ij})}{d(\Delta t)^2} + \frac{d ({}^n \xi_*)}{d\sigma_{ij}} \frac{d ({}^n q_*)}{d(\Delta t)} + {}^n \xi_* \lim_{\Delta t \rightarrow 0} \frac{d^2 ({}^{n+1}q_*)}{d(\Delta t)^2} = 0 \quad (104.48)$$

By comparing equations (104.45), (104.46), (104.47) and (104.48) with the second order accuracy condition stated in equations (104.36), (104.37), (104.38) and (104.39) it is quite clear that the second order accuracy is obtained iff¹⁶ $\alpha = 1/2$!

The conclusion is that the Midpoint-rule algorithm is consistent¹⁷ for all $\alpha \in [0, 1]$ and it is second order accurate for $\alpha = 1/2$. However, one should not forget that these results are obtained for the limiting case $\Delta t \rightarrow 0$, i.e. the strain increments are small and tend to zero.

¹⁶if and only if (\iff).

¹⁷first order accurate.

104.2.3.2 Numerical Stability Analysis

Numerical stability of an algorithm plays a central role in approximation theory for initial value problems. In fact, it can be stated that consistency and stability are necessary and sufficient conditions for convergence of an algorithm as the time step tends to zero. In the approach presented by [Ortiz and Popov \(1985\)](#) a new methodology is proposed by which the stability properties of an integration algorithm for elasto-plastic constitutive relations can be established. Our attention is confined to perfect plasticity and a smooth yield surface.

The purpose of the following stability analysis is to determine under what conditions a finite perturbation in the initial stresses is diluted by the algorithm. In other words:

$$d\left({}^{n+1}\sigma_{ij}^{(2)}, {}^{n+1}\sigma_{ij}^{(1)}\right) \leq d\left({}^n\sigma_{ij}^{(2)}, {}^n\sigma_{ij}^{(1)}\right) \quad (104.49)$$

where $d(\cdot, \cdot)$ is some suitable distance on the yield surface and ${}^{n+1}\sigma_{ij}^{(1)}$ and ${}^{n+1}\sigma_{ij}^{(2)}$ are two sets of updated stresses corresponding to arbitrary initial stress values ${}^n\sigma_{ij}^{(1)}$ and ${}^n\sigma_{ij}^{(2)}$, respectively, and all of the previous stress values are assumed to lie on the yield surface. Stability in the sense of equation (104.49) is referred to as large scale stability. It is shown in [Helgason \(1978\)](#)¹⁸ that for nonlinear initial value problems defined on Banach manifolds, consistency and large scale stability with respect to a complete metric are sufficient for convergence.

The task of directly establishing estimates of the type expressed in (104.49) is rather difficult, and so despite the conceptual appeal of large scale stability, simplified solutions are sought. It should be recognized that attention can be restricted to infinitesimal perturbation in the initial conditions of the type ${}^n\sigma_{ij} \rightarrow {}^n\sigma_{ij} + d({}^n\sigma_{ij})$. This simplification is founded on the fact that the dilution or attenuation, by the algorithm of infinitesimal perturbations:

$$\|d({}^{n+1}\sigma_{ij})\| \leq \|d({}^n\sigma_{ij})\| \quad (104.50)$$

with respect to some suitable norm $\|\cdot\|$, of small scale stability, implies large scale stability in the sense of equation (104.49).

Let the $\|\cdot\|$ norm, be the energy norm:

$$\|\sigma_{ij}\|^2 = \sigma_{ij} D_{ijkl} \sigma_{kl} \quad (104.51)$$

¹⁸the first Chapter of Helgason's book.

where D_{ijkl} is the elastic compliance tensor ($D_{ijkl} = E_{ijkl}^{-1}$), and let the distance $d(\cdot, \cdot)$ on the yield surface be defined as

$$d(\sigma_{ij}^{(1)}, \sigma_{ij}^{(2)}) = \inf_{\gamma} \int_{\gamma} \|\sigma'_{ij}(s)\| ds \quad (104.52)$$

where the infimum is taken over all possible stress paths γ on the yield surface that are joining two stress states, namely $\sigma_{ij}^{(1)}$ and $\sigma_{ij}^{(2)}$. It can be found in Helgason (1978) that for a smooth yield surface, equation (104.52) defines the geodesic distance which endows the yield surface with a complete metric structure.

Suppose that we have any two initial states of stress $n\sigma_{ij}^{(1)}$ and $n\sigma_{ij}^{(2)}$ and let $n+1\sigma_{ij}^{(1)}$ and $n+1\sigma_{ij}^{(2)}$ be the corresponding updated values, respectively, and all the previous stress states are assumed to lie on the yield surface. Then, according to Helgason (1978), there exists a unique geodesic curve that joins $n\sigma_{ij}^{(1)}$ and $n\sigma_{ij}^{(2)}$ for which the infimum in equation (104.52) is attained. If γ_n is such a curve, then by definition:

$$d(n\sigma_{ij}^{(1)}, n\sigma_{ij}^{(2)}) = \int_{\gamma_n} \|\sigma'_{ij}(s)\| ds \quad (104.53)$$

Let the new curve γ_{n+1} be the transform of curve γ_n by the algorithm. By definition γ_{n+1} lies on the yield surface and joins two stress states $n+1\sigma_{ij}^{(1)}$ and $n+1\sigma_{ij}^{(2)}$. By the definition given in (104.52), it follows that:

$$d(n+1\sigma_{ij}^{(1)}, n+1\sigma_{ij}^{(2)}) = \int_{\gamma_{n+1}} \|\sigma'_{ij}(s)\| ds \quad (104.54)$$

Under the assumption of small scale stability of the algorithm one can write:

$$\|\sigma'_{ij}(s_{n+1})\| ds = \|d\sigma_{ij}(s_{n+1})\| \leq \|d\sigma_{ij}(s_n)\| = \|\sigma'_{ij}(s_n)\| ds \quad (104.55)$$

for every pair of corresponding points s_n and s_{n+1} on γ_n and γ_{n+1} respectively, so it follows:

$$\int_{\gamma_{n+1}} \|\sigma'_{ij}(s_{n+1})\| ds \leq \int_{\gamma_n} \|\sigma'_{ij}(s_n)\| ds \quad (104.56)$$

By combining equations (104.54), (104.55) and (104.56) it is concluded that:

$$d(n+1\sigma_{ij}^{(1)}, n+1\sigma_{ij}^{(2)}) \leq d(n\sigma_{ij}^{(1)}, n\sigma_{ij}^{(2)}) \quad (104.57)$$

which proves large scale stability. The main conclusion of the above argument may be stated as follows: small scale stability in the energy norm is equivalent to large scale stability in the associated geodesic distance.

The previous result is of practical importance, since it shows that the stability analysis for the integration algorithm in elasto-plasticity can be carried out by the assessment of small scale stability. The small scale stability analysis of the Generalized Midpoint rule is necessary to determine how the algorithm propagates infinitesimal perturbations in the initial conditions. By differentiating equations (104.16), (104.17), (104.18) and (104.19) and considering that we are dealing with perfectly plastic case here so that $(^{n+1}q_*) = (^nq_*) = \text{constants}$, it follows:

$$d \left(^{n+1}\sigma_{ij} \right) = -E_{ijkl} d \left(^{n+1}\epsilon_{kl}^p \right) \quad (104.58)$$

$$d \left(^n\sigma_{ij} \right) = -E_{ijkl} d \left(^n\epsilon_{kl}^p \right) \quad (104.59)$$

$$d \left(^{n+1}\epsilon_{ij}^p \right) - d \left(^n\epsilon_{ij}^p \right) = d \lambda \left(^{n+\alpha}m_{ij} \right) + \lambda d \left(^{n+\alpha}m_{ij} \right) \quad (104.60)$$

$$d \left(^{n+1}F \right) = \left. \frac{\partial F}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} \right|_{n+1} d \left(^{n+1}\sigma_{ij} \right) = ^{n+1}n_{ij} d \left(^{n+1}\sigma_{ij} \right) = 0 \quad (104.61)$$

Let us now examine the shape of $d \left(^{n+\alpha}m_{ij} \right)$ having in mind the original definition¹⁹ given in equation (104.20):

$$^{n+\alpha}m_{ij} = m_{ij} \left((1 - \alpha) \ ^n\sigma_{ij} + \alpha \left(^{n+1}\sigma_{ij} \right), (1 - \alpha) \ ^nq_* + \alpha \left(^{n+1}q_* \right) \right)$$

and the differential of the previous equation is:

$$d \left(^{n+\alpha}m_{ij} \right) = (1 - \alpha) \left. \frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{kl}} \right|_{n+\alpha} d \left(^n\sigma_{kl} \right) + \alpha \left. \frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{kl}} \right|_{n+\alpha} d \left(^{n+1}\sigma_{kl} \right)$$

To ease writing let us introduce the following fourth order tensor:

¹⁹the remark about restraining analysis to perfectly plastic case still holds, so that $(^{n+1}q_*)$ and $(^nq_*)$ are constant.

$$M_{ijkl} = \frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{kl}}$$

The equation (104.60) now reads:

$$\begin{aligned} d \left({}^{n+1}\epsilon_{ij}^p \right) - d \left({}^n\epsilon_{ij}^p \right) = \\ d\lambda \left({}^{n+\alpha}m_{ij} \right) + \lambda \left((1-\alpha) \left({}^{n+\alpha}M_{ijkl} \right) d \left({}^n\sigma_{kl} \right) + \alpha \left({}^{n+\alpha}M_{ijkl} \right) d \left({}^{n+1}\sigma_{kl} \right) \right) \end{aligned} \quad (104.62)$$

By using equations (104.58) and (104.59) and knowing that $E_{ijkl}^{-1} = D_{ijkl}$ one can write:

$$d \left({}^{n+1}\epsilon_{ij}^p \right) = -D_{ijkl} d \left({}^{n+1}\sigma_{kl} \right)$$

$$d \left({}^n\epsilon_{ij}^p \right) = -D_{ijkl} d \left({}^n\sigma_{kl} \right)$$

so that the equation (104.62) now reads:

$$\begin{aligned} -D_{ijkl} d \left({}^{n+1}\sigma_{kl} \right) + D_{ijkl} d \left({}^n\sigma_{kl} \right) = \\ d\lambda \left({}^{n+\alpha}m_{ij} \right) + \lambda \left((1-\alpha) \left({}^{n+\alpha}M_{ijkl} \right) d \left({}^n\sigma_{kl} \right) + \alpha \left({}^{n+\alpha}M_{ijkl} \right) d \left({}^{n+1}\sigma_{kl} \right) \right) \end{aligned}$$

Now we are proceeding by solving the previous equation for $d \left({}^{n+1}\sigma_{kl} \right)$:

$$\begin{aligned} \left(D_{ijkl} + \lambda \alpha \left({}^{n+\alpha}M_{ijkl} \right) \right) d \left({}^{n+1}\sigma_{kl} \right) = \\ \left(D_{ijkl} - \lambda (1-\alpha) \left({}^{n+\alpha}M_{ijkl} \right) \right) d \left({}^n\sigma_{kl} \right) - d\lambda \left({}^{n+\alpha}m_{ij} \right) \end{aligned}$$

and by denoting :

$$\Psi_{ijkl} = D_{ijkl} - \lambda (1-\alpha) \left({}^{n+\alpha}M_{ijkl} \right)$$

$$\Gamma_{ijkl} = D_{ijkl} + \lambda \alpha \left({}^{n+\alpha}M_{ijkl} \right)$$

it follows:

$$d \left({}^{n+1}\sigma_{kl} \right) = \Gamma_{ijkl}^{-1} \left(\Psi_{ijkl} d \left({}^n\sigma_{kl} \right) - d\lambda \left({}^{n+\alpha}m_{ij} \right) \right) \quad (104.63)$$

Then by inserting the solution for $d \left({}^{n+1}\sigma_{kl} \right)$ in the consistency condition (104.61):

$$d \left({}^{n+1}F \right) = {}^{n+1}n_{kl} d \left({}^{n+1}\sigma_{kl} \right) = 0$$

one gets:

$$\begin{aligned} d \left({}^{n+1}F \right) = \\ {}^{n+1}n_{kl} \Gamma_{ijkl}^{-1} \left(\Psi_{ijkl} d \left({}^n\sigma_{kl} \right) - d\lambda \left({}^{n+\alpha}m_{ij} \right) \right) = 0 \end{aligned} \quad (104.64)$$

then if we solve for $d\lambda$:

$$d\lambda \left({}^{n+\alpha}m_{ij} \right) {}^{n+1}n_{kl} \Gamma_{ijkl}^{-1} = {}^{n+1}n_{kl} \Gamma_{ijkl}^{-1} \Psi_{ijkl} d \left({}^n\sigma_{kl} \right) \quad (104.65)$$

or²⁰:

$$d\lambda = \frac{{}^{n+1}n_{rs} \Gamma_{pqrs}^{-1} \Psi_{pqrs} d \left({}^n\sigma_{rs} \right)}{\left({}^{n+\alpha}m_{pq} \right) \left({}^{n+1}n_{rs} \right) \Gamma_{pqrs}^{-1}} \quad (104.66)$$

then by using the solution for $d \left({}^{n+1}\sigma_{kl} \right)$ from (104.63) and the solution for $d\lambda$ from (104.66) one can find:

$$d \left({}^{n+1}\sigma_{kl} \right) = \Gamma_{ijkl}^{-1} \Psi_{ijkl} d \left({}^n\sigma_{kl} \right) - \Gamma_{pqrs}^{-1} \Psi_{pqrs} \frac{{}^{n+1}n_{rs} \Gamma_{ijkl}^{-1} \left({}^{n+\alpha}m_{ij} \right)}{{}^{n+\alpha}m_{pq} {}^{n+1}n_{rs} \Gamma_{pqrs}^{-1}} d \left({}^n\sigma_{rs} \right) \quad (104.67)$$

$$d \left({}^{n+1}\sigma_{kl} \right) = \Gamma_{ijkl}^{-1} \Psi_{ijkl} \left(\delta_{ks} \delta_{rl} - \frac{{}^{n+1}n_{rs} \Gamma_{ijkl}^{-1} \left({}^{n+\alpha}m_{ij} \right)}{{}^{n+\alpha}m_{pq} {}^{n+1}n_{rs} \Gamma_{pqrs}^{-1}} \right) d \left({}^n\sigma_{rs} \right) \quad (104.68)$$

to ease the writing we can define the following notation:

²⁰where the change in dummy indices is possible because $d\lambda$ is scalar.

$$\Phi_{klrs} = \delta_{ks}\delta_{rl} - \frac{n+1}{n+\alpha} \frac{n_{rs} \Gamma_{ijkl}^{-1} (n+\alpha m_{ij})}{m_{pq} n_{rs} \Gamma_{pqrs}^{-1}} \quad (104.69)$$

so that the equation (104.68) now reads:

$$d \left({}^{n+1}\sigma_{kl} \right) = \Gamma_{ijkl}^{-1} \Psi_{ijkl} \Phi_{klrs} d \left({}^n\sigma_{rs} \right) \quad (104.70)$$

In order to derive the estimate of the type (104.50) from (104.70) we shall proceed in the following way.

The norm of a tensor is defined as:

$$\|A_{ijkl}\| = \sup_{\sigma} \frac{\|A_{ijkl}\sigma_{kl}\|}{\|\sigma_{kl}\|} \quad (104.71)$$

If we take the norm of (104.70), while recalling the inequalities:

$$\|A_{ijkl}\sigma_{kl}\| \leq \|A_{ijkl}\| \|\sigma_{kl}\| \quad ; \quad \|A_{ijkl}B_{ijkl}\| \leq \|A_{ijkl}\| \|B_{ijkl}\| \quad (104.72)$$

it follows:

$$\|d \left({}^{n+1}\sigma_{kl} \right)\| = \|\Gamma_{ijkl}^{-1} \Psi_{ijkl} \Phi_{klrs} d \left({}^n\sigma_{rs} \right)\| \quad (104.73)$$

then by using equations (104.72), we are able to write:

$$\|d \left({}^{n+1}\sigma_{kl} \right)\| \leq \|\Gamma_{ijkl}^{-1} \Psi_{ijkl}\| \|\Phi_{klrs}\| \|d \left({}^n\sigma_{rs} \right)\| \quad (104.74)$$

Considering the norm of $\|\Phi_{klrs}\|$ it should be noted that Φ_{klrs} defines a projection along the direction of $\Gamma_{ijkl}^{-1} {}^{n+\alpha}m_{ij}$ onto the hyperplane that is orthogonal to ${}^{n+1}n_{rs}$, so that the following properties hold:

$$(\Phi_{klrs}) \left(\Gamma_{ijkl}^{-1} {}^{n+\alpha}m_{ij} \right) = \emptyset \quad (104.75)$$

$$(\Phi_{klrs})(\sigma_{rs}) = \sigma_{rs} \quad (104.76)$$

for every σ_{rs} that is orthogonal to ${}^{n+1}n_{rs}$. From these properties and the definition in equation (104.71) it follows that:

$$\|\Phi_{klrs}\| \equiv 1 \quad (104.77)$$

In what follows it is assumed that the fourth order tensor field

$$M_{ijkl} = \partial m_{ij} / \partial \sigma_{kl}$$

is symmetric and positive definite everywhere on the yield surface. The assumption is valid, if the flow direction m_{ij} is derived from the convex potential function, which is a rather common feature among yield criteria. It is now clear that :

$$\|\Gamma_{ijkl}^{-1} \Psi_{ijkl}\| = \left| \frac{\max_{\gamma_{ij}} \Psi_{ijkl} \max_{\gamma_{kl}}}{\max_{\gamma_{ij}} \Gamma_{ijkl} \max_{\gamma_{kl}}} \right| \quad (104.78)$$

where $\max_{\gamma_{ij}}$ is the eigentensor corresponding to the maximum eigenvalue of the eigenproblem:

$$(\Psi_{ijkl} - \mu \Gamma_{ijkl}) \gamma_{kl} = 0 \quad (104.79)$$

which is normalized to satisfy:

$$\|\max_{\gamma_{ij}}\| \|\max_{\gamma_{kl}}\| = \max_{\gamma_{ij}} D_{ijkl} \max_{\gamma_{kl}} = 1 \quad (104.80)$$

If we denote:

$$^{n+\alpha}\beta = \max_{\gamma_{ij}} ^{n+\alpha}M_{ijkl} \max_{\gamma_{kl}} \quad (104.81)$$

as the maximum eigenvalue of the fourth order tensor $^{n+\alpha}M_{ijkl}$ and that value is a positive real number²¹, then from equations (104.78), (104.80), (104.81) and from the definition²² of Ψ_{ijkl} and Γ_{ijkl} , it follows:

$$\|\Gamma_{ijkl}^{-1} \Psi_{ijkl}\| = \left| \frac{1 - (1 - \alpha) \lambda \ (^{n+\alpha}\beta)}{1 + \alpha \lambda \ (^{n+\alpha}\beta)} \right| \quad (104.82)$$

which, when inserted in the equation (104.74) yields:

²¹because $^{n+\alpha}M_{ijkl}$ is derived from a convex potential function.

²² $\Psi_{ijkl} = D_{ijkl} - \lambda \ (1 - \alpha) \ (^{n+\alpha}M_{ijkl})$ and $\Gamma_{ijkl} = D_{ijkl} + \lambda \ \alpha \ (^{n+\alpha}M_{ijkl})$

$$\|d \left({}^{n+1}\sigma_{kl} \right) \| \leq \left| \frac{1 - (1 - \alpha) \lambda \left({}^{n+\alpha}\beta \right)}{1 + \alpha \lambda \left({}^{n+\alpha}\beta \right)} \right| \|d \left({}^n\sigma_{rs} \right) \| \quad (104.83)$$

Since it is said that ${}^{n+\alpha}\beta$ is a positive real number it follows that:

$$\left| \frac{1 - (1 - \alpha) \lambda \left({}^{n+\alpha}\beta \right)}{1 + \alpha \lambda \left({}^{n+\alpha}\beta \right)} \right| \leq \left| \frac{1 - \alpha}{\alpha} \right| \frac{{}^{n+\alpha}\beta}{n+\alpha\beta} = \left| \frac{1 - \alpha}{\alpha} \right| \quad (104.84)$$

and $\alpha \in [0, 1]$. The new form of equation (104.83) is now:

$$\|d \left({}^{n+1}\sigma_{kl} \right) \| \leq \left| \frac{1 - \alpha}{\alpha} \right| \|d \left({}^n\sigma_{rs} \right) \| \quad (104.85)$$

which in conjunction with the requirement for unconditional stability²³ yields:

$$\left| \frac{1 - \alpha}{\alpha} \right| \leq 1 \quad (104.86)$$

and so it is necessary that:

$$\alpha \geq \min \alpha = \frac{1}{2} \quad (104.87)$$

The conclusion is that the Generalized Midpoint rule is unconditionally stable for $\alpha \geq 1/2$. In the case when $\alpha < 1/2$ the Generalized Midpoint rule is only conditionally stable. To obtain a stability condition for $\alpha \leq 1/2$ one has to go back to equation (104.83), and we conclude that:

$$\left| \frac{1 - (1 - \alpha) \lambda \left({}^{n+\alpha}\beta \right)}{1 + \alpha \lambda \left({}^{n+\alpha}\beta \right)} \right| \leq 1 \Rightarrow \lambda \leq \frac{2}{\max \beta (1 - 2\alpha)} \text{ for } \alpha \leq \frac{1}{2} \quad (104.88)$$

and when $\alpha = 1/2$, then ${}^{critical}\lambda \rightarrow \infty$, and thus the unconditional stability is recovered.

²³that is $\|d \left({}^{n+1}\sigma_{ij} \right) \| \leq \|d \left({}^n\sigma_{ij} \right) \|\quad$

104.2.4 Crossing the Yield Surface

Midpoint rule algorithms in computational elasto-plasticity require²⁴ the evaluation of the intersection²⁵ stress. Despite the appeal of the closed form solution, as found in Bićanić (1989), and numerical iterative procedures as found in Marques (1984) and Nayak and Zienkiewicz (1972), for some yield criteria²⁶ the solution is not that simple to find. Special problems arise, even with the numerical iterative methods in the area of a apex. The apex area problems are connected to the derivatives of yield a function.

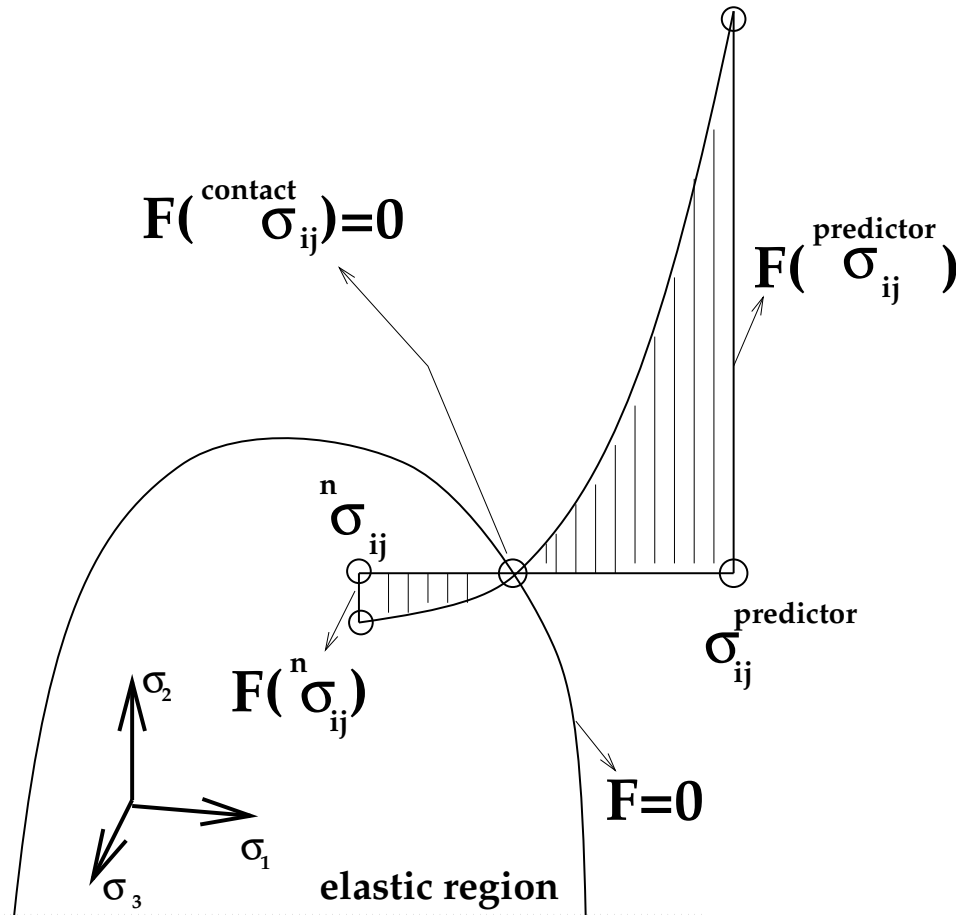


Figure 104.2: The pictorial representation of the intersection point problem in computational elasto-plasticity: which must be resolved for the Forward and Midpoint schemes

Having in mind the before mentioned problems, a different numerical scheme, that does not need derivatives, was sought for solving this problem. One possible solution was found in Press et al. (1988b)

²⁴except for the fully implicit Backward Euler algorithm.

²⁵contact, penetration point, i.e the point along the stress path where $F = 0$ or the point where stress state crosses from the elastic to the plastic region.

²⁶namely for the MRS-Lade elasto-plastic model.

in the form of an excellent algorithm that combines root bracketing, bisection, and inverse quadratic interpolation to converge from a neighborhood of a zero crossing. The algorithm was developed in the 1960s by van Wijngaarden, Dekker and others at the Mathematical Center in Amsterdam. The algorithm was later improved by Brent, and so it is better known as Brent's method. The method is guaranteed to converge, so long as the function²⁷ can be evaluated within the initial interval known to contain a root. While the other iterative methods that do not require derivatives²⁸ assume approximately linear behavior between two prior estimates, inverse quadratic interpolation uses three prior points to fit an inverse quadratic function²⁹, whose value at $y = 0$ is taken as the next estimate of the root x . Lagrange's classical formula for interpolating the polynomial of degree $N - 1$ through N points $y_1 = f(x_1)$, $y_2 = f(x_2)$, $\dots y_3 = f(x_3)$ is given by:

$$\begin{aligned}
 P(x) = & \frac{(x-x_2)(x-x_3)\cdots(x-x_N)}{(x_1-x_2)(x_1-x_3)\cdots(x_1-x_N)} y_1 + \\
 & + \frac{(x-x_1)(x-x_3)\cdots(x-x_N)}{(x_2-x_1)(x_2-x_3)\cdots(x_2-x_N)} y_2 + \cdots \\
 & \cdots + \frac{(x-x_1)(x-x_2)\cdots(x-x_N)}{(x_N-x_1)(x_N-x_3)\cdots(x_N-x_{N-1})} y_N
 \end{aligned} \tag{104.89}$$

If the three point pairs are $[a, f(a)]$, $[b, f(b)]$, $[c, f(c)]$, then the interpolating formula (104.89) yields:

$$\begin{aligned}
 x = & \frac{(y-f(a))(y-f(b))}{(f(c)-f(a))(f(c)-f(b))} c + \\
 & + \frac{(y-f(b))(y-f(c))}{(f(a)-f(b))(f(a)-f(c))} a + \\
 & + \frac{(y-f(c))(y-f(a))}{(f(b)-f(a))(f(b)-f(c))} b
 \end{aligned} \tag{104.90}$$

By setting $y = 0$, we obtain a result for the next root estimate, which can be written as:

$$x = b + \frac{\frac{f(b)}{f(a)} \left(\frac{f(a)}{f(c)} \left(\frac{f(b)}{f(c)} - \frac{f(a)}{f(c)} \right) (c-b) - \left(1 - \frac{f(b)}{f(c)} \right) (b-a) \right)}{\left(\frac{f(a)}{f(c)} - 1 \right) \left(\frac{f(b)}{f(c)} - 1 \right) \left(\frac{f(b)}{f(a)} - 1 \right)} \tag{104.91}$$

In practice b is the current best estimate of the root and the term:

²⁷in our case yield function $F(\sigma_{ij})$.

²⁸false position and secant method.

²⁹ x as a quadratic function of y .

$$\frac{\frac{f(b)}{f(a)} \left(\frac{f(a)}{f(c)} \left(\frac{f(b)}{f(c)} - \frac{f(a)}{f(c)} \right) (c-b) - \left(1 - \frac{f(b)}{f(c)} \right) (b-a) \right)}{\left(\frac{f(a)}{f(c)} - 1 \right) \left(\frac{f(b)}{f(c)} - 1 \right) \left(\frac{f(b)}{f(a)} - 1 \right)}$$

is a correction. Quadratic methods³⁰ work well only when the function behaves smoothly. However, they run serious risk of giving bad estimates of the next root or causing floating point overflows, if divided by a small number

$$\left(\frac{f(a)}{f(c)} - 1 \right) \left(\frac{f(b)}{f(c)} - 1 \right) \left(\frac{f(b)}{f(a)} - 1 \right) \approx 0$$

Brent's method prevents against this problem by maintaining brackets on the root and checking where the interpolation would land before carrying out the division. When the correction of type (104.92) would not land within bounds, or when the bounds are not collapsing rapidly enough, the algorithm takes a bisection step. Thus, Brent's method combines the sureness of bisection with the speed of a higher order method when appropriate.

104.2.5 Singularities in the Yield Surface

104.2.5.1 Corner Problem

Some yield criteria are defined with more than one yield surface³¹. We will restrict our attention to a two-surface yield criterion³². Koiter has shown in Koiter (1960) and Koiter (1953) that in the case when two yield surfaces are active, the plastic strain rate from equation (104.3) can be derived as follows:

$$d\epsilon_{ij}^p = d\lambda_{cone} {}^{cone}m_{ij}(\sigma_{ij}, q_*) + d\lambda_{cap} {}^{cap}m_{ij}(\sigma_{ij}, q_*) \quad (104.92)$$

where ${}^{cone}m_{ij}(\sigma_{ij}, q_*)$ and ${}^{cap}m_{ij}(\sigma_{ij}, q_*)$ are normals to the potential functions at a corner, which belongs to the yield functions that are active, i.e. F_{cone} and F_{cap} . We now observe that we have two non-negative plastic multipliers $d\lambda_{cone}$ and $d\lambda_{cap}$ instead of one. We must require that at the end of the loading step³³, neither of the two yield functions is violated. These multipliers $d\lambda_{cone}$ and $d\lambda_{cap}$ can be determined from the conditions:

³⁰Newton's method for example.

³¹for example MRS-Lade yield criterion has two surfaces.

³²having in mind MRS-Lade cone-cap yield criterion.

³³after stress correction, i.e. return to the yield surface(s).

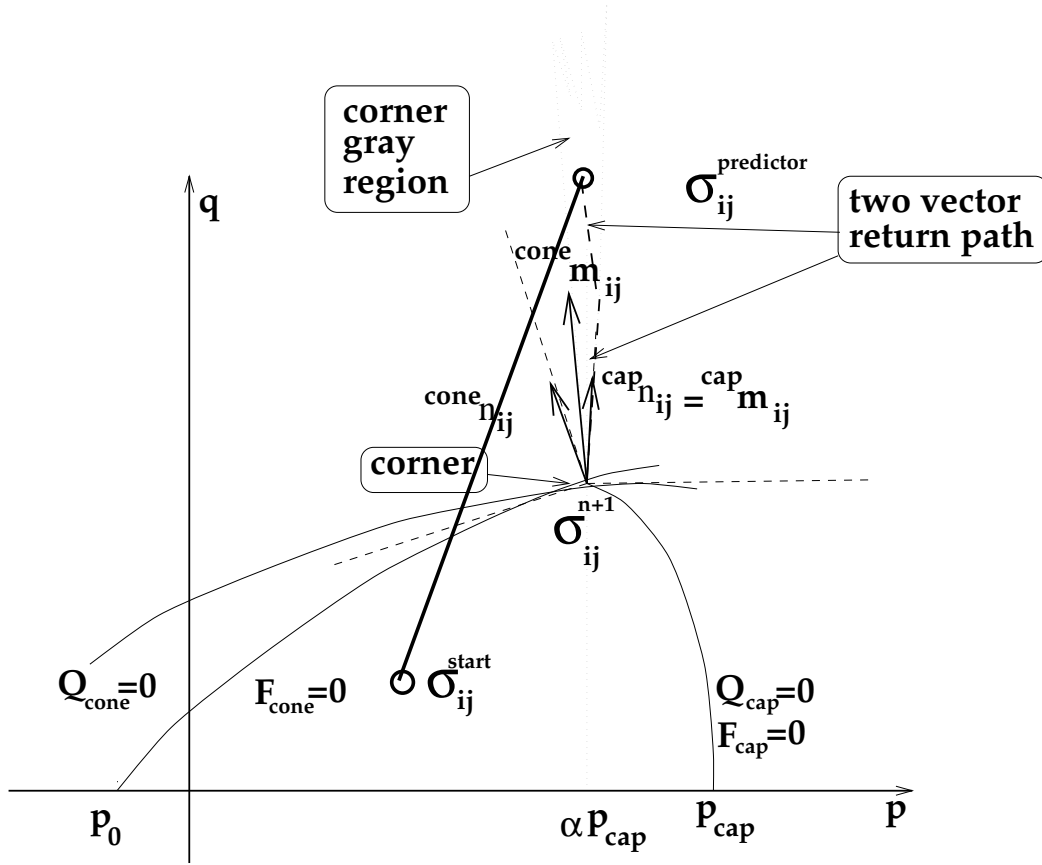


Figure 104.3: Pictorial representation of the corner point problem in computational elasto-plasticity: Yield surfaces with singular points

$$F_{cone} \left({}^{n+1}\sigma_{ij}, {}^{n+1}q_* \right) = 0 \quad (104.93)$$

$$F_{cap} \left({}^{n+1}\sigma_{ij}, {}^{n+1}q_* \right) = 0 \quad (104.94)$$

noting that by virtue of equation (104.92) we have at the corner singular point:

$${}^{n+1}\sigma_{ij} = {}^{pred}\sigma_{ij} - d\lambda_{cone} E_{ijkl} {}^{cone}m_{kl} - d\lambda_{cap} E_{ijkl} {}^{cap}m_{kl} \quad (104.95)$$

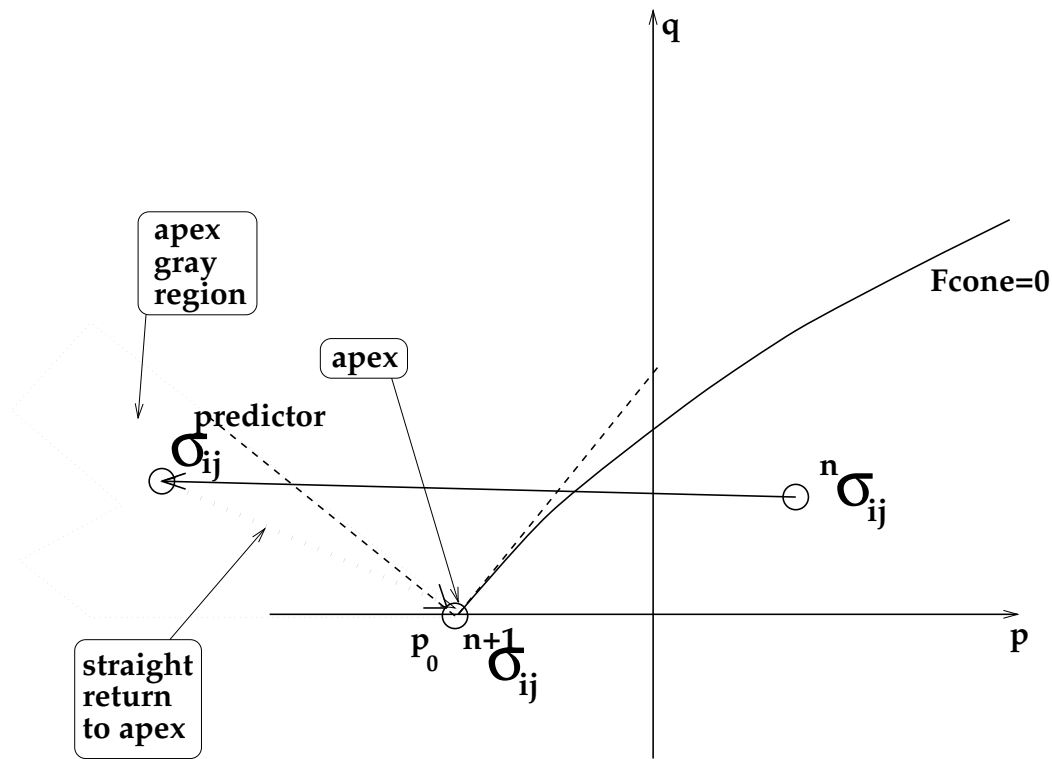


Figure 104.4: The pictorial representation of the apex point problem in computational elasto-plasticity: Yield surfaces with singular points

104.2.5.2 Apex Problem

The apex problem, as depicted in Figure (104.4) is solved in an empirical fashion. Rather than facing the complexity of solving a complex differential geometry problem³⁴ the stress point that is situated in the gray apex region is immediately returned to the apex point.

In the case when the hardening rule for the cone portion has developed to the stage that it affects the size of that cone portion of the yield criterion and not the position of intersection with the hydrostatic axis, then all stress returns from any part of apex gray region will be to the apex point itself. This strategy was used by Crisfield (1987). Nevertheless, the problem of integrating the rate equations in the apex gray region is readily solvable for the piecewise flat yield criteria³⁵ by using Koiter's conditions as found in Koiter (1960) and Koiter (1953). The apex problem for yield criteria that are smooth and differentiable everywhere except at the apex point, is solvable by means of differential geometry. Further

³⁴using Koiter's work described in Koiter (1960) and Koiter (1953) and the fact that the sum $d\epsilon_{ij}^p = \sum_k d\lambda_k (\partial F_k / \partial \sigma_{ij})$ can be transformed into the integral equation $d\epsilon_{ij}^p = \int d\lambda (\partial F / \partial \sigma_{ij})|_{\text{around apex}}$ where the integration should be carried out infinitesimally close to, but in the vicinity of the apex point.

³⁵Mohr - Coulomb for example.

work is needed for solving the problem, when the yield surface is not piecewise flat in the apex vicinity.

104.2.5.3 Influence Regions in Meridian Plane

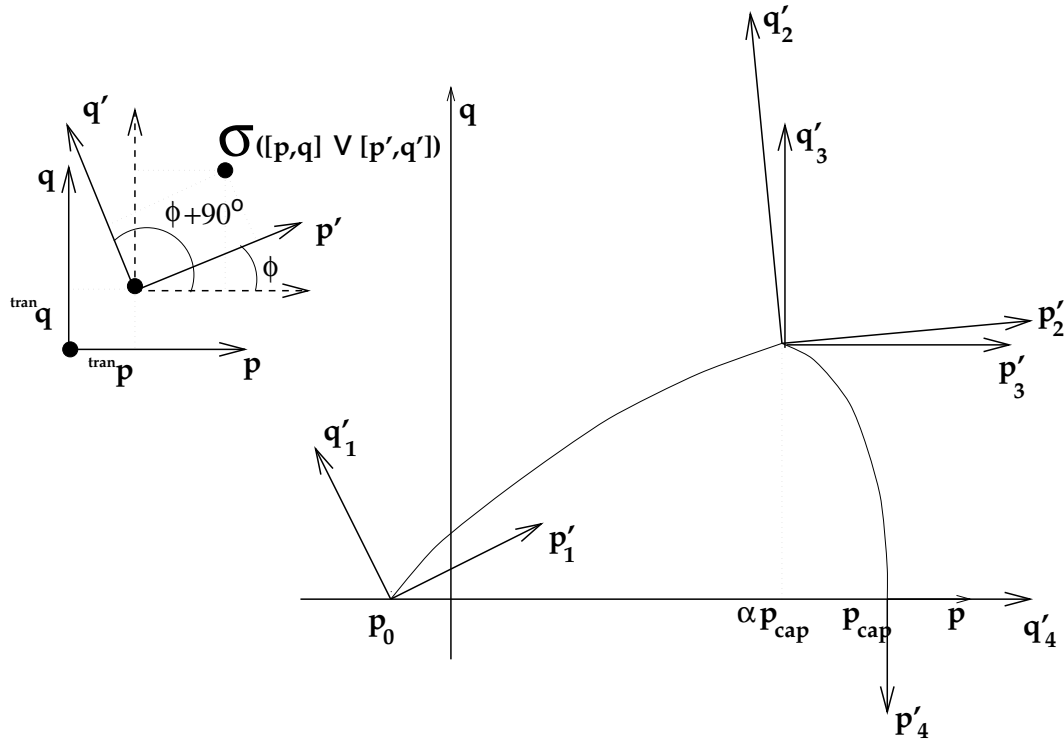


Figure 104.5: Influence regions in the meridian plane for the cone/cap surface of the MRS-Lade material model.

In order to define which surface is active and which is not for the current state of stress, a simple two dimensional analysis will be conducted. The fortunate fact for the MRS-Lade material model is that such an analysis can be conducted in the $p - q$ meridian plane, only, i.e. the value for θ can be "frozen". The concept is to calculate the stress invariants p , q and θ for the current state of stress³⁶, calculate the position of the apex and corner points in $p - q$ space for given the θ , calculate the two dimensional gradients at these points, perform linear transformation of the current stress state³⁷ to the new coordinate systems, and then check for the values of p'_i , $i = 1, 2, 3, 4$, where p'_i is the transformed p_i axis.

The angle ψ is defined as the angle between the p axis and the tangent to the potential function.

The gradients to the cone portion of the potential surface are defined as:

³⁶by using equations (104.138) and (104.139) as defined in section (104.4.4).

³⁷now in p , q and θ space.

$$\frac{\partial Q_{cone}}{\partial p} = -n \eta_{cone}$$

$$\frac{\partial Q_{cone}}{\partial q} = g(\theta) \left(1 + \frac{q}{q_a}\right)^m + \frac{g(\theta) m q \left(1 + \frac{q}{q_a}\right)^{-1+m}}{q_a}$$

The gradients of the cap portion of the yield/potential surface is defined as:

$$\frac{\partial Q_{cap}}{\partial p} = \frac{2(p - p_m)}{p_r^2}$$

$$\frac{\partial Q_{cap}}{\partial q} = \frac{2g(\theta)^2 q \left(1 + \frac{q}{q_a}\right)^{2m}}{f_r^2} + \frac{2g(\theta)^2 m q^2 \left(1 + \frac{q}{q_a}\right)^{-1+2m}}{f_r^2 q_a}$$

The vector of gradients in $p - q$ space is defined as:

$$\begin{bmatrix} \frac{\partial Q}{\partial p} \\ \frac{\partial Q}{\partial q} \end{bmatrix} \quad (104.96)$$

and the angle ϕ is calculated as:

$$\phi = \arctan \left(\frac{\left(\frac{\partial Q}{\partial p}\right)}{\left(\frac{\partial Q}{\partial q}\right)} \right) - 90^\circ \quad (104.97)$$

Care must be exercised with regard to which potential function is to be used in angle calculations. It should be mentioned that for the cap portion, the angle at the corner is $\phi = 0^\circ$, while at the tip of the cap, the angle is $\phi = -90^\circ$. If a new definition, as found in Ferrer (1992), is used for the cone potential function, where n is variable and $n \rightarrow 0$ as $p \rightarrow \alpha p_{cap}$, then the corner gray region is empty.

The linear transformation³⁸ between coordinate systems $p' - q'$ and $p - q$ is defined as:

$$\begin{bmatrix} p' \\ q' \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} \cos \phi & \sin \phi \\ -\sin \phi & \cos \phi \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} p - \text{tran}p \\ q - \text{tran}q \end{bmatrix} \quad (104.98)$$

and by using that linear transformation, one can check the region where our current stress state, in p, q and θ space, belongs. Figure (104.5) depicts the transformation scheme and the new coordinate systems at three important points³⁹.

³⁸translation and rotation.

³⁹at the apex point, corner point and the cap tip point.

104.3 A Forward Euler (Explicit) Algorithm

The explicit algorithm (Forward Euler) is based on using the starting point (the state stress σ_{ij}^n and internal variable space q_*^n on the yield surface) for finding all the relevant derivatives and variables.

The Explicit algorithm can be derived by starting from a first order Taylor expansion about starting point (σ_{ij}^n, q_*^n) :

$$\begin{aligned} F^{new} &= F^{old} + \frac{\partial F}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} \bigg|_n d(\sigma_{mn}) + \frac{\partial F}{\partial q_*} \bigg|_n dq_* = \\ &= n_{mn} d\sigma_{mn} + \xi_* h_* d\lambda = 0 \end{aligned} \quad (104.99)$$

From the differential form of equation (104.16) it follows:

$$\begin{aligned} d(f^E \sigma_{mn}) &= E_{mnpq} (d(\epsilon_{pq}) - d(\epsilon_{pq}^p)) = \\ &= E_{mnpq} d(\epsilon_{pq}) - E_{mnpq} d(\epsilon_{pq}^p) = E_{mnpq} d(\epsilon_{pq}) - E_{mnpq} d\lambda ({}^{cross}m_{pq}) \end{aligned}$$

so that equation (104.99) becomes:

$$n_{mn} E_{mnpq} d\epsilon_{pq} - n_{mn} E_{mnpq} d\lambda {}^n m_{pq} + \xi_* h_* d\lambda = 0$$

and it follows, after solving for $d\lambda$

$$d\lambda = \frac{n_{mn} E_{mnpq} d\epsilon_{pq}}{{}^{cross}n_{ab} E_{abcd} {}^{cross}m_{cd} - \xi_* h_*}$$

With this solution for $d\lambda$ one can obtain the increments in stress tensor and internal variables as

$$d\sigma_{mn} = E_{mnpq} d\epsilon_{pq} - E_{mnpq} \frac{n_{rs} E_{rstu} d\epsilon_{tu}}{{}^n n_{ab} E_{abcd} {}^n m_{cd} - \xi_A h_A} {}^n m_{pq} \quad (104.100)$$

$$dq_A = \left(\frac{n_{mn} E_{mnpq} d\epsilon_{pq}}{{}^{cross}n_{ab} E_{abcd} {}^{cross}m_{cd} - \xi_B h_B} \right) h_A \quad (104.101)$$

where ${}^n()$ denotes the starting elastic–plastic point for that increment. It should be noted that the explicit algorithm performs only one step of the computation and does not check on the equilibrium of the obtained solutions. This usually results in the slow drift of the stress–internal variable point from the yield surface for monotonic loading. It also results in spurious plastic deformations during elastic unloading for cyclic loading–unloading.

104.3.1 Continuum Tangent Stiffness Tensor.

The continuum tangent stiffness tensor (${}^{cont}E_{pqmn}^{ep}$) is obtained from the explicit (forward Euler) integration procedure (Jeremić and Sture, 1997):

$${}^{cont}E_{pqmn}^{ep} = E_{pqmn} - \frac{E_{pqkl} {}^n m_{kl} {}^n n_{ij} E_{ijmn}}{{}^n n_{ot} E_{otrs} {}^n m_{rs} - {}^n \xi_A h_A} \quad (104.102)$$

It is important to note that continuum tangent stiffness (${}^{cont}E_{pqmn}^{ep}$) posses minor symmetries (${}^{cont}E_{pqmn}^{ep} =$

$^{cont}E_{qpnm}^{ep} = ^{cont}E_{pqnm}^{ep}$), while major symmetry ($^{cont}E_{pqmn}^{ep} = ^{cont}E_{mnpq}^{ep}$), is only retained for associated elastic-plastic materials, when $n_{ij} \equiv m_{ij}$.

104.4 A Backward Euler (Implicit) Algorithm

In previous sections, the general theory of elasto-plasticity was presented. The accuracy and stability for the general Midpoint rule algorithm has been shown. In this chapter, the focus is on the Backward Euler algorithm, which is derived from the general Midpoint algorithm by setting $\alpha = 1$. The advantage of the Backward Euler scheme over other midpoint schemes is that the solution is sought by using the normal⁴⁰ at the final stress state. By implicitly assuming that such a stress state exists, the Backward Euler scheme is guaranteed to provide a solution, despite the size of the strain step⁴¹. However, it was shown in section (104.2.3.1) that the Backward Euler algorithm is only accurate to the first order.

The full implicit Backward Euler algorithm is based on the equation:

$$^{n+1}\sigma_{ij} = ^{pred}\sigma_{ij} - \Delta\lambda E_{ijkl} ^{n+1}m_{kl} \quad (104.103)$$

where $^{pred}\sigma_{ij} = E_{ijkl} \epsilon_{kl}$ is the elastic trial stress state, Q is the plastic potential function and $^{n+1}m_{kl} = \left. \frac{\partial Q}{\partial \sigma_{kl}} \right|_{n+1}$ is the gradient to the plastic potential function in the stress space at the final stress position, and

$$^{pred}\sigma_{ij} = ^n\sigma_{ij} + E_{ijkl} ^{pred}\Delta\epsilon_{kl} \quad (104.104)$$

is the elastic predicted (trial) stress state.

An initial estimate for the stress $^{n+1}\sigma_{ij}$ can be obtained using various other methods. This estimate generally does not satisfy the yield condition, so some kind of iterative scheme is necessary to return the stress to the yield surface.

104.4.1 Single Vector Return Algorithm.

If the predictor stress $^{pred}\sigma_{ij}$ is not in a corner or apex gray regions, a single vector return to the yield surface is possible. In order to derive such a scheme for a single vector return algorithm, a tensor of residuals r_{ij} will be defined as⁴²:

$$r_{ij} = \sigma_{ij} - \left(^{pred}\sigma_{ij} - \Delta\lambda E_{ijkl} m_{kl} \right) \quad (104.105)$$

⁴⁰ $m_{ij} = \partial Q / \partial \sigma_{ij}$

⁴¹large strain step increments were tested, the scheme converged to the solution even for deviatoric strain steps of 20% in magnitude.

⁴²By default at increment $n + 1$, and $^{n+1}()$ is omitted for simplicity.

This tensor represents the difference between the current stress state σ_{ij} and the Backward Euler stress state $^{pred}\sigma_{ij} - \Delta\lambda E_{ijkl} m_{kl}$.

The trial stress state $^{pred}\sigma_{ij}$ is kept fixed during the iteration process. The first order Taylor series expansion can be applied to Equation 104.105 to obtain the new residual $^{new}r_{ij}$ from the old one $^{old}r_{ij}$

$$^{new}r_{ij} = ^{old}r_{ij} + d\sigma_{ij} + d(\Delta\lambda) E_{ijkl} m_{kl} + \Delta\lambda E_{ijkl} \left(\frac{\partial m_{kl}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} d\sigma_{mn} + \frac{\partial m_{kl}}{\partial q_A} dq_A \right) \quad (104.106)$$

where $d\sigma_{ij}$ is the change in σ_{ij} , $d(\Delta\lambda)$ is the change in $\Delta\lambda$, and $\frac{\partial m_{kl}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} d\sigma_{mn} + \frac{\partial m_{kl}}{\partial q_A} dq_A$ is the change in m_{kl} . The goal is let $^{new}r_{ij} = \emptyset$, so one can write

$$\emptyset = ^{old}r_{ij} + d\sigma_{ij} + d(\Delta\lambda) E_{ijkl} m_{kl} + \Delta\lambda E_{ijkl} \left(\frac{\partial m_{kl}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} d\sigma_{mn} + \frac{\partial m_{kl}}{\partial q_A} dq_A \right) \quad (104.107)$$

Similarly,

$$q_A = ^nq_A + \Delta\lambda h_A \quad (104.108)$$

r_A will be defined as:

$$r_A = q_A - (^nq_A + \Delta\lambda h_A) \quad (104.109)$$

and nq_A is kept fixed during iteration, that

$$\emptyset = ^{old}r_A + dq_A - d(\Delta\lambda) h_A - \Delta\lambda \left(\frac{\partial h_A}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} d\sigma_{ij} + \frac{\partial h_A}{\partial q_B} dq_B \right) \quad (104.110)$$

From equation 104.107 and 104.110, one obtains

$$\begin{aligned} & \begin{bmatrix} I_{ijmn}^s + \Delta\lambda E_{ijkl} \frac{\partial m_{kl}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} & \Delta\lambda E_{ijkl} \frac{\partial m_{kl}}{\partial q_A} \\ -\Delta\lambda \frac{\partial h_A}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} & \delta_{AB} - \Delta\lambda \frac{\partial h_A}{\partial q_B} \end{bmatrix} \begin{Bmatrix} d\sigma_{mn} \\ dq_B \end{Bmatrix} \\ & + d(\Delta\lambda) \begin{Bmatrix} E_{ijkl} m_{kl} \\ -h_A \end{Bmatrix} + \begin{Bmatrix} ^{old}r_{ij} \\ ^{old}r_A \end{Bmatrix} = \emptyset \end{aligned} \quad (104.111)$$

Since $f(\sigma_{ij}, q_A) = 0$, one obtains

$$\emptyset = ^{old}f + n_{mn} d\sigma_{mn} + \xi_B dq_B \quad (104.112)$$

From equations 104.111 and 104.112,

$$\begin{aligned} & ^{old}f - \begin{Bmatrix} n_{mn} & \xi_B \end{Bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} I_{ijmn}^s + \Delta\lambda E_{ijkl} \frac{\partial m_{kl}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} & \Delta\lambda E_{ijkl} \frac{\partial m_{kl}}{\partial q_A} \\ -\Delta\lambda \frac{\partial h_A}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} & \delta_{AB} - \Delta\lambda \frac{\partial h_A}{\partial q_B} \end{bmatrix}^{-1} \begin{Bmatrix} ^{old}r_{ij} \\ ^{old}r_A \end{Bmatrix} \\ & \begin{Bmatrix} n_{mn} & \xi_B \end{Bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} I_{ijmn}^s + \Delta\lambda E_{ijkl} \frac{\partial m_{kl}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} & \Delta\lambda E_{ijkl} \frac{\partial m_{kl}}{\partial q_A} \\ -\Delta\lambda \frac{\partial h_A}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} & \delta_{AB} - \Delta\lambda \frac{\partial h_A}{\partial q_B} \end{bmatrix}^{-1} \begin{Bmatrix} E_{ijkl} m_{kl} \\ -h_A \end{Bmatrix} \end{aligned} \quad (104.113)$$

The iteration of $\Delta\lambda$ is then

$$\Delta\lambda^{k+1} = \Delta\lambda^k + d(\Delta\lambda)^k \quad (104.114)$$

The iterative procedure is continued until the yield criterion $f = 0$, $\|r_{ij}\| = \emptyset$, and $\|r_A\| = \emptyset$ are satisfied within some tolerances at the final stress state ⁴³.

In Equation 104.113, the generalized matrix \mathbb{C} , which is defined by

$$\mathbb{C} = \begin{bmatrix} I_{ijmn}^s + \Delta\lambda E_{ijkl} \frac{\partial m_{kl}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} & \Delta\lambda E_{ijkl} \frac{\partial m_{kl}}{\partial q_A} \\ -\Delta\lambda \frac{\partial h_A}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} & \delta_{AB} - \Delta\lambda \frac{\partial h_A}{\partial q_B} \end{bmatrix}^{-1} \quad (104.115)$$

plays an important role in the implicit algorithm. It should be mentioned here that the above definition is a simplified expression for very general model with various isotropic and kinematic hardening. Specifically, if there is no hardening,

$$\mathbb{C} = \left[I_{ijmn}^s + \Delta\lambda E_{ijkl} \frac{\partial m_{kl}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} \right]^{-1} \quad (104.116)$$

If there is only one isotropic internal variable q ,

$$\mathbb{C} = \begin{bmatrix} I_{ijmn}^s + \Delta\lambda E_{ijkl} \frac{\partial m_{kl}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} & \Delta\lambda E_{ijkl} \frac{\partial m_{kl}}{\partial q} \\ -\Delta\lambda \frac{\partial h}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} & 1 - \Delta\lambda \frac{\partial h}{\partial q} \end{bmatrix}^{-1} \quad (104.117)$$

For only one kinematic internal variable α_{ij} ,

$$\mathbb{C} = \begin{bmatrix} I_{ijmn}^s + \Delta\lambda E_{ijkl} \frac{\partial m_{kl}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} & \Delta\lambda E_{ijkl} \frac{\partial m_{kl}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} \\ -\Delta\lambda \frac{\partial h_{mn}}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} & I_{ijmn}^s - \Delta\lambda \frac{\partial h_{mn}}{\partial \alpha_{ij}} \end{bmatrix}^{-1} \quad (104.118)$$

For one isotropic variable q and one kinematic variable α_{ij} ,

$$\mathbb{C} = \begin{bmatrix} I_{ijmn}^s + \Delta\lambda E_{ijkl} \frac{\partial m_{kl}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} & \Delta\lambda E_{ijkl} \frac{\partial m_{kl}}{\partial q} & \Delta\lambda E_{ijkl} \frac{\partial m_{kl}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} \\ -\Delta\lambda \frac{\partial h}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} & 1 - \Delta\lambda \frac{\partial h}{\partial q} & -\Delta\lambda \frac{\partial h}{\partial \alpha_{ij}} \\ -\Delta\lambda \frac{\partial h_{mn}}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} & -\Delta\lambda \frac{\partial h_{mn}}{\partial q} & I_{ijmn}^s - \Delta\lambda \frac{\partial h_{mn}}{\partial \alpha_{ij}} \end{bmatrix}^{-1} \quad (104.119)$$

or for two kinematic variables z_{ij} and α_{ij} ,

$$\mathbb{C} = \begin{bmatrix} I_{ijmn}^s + \Delta\lambda E_{ijkl} \frac{\partial m_{kl}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} & \Delta\lambda E_{ijkl} \frac{\partial m_{kl}}{\partial z_{mn}} & \Delta\lambda E_{ijkl} \frac{\partial m_{kl}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} \\ -\Delta\lambda \frac{\partial h^z}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} & I_{ijmn}^s - \Delta\lambda \frac{\partial h^z}{\partial z_{mn}} & -\Delta\lambda \frac{\partial h^z}{\partial \alpha_{ij}} \\ -\Delta\lambda \frac{\partial h_{mn}^\alpha}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} & -\Delta\lambda \frac{\partial h_{mn}^\alpha}{\partial z_{mn}} & I_{ijmn}^s - \Delta\lambda \frac{\partial h_{mn}^\alpha}{\partial \alpha_{ij}} \end{bmatrix}^{-1} \quad (104.120)$$

If we define

$$\mathbf{n} = \begin{Bmatrix} n_{mn} \\ \xi_B \end{Bmatrix} \quad (104.121)$$

⁴³ $\|\cdot\|$ is some normal of the tensor

$$\mathbf{m} = \begin{Bmatrix} E_{ijkl}m_{kl} \\ -h_A \end{Bmatrix} \quad (104.122)$$

$${}^{old}\mathbf{r} = \begin{Bmatrix} {}^{old}\sigma_{ij} \\ {}^{old}r_A \end{Bmatrix} \quad (104.123)$$

Equation 104.114 can be simplified as

$$d(\Delta\lambda) = \frac{{}^{old}f - \mathbf{n}^T \mathbb{C} {}^{old}\mathbf{r}}{\mathbf{n}^T \mathbb{C} \mathbf{M}} \quad (104.124)$$

and

$$\begin{Bmatrix} d\sigma_{mn} \\ dq_B \end{Bmatrix} = -\mathbb{C} \left({}^{old}\mathbf{r} + d(\Delta\lambda)\mathbf{m} \right) \quad (104.125)$$

104.4.2 Backward Euler Algorithms: Starting Points

Some remarks are necessary in order to clarify the Backward Euler Algorithm. It is a well known fact that the rate of convergence of the Newton - Raphson Method, or even obtaining convergence at all, is closely tied to the starting point for the iterative procedure. Bad initial or starting points might lead our algorithm to an oscillating solution, i.e. the algorithm does not converge. In the following, starting points for the Newton - Raphson iterative procedure will be established for one- and two-vector return algorithms.

104.4.2.1 Single Vector Return Algorithm Starting Point.

One of the proposed starting points (Crisfield, 1991) uses the normal at the elastic trial point⁴⁴ $^{pred}\sigma_{ij}$. A first order Taylor expansion about point $^{pred}\sigma_{ij}$ yields:

$$\begin{aligned} ^{pred}F^{new} &= ^{pred}F^{old} + \left. \frac{\partial F}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} \right|_{pred} d \left(^{pred}\sigma_{mn} \right) + \left. \frac{\partial F}{\partial q_A} \right|_{pred} dq_A = \\ &= ^{pred}F^{old} + ^{pred}n_{mn} d\sigma_{mn} + \xi_A h_A d\lambda = 0 \end{aligned} \quad (104.126)$$

It is assumed that the total incremental strain ϵ_{kl} is applied in order to reach the point $^{pred}\sigma_{ij}$, i.e. $^{pred}\sigma_{ij} = E_{ijkl} \epsilon_{kl}$ so that any further stress "relaxation" toward the yield surface takes place under zero total strain condition $\epsilon_{kl} = \emptyset$. From the differential form of equation (104.16) it follows:

$$\begin{aligned} d \left(^{pred}\sigma_{mn} \right) &= E_{mnpq} \left(d \left(^{pred}\epsilon_{pq} \right) - d \left(^{pred}\epsilon_{pq}^p \right) \right) = \\ &= -E_{mnpq} d \left(^{pred}\epsilon_{pq}^p \right) = -E_{mnpq} d\lambda \left(^{pred}m_{pq} \right) \end{aligned}$$

and equation (104.126) becomes:

$$^{pred}F^{old} - ^{pred}n_{mn} E_{mnpq} d\lambda ^{pred}m_{pq} + \xi_A h_A d\lambda = 0$$

and it follows:

$$d\lambda = \frac{^{pred}F^{old}}{^{pred}n_{mn} E_{mnpq} ^{pred}m_{pq} - \xi_A h_A}$$

With this solution for $d\lambda$ we can obtain the starting point for the Newton-Raphson iterative procedure

$$^{start}\sigma_{mn} = E_{mnpq} ^{pred}\epsilon_{pq} - E_{mnpq} \frac{^{pred}F^{old}}{^{pred}n_{mn} E_{mnpq} ^{pred}m_{pq} - \xi_A h_A} ^{pred}m_{pq} \quad (104.127)$$

This starting point in six dimensional stress space will in general not satisfy the yield condition $F = 0$, but it will provide a good initial guess for the upcoming Newton-Raphson iterative procedure.

It should be mentioned, however, that this scheme for returning to the yield surface is the well known Radial Return Algorithm, if the yield criterion under consideration is of the von Mises type. In the special case the normal at the elastic trial point $^{pred}\sigma_{ij}$ coincides with the normal at the final stress state $^{n+1}\sigma_{ij}$, the return is exact, i.e. the yield condition is satisfied in one step.

Another possible and readily available starting point can be obtained by applying one Forward Euler step⁴⁵. To be able to use the Forward Euler integration scheme, an intersection point has to be found. The procedure for calculating intersection points is given in section (104.2.4).

⁴⁴I have named this scheme as semi Backward Euler scheme.

⁴⁵or more steps for really large strain increments, for example over 10% in deviatoric direction. What has actually been done is to divide the θ region into several parts and depending on the curvature of the yield surface in deviatoric plane, use different schemes and different number of subincrements (the more curved, the more subincrements) to get the first, good initial guess. In the region around $\theta = 0$, one step of the semi Backward Euler scheme is appropriate, but close to $\theta = \pi/3$ the Forward Euler subincrementation works better.

A first order Taylor expansion about intersection point $^{cross}\sigma_{ij}$ yields:

$$\begin{aligned} F^{new} &= F^{old} + \frac{\partial F}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} \Big|_{cross} d(^{cross}\sigma_{mn}) + \frac{\partial F}{\partial q_A} \Big|_{cross} dq_A = \\ &= ^{cross}n_{mn} d\sigma_{mn} + \xi_A h_A d\lambda = 0 \end{aligned} \quad (104.128)$$

From the differential form of equation (104.16) it follows:

$$\begin{aligned} d(^{fE}\sigma_{mn}) &= E_{mnpq} (d(\epsilon_{pq}) - d(\epsilon_{pq}^p)) = \\ &= E_{mnpq} d(\epsilon_{pq}) - E_{mnpq} d(\epsilon_{pq}^p) = E_{mnpq} d(\epsilon_{pq}) - E_{mnpq} d\lambda (^{cross}m_{pq}) \end{aligned}$$

and equation (104.128) becomes:

$$-^{cross}n_{mn} E_{mnpq} d\epsilon_{pq} - ^{cross}n_{mn} E_{mnpq} d\lambda ^{cross}m_{pq} + \xi_A h_A d\lambda = 0$$

and it follows

$$d\lambda = \frac{^{cross}n_{mn} E_{mnpq} d\epsilon_{pq}}{^{cross}n_{mn} E_{mnpq} ^{cross}m_{pq} - \xi_A h_A}$$

With this solution for $d\lambda$ we can obtain the starting point for the Newton-Raphson iterative procedure

$$^{start}\sigma_{mn} = E_{mnpq} d\epsilon_{pq} - E_{mnpq} \frac{^{cross}n_{rs} E_{rstu} d\epsilon_{tu}}{^{cross}n_{ab} E_{abcd} ^{cross}m_{cd} - \xi_A h_A} ^{cross}m_{pq} \quad (104.129)$$

This starting point in six-dimensional stress space will again not satisfy the yield condition⁴⁶ $F = 0$, but will provide a good initial estimate for the upcoming Newton-Raphson iterative procedure.

104.4.3 Consistent Tangent Stiffness Tensor

The final goal in deriving the Backward Euler scheme for integration of elasto-plastic constitutive equations is to use that scheme in finite element computations. If the Newton – Raphson iterative scheme is used at the global equilibrium level then the use of the so called traditional tangent stiffness tensor⁴⁷ E_{ijkl}^{ep} destroys the quadratic rate of asymptotic convergence of the iterative scheme. In order to preserve such a quadratic rate, a consistent, also called algorithmic, tangent stiffness tensor is derived. The consistent tangent stiffness tensor make use of derivatives of direction⁴⁸ normal to the potential function, and they are derived at the final, final at each iteration, that converges to the final stress point on the yield surface, stress point. The traditional forward scheme has a constant derivative, m_{ij} that is evaluated at the intersection point.

⁴⁶except for the yield criteria that have flat yield surfaces (in the stress invariant space) so that the first order Taylor linear expansion, is exact.

⁴⁷the one obtained with the Forward Euler method, i.e. where parameter $\alpha = 0$.

⁴⁸ $m_{ij} = \partial Q / \partial \sigma_{ij}$, i.e. $\partial m_{ij} / \partial \sigma_{kl} = \partial^2 Q / \partial \sigma_{ij} \partial \sigma_{kl}$.

It appears that [Simo and Taylor \(1985\)](#) and [Runesson and Samuelsson \(1985\)](#) have first derived the consistent tangent stiffness tensor. Other interesting articles on the subject can be found in [Simo and Taylor \(1986\)](#), [Simo and Govindjee \(1988\)](#), [Jetteur \(1986\)](#), [Braudel et al. \(1986\)](#), [Crisfield \(1987\)](#), [Ramm and Matzenmiller \(1988\)](#) and [Mitchell and Owen \(1988\)](#). As a consequence of consistency, the use of the consistent tangent stiffness tensor significantly improves the convergence characteristics of the overall equilibrium iterations, if a Newton - Raphson scheme is used for the latter. Use of the consistent tangent stiffness tensor yields a quadratic convergence rate of Newton - Raphson equilibrium iterations. In what follows, two derivations are given, namely the consistent tangent stiffness tensor for single- and two-vector return algorithms.

The concept of consistent linearization was introduced by [Hughes and Pister \(1978\)](#), while detailed explanation is given by [Simo and Hughes \(1998\)](#). The consistent tangent stiffness leads to quadratic convergence rates at global level.

It should be mentioned that there are various 'equivalent' forms of consistent tangent stiffness depending on the specific implicit algorithm equations. For instance, [Simo and Hughes \(1998\)](#), and [Belytschko et al. \(2001\)](#) derived the consistent tangent stiffness by taking current plastic strain as unknown and seeking its derivatives in the stress space; [Pérez-Foguet and Huerta \(1997\)](#) and [Pérez-Foguet et al. \(2000\)](#) used the numerical differentiation to calculate the consistent tangent stiffness in a compact matrix-vector form; [Choi \(2004\)](#) adopted the compact matrix-vector form by [Pérez-Foguet and Huerta \(1997\)](#) and [Pérez-Foguet et al. \(2000\)](#) but taking current plastic strain as unknown and seeking its derivatives in the elastic strain space. Slightly different from the above strategies, in this work the implicit algorithm is adopting the traditional form but taking current stress as unknown and seeking its derivatives in the stress space. Provided these differences, the consistent tangent stiffness in this work is slightly different from those in the above work.

104.4.3.1 Single Vector Return Algorithm.

In implicit algorithm, a very important advantage is that it may lead to consistent (algorithmic) tangent stiffness (Equation 104.137). The concept of consistent linearization was introduced in [Hughes and Pister \(1978\)](#), more details on consistent tangent stiffness were explained in [Simo and Hughes \(1998\)](#). The consistent tangent stiffness leads to quadratic convergence rates at global level.

It should be mentioned that there are various 'equivalent' forms of consistent tangent stiffness depending on the specific implicit algorithm equations. For instance, [Simo and Hughes \(1998\)](#), and [Belytschko et al. \(2001\)](#) derived the consistent tangent stiffness by taking current plastic strain as unknown and seeking its derivatives in the stress space; [Pérez-Foguet and Huerta \(1997\)](#) and [Pérez-Foguet et al. \(2000\)](#) used the numerical differentiation to calculate the consistent tangent stiffness in a

compact matrix-vector form; Choi (2004) adopted the compact matrix-vector form by Pérez-Foguet and Huerta (1997) and Pérez-Foguet et al. (2000) but taking current plastic strain as unknown and seeking its derivatives in the elastic strain space. Slightly different from the above strategies, in this work (section 104.4) the implicit algorithm is adopting the traditional form but taking current stress as unknown and seeking its derivatives in the stress space. Provided these differences, the consistent tangent stiffness in this work is slightly different from those in the above work. The detail derivation will be followed.

When seeking the algorithmic tangent stiffness, we look into the explicit expression of $d\sigma_{ij}/d\epsilon_{mn}^{pred}$. At the same time, the internal variables are initialized the values at the previous time step, in other words, they are fixed within the time step when seeking the algorithmic tangent stiffness.

Linearize Equation 104.103, one obtains

$$d\sigma_{ij} = E_{ijkl} d\epsilon_{kl}^{pred} - d(\Delta\lambda) E_{ijkl} m_{kl} - \Delta\lambda E_{ijkl} \left(\frac{\partial m_{kl}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} d\sigma_{mn} + \frac{\partial m_{kl}}{\partial q_A} dq_A \right) \quad (104.130)$$

Similarly, linearize Equation 104.108, one obtains

$$dq_A = d(\Delta\lambda) h_A + \Delta\lambda \left(\frac{\partial h_A}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} d\sigma_{ij} + \frac{\partial h_A}{\partial q_B} dq_B \right) \quad (104.131)$$

From equation 104.130 and 104.131, one obtains

$$\begin{bmatrix} I_{ijmn}^{s} + \Delta\lambda E_{ijkl} \frac{\partial m_{kl}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} & \Delta\lambda E_{ijkl} \frac{\partial m_{kl}}{\partial q_A} \\ -\Delta\lambda \frac{\partial h_A}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} & \delta_{AB} - \Delta\lambda \frac{\partial h_A}{\partial q_B} \end{bmatrix} \begin{Bmatrix} d\sigma_{mn} \\ dq_B \end{Bmatrix} + d(\Delta\lambda) \begin{Bmatrix} E_{ijkl} m_{kl} \\ -h_A \end{Bmatrix} = \begin{Bmatrix} E_{ijkl} d\epsilon_{kl}^{pred} \\ 0 \end{Bmatrix} \quad (104.132)$$

If one use the definitions of 104.115, 104.122 and 104.121, Equation 104.132 can be simplified to

$$\mathbb{C}^{-1} \begin{Bmatrix} d\sigma_{mn} \\ dq_B \end{Bmatrix} + d(\Delta\lambda) \mathbf{m} = \begin{Bmatrix} E_{ijkl} d\epsilon_{kl}^{pred} \\ 0 \end{Bmatrix} \quad (104.133)$$

Linearize the yield function $f(\sigma_{ij}, q_A) = 0$, one obtains

$$n_{mn} d\sigma_{mn} + \xi_B dq_B = 0 \quad (104.134)$$

or in a simplified form

$$\mathbf{n}^T \begin{Bmatrix} d\sigma_{mn} \\ dq_B \end{Bmatrix} = 0 \quad (104.135)$$

From Equations 104.133 and 104.135, one obtain

$$d(\Delta\lambda) = \frac{\mathbf{n}^T \mathbb{C}}{\mathbf{n}^T \mathbb{C} \mathbf{m}} \begin{Bmatrix} E_{ijmn} d\epsilon_{mn}^{pred} \\ 0 \end{Bmatrix} \quad (104.136)$$

Substitute expression 104.136 into 104.133, one obtains

$$\begin{Bmatrix} d\sigma_{ij} \\ dq_A \end{Bmatrix} = \left\{ \mathbb{C} - \frac{\mathbb{C} \mathbf{m} \mathbf{n}^T \mathbb{C}}{\mathbf{n}^T \mathbb{C} \mathbf{m}} \right\} \begin{Bmatrix} E_{ijmn} d\epsilon_{mn}^{pred} \\ 0 \end{Bmatrix} \quad (104.137)$$

This equation gives the explicit expression of the consistent tangent stiffness $d\sigma_{ij}/d\epsilon_{mn}^{pred}$ for the implicit algorithm.

From section 104.4, if there are interactions between internal variables, the implicit algorithm will become very complicated. Simple models (e.g. von Mises model, or sometimes termed as J_2 model) have been proved efficient and good performance by the implicit algorithm (Simo and Hughes, 1998). Evidently, the implicit algorithm is mathematically based on the Newton-Raphson nonlinear equation solving method as well as the Eulerian backward integration method. Theoretically, the Newton-Raphson method may have quadratic convergence rate. However, Newton-Raphson method is not unconditional stable, and sometimes the iteration will diverge (Press et al., 1988a). Any bad starting point, non-continuous derivatives around solution, high nonlinearity, and interactions between internal variables, will deteriorate the implicit algorithm performance. A complicated model cannot guarantee good performance or quadratic convergence by the implicit algorithm Crisfield (1997a). The task to obtain the analytical expressions (Equations 104.116 to 104.120) may prove exceeding laborious for complicated plasticity models Simo and Hughes (1998).

104.4.4 Gradients to the Potential Function

In the derivation of the Backward Euler algorithm and the Consistent Tangent Matrix it is necessary to derive the first and the second derivatives of the potential function. The function Q is the function of the stress tensor σ_{ij} and the plastic variable tensor q_A . Derivatives with respect to the stress tensor σ_{ij} and plastic variable tensor q_A are given here. It is assumed that any stress state can be represented with the three stress invariants p , q and θ given in the following form:

$$p = -\frac{1}{3}I_1 \quad q = \sqrt{3J_{2D}} \quad \cos 3\theta = \frac{3\sqrt{3}}{2} \frac{J_{3D}}{\sqrt{(J_{2D})^3}} \quad (104.138)$$

$$I_1 = \sigma_{kk} \quad J_{2D} = \frac{1}{2}s_{ij}s_{ij} \quad J_{3D} = \frac{1}{3}s_{ij}s_{jk}s_{ki} \quad s_{ij} = \sigma_{ij} - \frac{1}{3}\sigma_{kk}\delta_{ij} \quad (104.139)$$

Stresses are here chosen as positive in tension. The definition of Lode's angle θ in equation (104.138) implies that $\theta = 0$ defines the meridian of conventional triaxial extension (CTE), while $\theta = \pi/3$ denotes the meridian of conventional triaxial compression (CTC).

The Potential Function is given in the following form:

$$Q = Q(p, q, \theta) \quad (104.140)$$

The complete derivation of the closed form gradients is given in Appendix 703.

104.4.4.1 Analytical Gradients

The first derivative of the function Q in stress space is:

$$\frac{\partial Q}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} = \frac{\partial Q}{\partial p} \frac{\partial p}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} + \frac{\partial Q}{\partial q} \frac{\partial q}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} + \frac{\partial Q}{\partial \theta} \frac{\partial \theta}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} \quad (104.141)$$

and subsequently the first derivatives of the chosen stress invariants are

$$\frac{\partial p}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} = -\frac{1}{3} \delta_{ij} \quad (104.142)$$

$$\frac{\partial q}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} = \frac{3}{2} \frac{1}{q} s_{ij} \quad (104.143)$$

$$\frac{\partial \theta}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} = \frac{3}{2} \frac{\cos(3\theta)}{q^2 \sin(3\theta)} s_{ij} - \frac{9}{2} \frac{1}{q^3 \sin(3\theta)} t_{ij} \quad (104.144)$$

where:

$$t_{ij} = \frac{\partial J_{3D}}{\partial \sigma_{ij}}$$

The second derivative of the function Q in stress space is

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial^2 Q}{\partial \sigma_{pq} \partial \sigma_{mn}} = & \left(\frac{\partial^2 Q}{\partial p^2} \frac{\partial p}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} + \frac{\partial^2 Q}{\partial p \partial q} \frac{\partial q}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} + \frac{\partial^2 Q}{\partial p \partial \theta} \frac{\partial \theta}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} \right) \frac{\partial p}{\partial \sigma_{pq}} + \frac{\partial Q}{\partial p} \frac{\partial^2 p}{\partial \sigma_{pq} \partial \sigma_{mn}} + \\ & + \left(\frac{\partial^2 Q}{\partial q \partial p} \frac{\partial p}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} + \frac{\partial^2 Q}{\partial q^2} \frac{\partial q}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} + \frac{\partial^2 Q}{\partial q \partial \theta} \frac{\partial \theta}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} \right) \frac{\partial q}{\partial \sigma_{pq}} + \frac{\partial Q}{\partial q} \frac{\partial^2 q}{\partial \sigma_{pq} \partial \sigma_{mn}} + \\ & + \left(\frac{\partial^2 Q}{\partial \theta \partial p} \frac{\partial p}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} + \frac{\partial^2 Q}{\partial \theta \partial q} \frac{\partial q}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} + \frac{\partial^2 Q}{\partial \theta^2} \frac{\partial \theta}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} \right) \frac{\partial \theta}{\partial \sigma_{pq}} + \frac{\partial Q}{\partial \theta} \frac{\partial^2 \theta}{\partial \sigma_{pq} \partial \sigma_{mn}} \end{aligned} \quad (104.145)$$

and the second derivatives of the stress invariants are

$$\frac{\partial^2 p}{\partial \sigma_{pq} \partial \sigma_{mn}} = 0 \quad (104.146)$$

$$\frac{\partial^2 q}{\partial \sigma_{pq} \partial \sigma_{mn}} = \frac{3}{2} \frac{1}{q} \left(\delta_{pm} \delta_{nq} - \frac{1}{3} \delta_{pq} \delta_{nm} \right) - \frac{9}{4} \frac{1}{q^3} s_{mn} s_{pq} \quad (104.147)$$

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial^2 \theta}{\partial \sigma_{pq} \partial \sigma_{mn}} = & - \left(\frac{9}{2} \frac{\cos 3\theta}{q^4 \sin(3\theta)} + \frac{27}{4} \frac{\cos 3\theta}{q^4 \sin^3 3\theta} \right) s_{pq} s_{mn} + \frac{81}{4} \frac{1}{q^5 \sin^3 3\theta} s_{pq} t_{mn} + \\ & + \left(\frac{81}{4} \frac{1}{q^5 \sin 3\theta} + \frac{81}{4} \frac{\cos^2 3\theta}{q^5 \sin^3 3\theta} \right) t_{pq} s_{mn} - \frac{243}{4} \frac{\cos 3\theta}{q^6 \sin^3 3\theta} t_{pq} t_{mn} + \\ & + \frac{3}{2} \frac{\cos(3\theta)}{q^2 \sin(3\theta)} p_{pqmn} - \frac{9}{2} \frac{1}{q^3 \sin(3\theta)} w_{pqmn} \end{aligned} \quad (104.148)$$

where:

$$w_{pqmn} = \frac{\partial t_{pq}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} = s_{np} \delta_{qm} + s_{qm} \delta_{np} - \frac{2}{3} s_{qp} \delta_{nm} - \frac{2}{3} \delta_{pq} s_{mn}$$

and:

$$p_{pqmn} = \frac{\partial s_{pq}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} = \left(\delta_{mp} \delta_{nq} - \frac{1}{3} \delta_{pq} \delta_{mn} \right)$$

Another important gradient is:

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial^2 Q}{\partial \sigma_{ij} \partial q_A} &= \frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial q_A} = \\ &= \frac{\partial \frac{\partial Q}{\partial p}}{\partial q_A} \frac{\partial p}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} + \frac{\partial \frac{\partial Q}{\partial q}}{\partial q_A} \frac{\partial q}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} + \frac{\partial \frac{\partial Q}{\partial \theta}}{\partial q_A} \frac{\partial \theta}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} = \\ &= \frac{\partial^2 Q}{\partial p \partial q_A} \frac{\partial p}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} + \frac{\partial^2 Q}{\partial q \partial q_A} \frac{\partial q}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} + \frac{\partial^2 Q}{\partial \theta \partial q_A} \frac{\partial \theta}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} \end{aligned} \quad (104.149)$$

104.4.4.2 Finite Difference Gradients

After having developed the closed form, analytical derivatives⁴⁹ the author of this thesis asked himself: "is there a simpler way of finding these derivatives?" One of the proposed ways to check the analytical solution is found in [Dennis and Schnabel \(1983\)](#). Dennis and Schnabel proposes the finite difference method for approximating derivatives if these derivatives are not analytically available and as a tool to check your analytical derivatives if they are derived.

Another good reason for developing alternative gradients is that for $\theta = 0, \pi/3$ gradients are not defined, i.e. indefinite terms as $0/0$ are appearing. One possible solution is the use of l'Hospital's rule. This has been done in [Perić \(1991\)](#). The solution to the problem in this work went in a different direction, i.e. instead of aiming for the analytical form, numerical derivatives are derived.

We should recall that for a function f of a single variable, the finite difference approximation to $f'(x)$, by using forward finite difference approach, is given by:

$$a = \frac{f(x+h) - f(x)}{h} \quad (104.150)$$

where h is a vanishingly small quantity. The same definition was used in deriving the finite difference approximation for the first derivative of the yield function F and potential function Q . The first derivative of F (or Q) with respect to the stress tensor σ_{ij} for diagonal elements is⁵⁰ :

$$approx.F_{,ii} = \frac{F(\sigma_{ii} + h_{ii}) - F(\sigma_{ii})}{h_{ii}} \quad (104.151)$$

and for non-diagonal elements⁵¹:

$$approx.F_{,ij} = \frac{F(\sigma_{ij} + h_{ij} + h_{ji}) - F(\sigma_{ij})}{2h_{ij}} \quad (104.152)$$

where h_{ij} is the step size which, because of finite precision arithmetic, is a variable⁵².

The accuracy of the finite difference approximation to the analytical derivatives is closely bound to the step size h_{ij} . It is suggested in [Dennis and Schnabel \(1983\)](#)[section 5.4.] that for functions given by the simple formula, the number h should be $h = \sqrt{macheps}$, while for more complicated functions

⁴⁹see Appendix (703).

⁵⁰no sum convention implied, just the position of the element.

⁵¹since the stress tensor σ_{ij} is symmetric, change in one non-diagonal element triggers the other to be changed as well.

⁵²it is actually one small number, h , that is multiplied with the current stress value so that the relative order of magnitude is retained.

that number should be larger. Here *macheps* is the so called machine epsilon. It is defined as the smallest distinguishable positive number⁵³, such that $1.0 + \text{macheps} > 1.0$ on the given platform. For example⁵⁴, on the Intel x86 platform⁵⁵ $\text{macheps} = 1.08E-19$ while on the SUNSparc and DEC platforms $\text{macheps} = 2.22E-16$. It has been found that in the case of yield or potential functions the best approximation of analytical gradients is obtained by using $h = \sqrt{\text{macheps}} 10^3$. The three order of magnitude increase in the finite difference step is due to a rather complicated⁵⁶ formula for yield and potential functions. The error in the approximation, $\text{approx} F_{,ij}$ is found to be after the N^{th} decimal place, where N is the order of *macheps*, i.e. $\text{macheps} = O(N)$.

Second derivative approximations for one variable function are given in the form:

$$a = \frac{(f(x + h_i e_i + h_j e_j) - f(x + h_i e_i)) - (f(x + h_j e_j) - f(x))}{h_i h_j} \quad (104.153)$$

If the first derivatives are available in closed form, one could use equations (104.151) and (104.152) just by replacing the function values with tensor values for analytical derivatives⁵⁷.

However, if the analytic derivatives are not available, one has to devise a formula that will create a fourth order tensor from the changes in two dimensional stress tensors, σ_{ij} and σ_{kl} . Using the scheme employed in equation (104.153) the following scheme has been devised:

$$\text{approx} Q_{,ijkl} = \frac{(Q(\sigma_{mn} + h_{ij} + h_{kl}) - Q(\sigma_{mn} + h_{ij})) - (Q(\sigma_{mn} + h_{kl}) - Q(\sigma_{mn}))}{h_{ij} h_{kl}} \quad (104.154)$$

Special considerations are necessary in order to retain symmetry of the fourth order tensor. At the moment it has not been possible to figure out how to build the finite difference approximation to the second derivatives of yield/potential functions for a general stress state. The only finite difference approximation of the second derivatives that appears to have worked was the one devised in principal stress space. Namely, diagonal elements of the analytical and the approximate gradients matched exactly, but development of non-diagonal elements, and the whole scheme of symmetrizing the fourth order approximation, still remain a mystery. However, some pattern was observed in non-diagonal elements, and the work on symmetrizing it is in progress.

⁵³in a given precision, i.e. float (real*4), double (real*8) or long double (real*10).

⁵⁴the precision sought was double (real*8).

⁵⁵PC computers.

⁵⁶One should not forget that we work with six dimensional tensor formulae directly.

⁵⁷see Dennis and Schnabel (1983), section 5.6.

For many different potential functions (or yield functions) the only task left would be the derivation of the first derivatives of F and Q and the second derivatives of Q with respect to p , q and θ , namely the first derivatives $\frac{\partial Q}{\partial p}$, $\frac{\partial Q}{\partial q}$ and $\frac{\partial Q}{\partial \theta}$ and $\frac{\partial Q}{\partial p}$, $\frac{\partial Q}{\partial q}$ and $\frac{\partial Q}{\partial \theta}$ and the second derivatives $\frac{\partial^2 Q}{\partial p^2}$, $\frac{\partial^2 Q}{\partial p \partial q}$, $\frac{\partial^2 Q}{\partial p \partial \theta}$, $\frac{\partial^2 Q}{\partial q \partial p}$, $\frac{\partial^2 Q}{\partial q^2}$, $\frac{\partial^2 Q}{\partial q \partial \theta}$, $\frac{\partial^2 Q}{\partial \theta \partial p}$, $\frac{\partial^2 Q}{\partial \theta \partial q}$ and $\frac{\partial^2 Q}{\partial \theta^2}$. If the potential function is twice differentiable with respect to the stress tensor σ_{ij} , and if it is continuous then the Hessian matrix is symmetric.

104.5 Line Search Technique for Constitutive Elastic-Plastic Integration

This section is entirely based on [Jeremić \(2001\)](#). There exist a repetition of some previously defined equations...

104.6 Elastic and Elastic–Plastic Material Models for Solids

In this section we present elements of general elastic and elastic–plastic material models for engineering materials. We describe various forms of the yield functions, plastic flow directions and hardening and softening laws.

104.6.1 Elasticity

DSL COMMANDS for the elastic material models are given in section [205.3](#) on page [827](#).

In linear elasticity the relationship between the stress tensor σ_{ij} and the strain tensor ϵ_{kl} can be represented in the following form:

$$\sigma_{ij} = \sigma(\epsilon_{ij}) \quad (104.155)$$

If we assume the existence of a strain energy function⁵⁸ $W(\epsilon_{ij})$ then the stress strain relation is:

$$\sigma_{ij} = \frac{\partial W(\epsilon_{ij})}{\partial \epsilon_{ij}} \quad (104.156)$$

The introduction of the strain energy density function into elasticity is due to Green, and elastic solids for which such a function is assumed to exist are called Green elastic or hyperelastic solids.

⁵⁸per unit volume.

Linearization of an elastic continuum is carried out with respect to a reference configuration which is stress free at temperature T_0 , so that ${}^0\sigma_{ij} = 0$. If we denote as E_{ijkl} an isothermal modulus tensor, then under isothermal conditions, we obtain the generalized Hooke's law:

$$\sigma_{ij} = E_{ijkl}\epsilon_{kl} \quad (104.157)$$

where E_{ijkl} is the fourth order elastic stiffness tensor with 81 independent components in total. The elastic stiffness tensor features both minor symmetry $E_{ijkl} = E_{jikl} = E_{ijlk}$ and major symmetry $E_{ijkl} = E_{klij}$ (Jeremić and Sture, 1997). The number of independent components for such elastic stiffness tensor is 21 (Spencer, 1980).

$$E_{ijkl} = \left. \frac{\partial^2 W}{\partial \epsilon_{ij} \partial \epsilon_{kl}} \right|_{\epsilon=0} = \left. \frac{\partial^2 W}{\partial \epsilon_{kl} \partial \epsilon_{ij}} \right|_{\epsilon=0} \quad (104.158)$$

We will restrain our considerations to the isotropic case. The most general form of the isotropic tensor of rank 4 has the following representation:

$$I_4 = \lambda \delta_{ij} \delta_{kl} + \mu \delta_{ik} \delta_{jl} + \nu \delta_{il} \delta_{jk} \quad (104.159)$$

If E_{ijkl} has this form then in order to satisfy the symmetry condition⁵⁹ $E_{ijkl} = E_{jikl}$ we must have $\nu = \mu$. The symmetry condition⁶⁰ $E_{ijkl} = E_{klij}$ is then automatically satisfied. The elastic constant tensor has the following form:

$$E_{ijkl} = \lambda \delta_{ij} \delta_{kl} + \mu (\delta_{ik} \delta_{jl} + \delta_{il} \delta_{jk}) \quad (104.160)$$

where λ and μ are the Lamé coefficients:

$$\lambda = \frac{\nu E}{(1 + \nu)(1 - 2\nu)} \quad ; \quad \mu = \frac{E}{2(1 + \nu)} \quad (104.161)$$

and E and ν are Young's Modulus and Poisson's ratio respectively. The symmetric part of the fourth order unit tensor is :

$$I_{ijkl}^{sym} = \frac{1}{2} (\delta_{ik} \delta_{jl} + \delta_{il} \delta_{jk}) \quad (104.162)$$

and can be found as multiplier of μ in equation (104.160). Equation (104.160) can be written in terms of E and ν as:

$$E_{ijkl} = \frac{E}{2(1 + \nu)} \left(\frac{2\nu}{1 - 2\nu} \delta_{ij} \delta_{kl} + \delta_{ik} \delta_{jl} + \delta_{il} \delta_{jk} \right) \quad (104.163)$$

The same relation in terms of bulk modulus K and shear modulus G is:

⁵⁹symmetry in stress tensor.

⁶⁰existence of strain energy function.

$$E_{ijkl} = K\delta_{ij}\delta_{kl} + G\left(-\frac{2}{3}\delta_{ij}\delta_{kl} + \delta_{ik}\delta_{jl} + \delta_{il}\delta_{jk}\right) \quad (104.164)$$

where K and G are given as:

$$K = \lambda + \frac{2}{3}\mu \quad ; \quad G = \mu \quad (104.165)$$

The relation between the strain tensor, ϵ_{kl} and the stress tensor, σ_{ij} is:

$$\epsilon_{kl} = D_{klpq}\sigma_{pq} \quad (104.166)$$

where D_{klpq} is the elastic compliance fourth order tensor, defined as:

$$D_{klpq} = \frac{-\lambda}{2\mu(3\lambda + 2\mu)}\delta_{kl}\delta_{pq} + \frac{1}{4\mu}(\delta_{kp}\delta_{lq} + \delta_{kq}\delta_{lp}) \quad (104.167)$$

or in terms of E and ν :

$$D_{klpq} = \frac{1+\nu}{2E}\left(\frac{-2\nu}{1+\nu}\delta_{kl}\delta_{pq} + \delta_{kp}\delta_{lq} + \delta_{kq}\delta_{lp}\right) \quad (104.168)$$

of in terms of K and G :

$$D_{klpq} = \frac{1}{9K}(\delta_{kl}\delta_{pq}) + \frac{1}{2G}\left(-\frac{1}{3}\delta_{kl}\delta_{pq} + \frac{1}{2}(\delta_{kp}\delta_{lq} + \delta_{kq}\delta_{lp})\right) \quad (104.169)$$

It is worthwhile noting that the part adjacent to the inverse of the bulk modulus K :

$$(\delta_{kl}\delta_{pq})$$

controls the volumetric response and that the part adjacent to the inverse of the shear modulus G :

$$\left(-\frac{1}{3}\delta_{kl}\delta_{pq} + \frac{1}{2}(\delta_{kp}\delta_{lq} + \delta_{kq}\delta_{lp})\right)$$

controls the shear response! This note will prove useful later on. Linear transformation of the stress tensor σ_{pq} into itself, i.e. σ_{ij} is defined as:

$$\sigma_{ij} = E_{ijkl}\epsilon_{kl} = E_{ijkl}D_{klpq}\sigma_{pq} \quad (104.170)$$

where

$$E_{ijkl}D_{klpq} = \frac{1}{2}(\delta_{ip}\delta_{jq} + \delta_{iq}\delta_{jp}) = I_{ijpq}^{sym} \quad (104.171)$$

104.6.1.1 Elastic Model

Linear elastic law is the simplest one and assumes constant Young's modulus E and constant Poisson's Ratio ν .

104.6.1.2 Non-linear Elastic Model #1

This nonlinear model (Janbu, 1963), (Duncan and Chang, 1970) assumes dependence of the Young's modulus on the minor principal stress $\sigma_3 = \sigma_{min}$ in the form

$$E = K p_a \left(\frac{\sigma_3}{p_a} \right)^n \quad (104.172)$$

Here, p_a is the atmospheric pressure in the same units as E and stress. The two material constants K and n are constant for a given void ratio.

104.6.1.3 Non-linear Elastic Model #2

If Young's modulus and Poisson's ratio are replaced by the shear modulus G and bulk modulus K the non-linear elastic relationship can be expressed in terms of the normal effective mean stress p as

$$G \text{ and/or } K = AF(e, OCR)p^n \quad (104.173)$$

where e is the void ratio, OCR is the overconsolidation ratio and $p = \sigma_{ii}/3$ is the mean effective stress (Hardin, 1978).

104.6.1.4 Lade's Non-linear Elastic Model

Lade and Nelson (1987) and Lade (1988a) proposed a nonlinear elastic model based on Hooke's law in which Poisson ratio ν is kept constant. According to this model, Young's modulus can be expressed in terms of a power law as:

$$E = M p_a \left(\left(\frac{I_1}{p_a} \right)^2 + \left(6 \frac{1+\nu}{1-2\nu} \right) \frac{J_{2D}}{p_a^2} \right)^\lambda \quad (104.174)$$

where $I_1 = \sigma_{ii}$ is the first invariant of the stress tensor and $J_{2D} = (s_{ij}s_{ij})/2$ is the second invariant of the deviatoric stress tensor $s_{ij} = \sigma_{ij} - \sigma_{kk}\delta_{ij}/3$. The parameter p_a is atmospheric pressure expressed in the same unit as E , I_1 and $\sqrt{J_{2D}}$ and the modulus number M and the exponent λ are constant, dimensionless numbers.

104.6.1.5 Cross Anisotropic Linear Elastic Model

104.6.2 Yield Functions

The typical plastic behavior of frictional materials is influenced by both normal and shear stresses. It is usually assumed that there exists a yield surface F in the stress space that encompasses the elastic region. States of stress inside the yield surface are assumed to be elastic (linear or non-linear). Stress

states on the surface are assumed to produce plastic deformations. Yield surfaces for geomaterials are usually shaped as asymmetric tar drops with smoothly rounded triangular cross sections. In addition to that, simpler yield surfaces, based on the Drucker–Prager cone or Mohr–Coulomb hexagon can also be successfully used if matched with appropriate hardening laws. Yield surface shown in Figure 104.6 Lade (1988b) represent typical meridian plane trace for an isotropic granular material. Line BC represents stress path for conventional triaxial compression test. Figure 104.7 represents the view of the yield

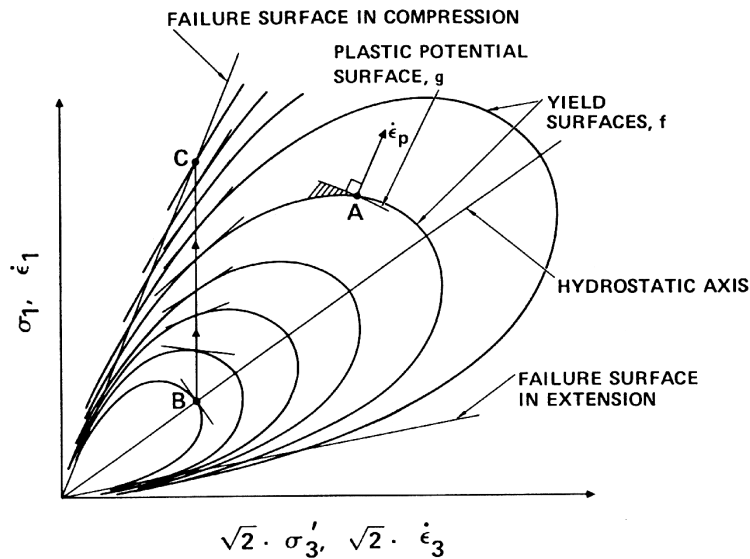


Figure 104.6: Yield surface patterns in the meridian plane for isotropic granular materials (from Lade (1988b))

surface traces in the deviatoric plane.

104.6.3 Plastic Flow Directions

Plastic flow directions are traditionally derived from a potential surface which to some extent reassembles the yield surface. Potential surfaces for metals are the same as their yield surfaces but experimental evidence suggests that it is not the case for geomaterials. The non-associated flow rules, used in geomechanics, rely on the potential surface, which is different from the yield surface, to provide the plastic flow directions. It should be noted that the potential surface is used for convenience and there is no physical reason to assume that the plastic strain rates are related to a potential surface Q (Vardoulakis and Sulem, 1995). Instead of defining a plastic potential, one may assume that the plastic flow direction is derived from an tensor function which does not have to possess a potential function.

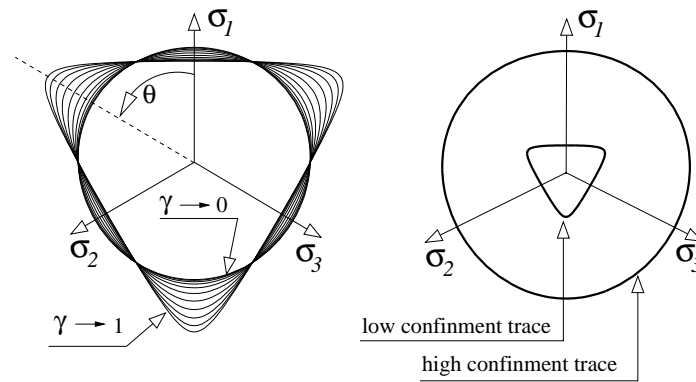


Figure 104.7: Deviatoric trace of typical yield surface for pressure sensitive materials.

104.6.4 Hardening–Softening Evolution Laws

The change in size and/or shape of the yield and potential surfaces is controlled by the hardening–softening evolution laws. Physically, these laws control the hardening and/or softening process during loading. Depending on the evolution type they control, these laws can be in general separated into isotropic and kinematic (also called anisotropic). The isotropic evolution laws control the size of the yield surface through a single scalar variable. This is usually related to the Coulomb friction or to the mean stress values at isotropic yielding. The non–isotropic evolution laws can be further specialized to rotational, translational kinematic and distortional. It should be noted that all of the kinematic evolution laws can be treated as special case of the general, distortional laws (Baltov and Sawczuk, 1965). Figure 104.8 depicts various types of evolution laws (for the control of hardening–softening) in the meridian

plane⁶¹.

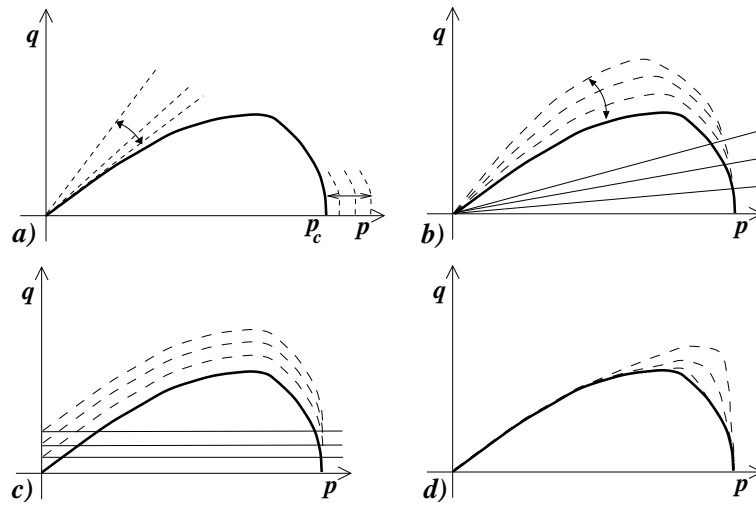


Figure 104.8: Various types of evolution laws that control hardening and/or softening of elastic-plastic material models: (a) Isotropic (scalar) controlling equivalent friction angle and isotropic yield stress. (b) Rotational kinematic hardening (second order tensor) controlling pivoting around fixed point (usually stress origin) of the yield surface. (c) Translational kinematic hardening (second order tensor) controlling translation of the yield surface. (d) Distortional (fourth order tensor) controlling the shape of the yield surface.

104.6.5 Tresca Model

The first yield criteria in the metal plasticity is Tresca yield criteria. Tresca yield criteria states that when the maximum shear stress or, the half difference of the maximum and minimum principal stresses, reaches the shear strength, τ_s , the material will begin yielding. It is can be expressed by the yield function

$$f = |\tau_{max}| - \tau_s = \frac{1}{2}|\sigma_1 - \sigma_3| - \tau_s = 0 \quad (104.175)$$

Tresca yield surface in the principal stress space is a regular hexagonal cylinder. It is implied that the intermediate principal stress plays no role in the yielding for Tresca yield criteria.

104.6.6 von Mises Model

DSL COMMANDS for the von Mises material models are given in section 205.3 on page 827.

⁶¹The meridian plane is chosen just for illustration purposes, similar sketch can be produced in deviatoric plane as well.

Experimental data showed that for most metals, von Mises yield criteria is more accurate than Tresca criteria. von Mises yield function can be expressed by

$$f = 3J_2 - k^2 = 0 \quad (104.176)$$

or if extended to include the kinematic hardening,

$$f = \frac{3}{2}(s_{ij} - \alpha_{ij})(s_{ij} - \alpha_{ij}) - k^2 = 0 \quad (104.177)$$

where k is the scalar internal variable; its initial value is the uniaxial tension strength. α_{ij} is the tensor internal variable called the back stress. Similar to s_{ij} , α_{ij} is also a deviatoric symmetric tensor.

Although von Mises model is mainly for the metal plasticity analysis, for undrained analysis in geomechanics, von Mises model can be approximately used to simulate the undrained behaviors, (Yang and Jeremić, 2002), (Yang and Jeremić, 2003).

The stress derivative of the yield function is

$$\frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} = 3(s_{ij} - \alpha_{ij}) \quad (104.178)$$

From Equation 104.178, it is easily to derive that

$$\frac{\partial f}{\partial \alpha_{ij}} = -3(s_{ij} - \alpha_{ij}) \quad (104.179)$$

and

$$\frac{\partial f}{\partial k} = -2k \quad (104.180)$$

If the associated plastic flow rule $g = f$ is assumed, then

$$m_{ij} = \frac{\partial g}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} = 3(s_{ij} - \alpha_{ij}) \quad (104.181)$$

$$\frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} = 3I_{ijmn}^s - \delta_{ij}\delta_{mn} \quad (104.182)$$

$$\frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} = -3I_{ijmn}^s \quad (104.183)$$

where I_{ijmn}^s is the symmetric unit rank-4 tensor.

It is interesting that from the Equation 104.181, von Mises model gives

$$\dot{\epsilon}_v^p = \dot{\epsilon}_{ii}^p = \dot{\lambda} m_{ii} = 3\dot{\lambda}(s_{ii} - \alpha_{ii}) = 0 \quad (104.184)$$

which accords with the phenomena that no plastic volumetric strain occurs for metals. It is implied that the isotropic stress (hydrostatic pressure) can never make the metal yield for this yield criteria. von Mises model is therefore pressure-independent.

If k is assumed a linear relation to the equivalent plastic strain ϵ_q^p , or by the equation

$$\dot{k} = H_s \dot{\epsilon}_{eq}^p = \dot{\lambda} H_s \left(\frac{2}{3} m_{ij}^{dev} m_{ij}^{dev} \right)^{0.5} \quad (104.185)$$

where H_s is the linear hardening/softening modulus to the equivalent plastic strain, the corresponding h_A is then

$$h = H_s \left(\frac{2}{3} m_{ij}^{dev} m_{ij}^{dev} \right)^{0.5} \quad (104.186)$$

where m_{ij}^{dev} is the 'deviatoric' plastic flow, and if it is associated plasticity,

$$h = 2H_s k \quad (104.187)$$

If α_{ij} is assumed a linear relation to the plastic strain tensor ϵ_{ij}^p , or by the equation

$$\dot{\alpha}_{ij} = H_t \dot{\epsilon}_{ij}^p = \dot{\lambda} H_t m_{ij} \quad (104.188)$$

if it is associated plasticity,

$$\dot{\alpha}_{ij} = 3\dot{\lambda} H_t (s_{ij} - \alpha_{ij}) \quad (104.189)$$

where H_t is the linear hardening/softening modulus to plastic strain tensor, the corresponding h_A is then

$$h_{ij} = H_t m_{ij} \quad (104.190)$$

if it is associated plasticity,

$$h_{ij} = 3H_t (s_{ij} - \alpha_{ij}) \quad (104.191)$$

A saturation-type kinematic hardening rule is the Armstrong-Frederick hardening ([Armstrong and Frederick, 1966](#)),

$$\dot{\alpha}_{ij} = \frac{2}{3} h_a \dot{\epsilon}_{ij}^p - c_r \dot{\epsilon}_{eq}^p \alpha_{ij} \quad (104.192)$$

if it is associated plasticity,

$$\dot{\alpha}_{ij} = \dot{\lambda} [h_a (s_{ij} - \alpha_{ij}) - 2c_r k \alpha_{ij}] \quad (104.193)$$

where h_a and c_r are material constants. The corresponding h_A is then

$$h_{ij} = \frac{2}{3} h_a m_{ij} - c_r m_{eq} \alpha_{ij} \quad (104.194)$$

where m_{eq} is the 'equivalent' plastic flow, and if it is associated plasticity,

$$h_{ij} = 2h_a s_{ij} - 2(h_a + c_r k) \alpha_{ij} \quad (104.195)$$

104.6.6.1 Yield and Plastic Potential Functions: von Mises Model (form I)

Yield function and related derivatives

$$f = \frac{3}{2} [(s_{ij} - \alpha_{ij})(s_{ij} - \alpha_{ij})] - k^2 = 0 \quad (104.196)$$

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} &= 3 \frac{\partial s_{kl}}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} (s_{kl} - \alpha_{kl}) \\ &= 3 \left(\delta_{ki} \delta_{lj} - \frac{1}{3} \delta_{kl} \delta_{ij} \right) (s_{kl} - \alpha_{kl}) \\ &= 3 (s_{ij} - \alpha_{ij}) \end{aligned} \quad (104.197)$$

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial f}{\partial \alpha_{ij}} &= -3 \frac{\partial \alpha_{kl}}{\partial \alpha_{ij}} (s_{kl} - \alpha_{kl}) \\ &= -3 \delta_{ki} \delta_{lj} (s_{kl} - \alpha_{kl}) \\ &= -3 (s_{ij} - \alpha_{ij}) \end{aligned} \quad (104.198)$$

$$\frac{\partial f}{\partial k} = -2k \quad (104.199)$$

Plastic flow (associated plasticity) and related derivatives

$$m_{ij} = \frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} = 3 (s_{ij} - \alpha_{ij}) \quad (104.200)$$

$$\frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} = 3 \delta_{im} \delta_{jn} - \delta_{ij} \delta_{mn} \quad (104.201)$$

$$\frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial k} = 0 \quad (104.202)$$

$$\frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} = -3 \delta_{im} \delta_{jn} \quad (104.203)$$

104.6.6.2 Yield and Plastic Potential Functions: von Mises Model (form II)

Yield function and related derivatives

$$f = [(s_{ij} - \alpha_{ij})(s_{ij} - \alpha_{ij})]^{0.5} - \sqrt{\frac{2}{3}}k = 0 \quad (104.204)$$

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} &= \frac{\partial s_{kl}}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} (s_{kl} - \alpha_{kl}) [(s_{mn} - \alpha_{mn})(s_{mn} - \alpha_{mn})]^{-0.5} \\ &= \left(\delta_{ki} \delta_{lj} - \frac{1}{3} \delta_{kl} \delta_{ij} \right) (s_{kl} - \alpha_{kl}) [(s_{mn} - \alpha_{mn})(s_{mn} - \alpha_{mn})]^{-0.5} \\ &= (s_{ij} - \alpha_{ij}) [(s_{mn} - \alpha_{mn})(s_{mn} - \alpha_{mn})]^{-0.5} \end{aligned} \quad (104.205)$$

$$\frac{\partial f}{\partial \alpha_{ij}} = -(s_{ij} - \alpha_{ij}) [(s_{mn} - \alpha_{mn})(s_{mn} - \alpha_{mn})]^{-0.5} \quad (104.206)$$

$$\frac{\partial f}{\partial k} = -\sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} \quad (104.207)$$

Plastic flow (associated plasticity) and related derivatives

$$m_{ij} = \frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} = (s_{ij} - \alpha_{ij}) [(s_{mn} - \alpha_{mn})(s_{mn} - \alpha_{mn})]^{-0.5} \quad (104.208)$$

$$\frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} = \left(\delta_{im} \delta_{jn} - \frac{1}{3} \delta_{ij} \delta_{mn} \right) [(s_{rs} - \alpha_{rs})(s_{rs} - \alpha_{rs})]^{-0.5} - (s_{ij} - \alpha_{ij}) (s_{mn} - \alpha_{mn}) [(s_{rs} - \alpha_{rs})(s_{rs} - \alpha_{rs})]^{-1.5} \quad (104.209)$$

$$\frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial k} = 0 \quad (104.210)$$

$$\frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} = -\delta_{im} \delta_{jn} [(s_{rs} - \alpha_{rs})(s_{rs} - \alpha_{rs})]^{-0.5} + (s_{ij} - \alpha_{ij}) (s_{mn} - \alpha_{mn}) [(s_{rs} - \alpha_{rs})(s_{rs} - \alpha_{rs})]^{-1.5} \quad (104.211)$$

104.6.6.3 Hardening and Softening Functions: von Mises Model

Linear isotropic hardening and related derivatives

$$\bar{k} = Hm^{equivalent} = H \left(\frac{2}{3} m_{ij} m_{ij} \right)^{0.5} \quad (104.212)$$

$$\frac{\partial \bar{k}}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} = \frac{2}{3} H m_{pq} \frac{\partial m_{pq}}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} \left(\frac{2}{3} m_{mn} m_{mn} \right)^{-0.5} \quad (104.213)$$

$$\frac{\partial \bar{k}}{\partial k} = \frac{2}{3} H m_{pq} \frac{\partial m_{pq}}{\partial k} \left(\frac{2}{3} m_{mn} m_{mn} \right)^{-0.5} \quad (104.214)$$

$$\frac{\partial \bar{k}}{\partial \alpha_{ij}} = \frac{2}{3} H m_{pq} \frac{\partial m_{pq}}{\partial \alpha_{ij}} \left(\frac{2}{3} m_{mn} m_{mn} \right)^{-0.5} \quad (104.215)$$

Linear kinematic hardening and related derivatives

$$\bar{\alpha}_{ij} = Hm_{ij}^{dev} = H \left(m_{ij} - \frac{1}{3} m_{kl} \delta_{kl} \delta_{ij} \right) \quad (104.216)$$

$$\frac{\partial \bar{\alpha}_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} = H \left(\frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} - \frac{1}{3} \frac{\partial m_{kl}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} \delta_{kl} \delta_{ij} \right) \quad (104.217)$$

$$\frac{\partial \bar{\alpha}_{ij}}{\partial k} = H \left(\frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial k} - \frac{1}{3} \frac{\partial m_{kl}}{\partial k} \delta_{kl} \delta_{ij} \right) \quad (104.218)$$

$$\frac{\partial \bar{\alpha}_{ij}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} = H \left(\frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} - \frac{1}{3} \frac{\partial m_{kl}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} \delta_{kl} \delta_{ij} \right) \quad (104.219)$$

Armstrong-Frederick kinematic hardening for von Mises

$$\bar{\alpha}_{ij} = \frac{2}{3} h_a m_{ij}^{dev} - c_r \left(\frac{2}{3} m_{rs}^{dev} m_{rs}^{dev} \right)^{0.5} \alpha_{ij} \quad (104.220)$$

The unit of parameter h_a is Pascal. The parameter c_r is unitless. The unit of α_{ij} is Pascal.

The deviatoric component of m is employed because the backstress α_{ij} is the center of yield surface in the deviatoric stress space.

When the derivative of backstress $\bar{\alpha}_{ij} = 0$, the tensor α_{ij} reaches the tensor limit.

$$\alpha_{ij}^{lim} = \sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} \frac{h_a}{c_r} \frac{m_{ij}^{dev}}{\sqrt{m_{rs}^{dev} m_{rs}^{dev}}} \quad (104.221)$$

Some useful tensor derivatives for von Mises $\bar{\alpha}$.

$$m_{ij}^{dev} = m_{ij} - \frac{1}{3} m_{kl} \delta_{kl} \delta_{ij} \quad (104.222)$$

- Useful tensor derivatives for von Mises $\bar{\alpha}$ with respect to σ .

$$\frac{\partial \bar{\alpha}_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} = \frac{2}{3} h_a \frac{\partial m_{ij}^{dev}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} - \frac{2}{3} c_r m_{rs}^{dev} \frac{\partial m_{rs}^{dev}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} \left(\frac{2}{3} m_{kl}^{dev} m_{kl}^{dev} \right)^{-0.5} \alpha_{ij} \quad (104.223)$$

where

$$\frac{\partial m_{ij}^{dev}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} = \frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} - \frac{1}{3} \frac{\partial m_{ot}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} \delta_{ot} \delta_{ij} \quad (104.224)$$

- Useful tensor derivatives for von Mises $\bar{\alpha}$ with respect to α .

$$\frac{\partial \bar{\alpha}_{ij}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} = \frac{2}{3} h_a \frac{\partial m_{ij}^{dev}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} - \frac{2}{3} c_r m_{rs}^{dev} \frac{\partial m_{rs}^{dev}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} \left(\frac{2}{3} m_{kl}^{dev} m_{kl}^{dev} \right)^{-0.5} \alpha_{ij} - c_r \left(\frac{2}{3} m_{pq}^{dev} m_{pq}^{dev} \right)^{0.5} \delta_{im} \delta_{jn} \quad (104.225)$$

where

$$\frac{\partial m_{ij}^{dev}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} = \frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} - \frac{1}{3} \frac{\partial m_{ot}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} \delta_{ot} \delta_{ij} \quad (104.226)$$

- Useful tensor derivatives for von Mises $\bar{\alpha}$ with respect to k .

$$\frac{\partial \bar{\alpha}_{ij}}{\partial k} = \frac{2}{3} h_a \frac{\partial m_{ij}^{dev}}{\partial k} - \sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} c_r \alpha_{ij} (m_{rs}^{dev} m_{rs}^{dev})^{-0.5} \frac{\partial m_{pq}^{dev}}{\partial k} m_{pq}^{dev} \quad (104.227)$$

where

$$\frac{\partial m_{ij}^{dev}}{\partial k} = \frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial k} - \frac{1}{3} \frac{\partial m_{ot}}{\partial k} \delta_{ot} \delta_{ij} \quad (104.228)$$

104.6.7 Drucker-Prager Model

DSL COMMANDS for the Drucker Prager material models are given in section 205.3 on page 827.

Drucker and Prager (1952) proposed a right circle cone to match with the Mohr-Coulomb irregular hexagonal pyramid, which can be expressed by

$$f = \alpha I_1 + \sqrt{J_2} - \beta = 0 \quad (104.229)$$

or if considering the kinematic hardening,

$$f = \alpha I_1 + \left[\frac{1}{2} (s_{ij} - p \alpha_{ij})(s_{ij} - p \alpha_{ij}) \right]^{\frac{1}{2}} - \beta = 0 \quad (104.230)$$

where α and β are material constants.

By coinciding Drucker-Prager cone with the outer apexes of the Mohr-Coulomb hexagon locus, we get the compressive cone of Drucker-Prager model, with the constants as

$$\alpha = \frac{2 \sin \phi}{\sqrt{3}(3 - \sin \phi)}, \quad \beta = \frac{6 \cos \phi}{\sqrt{3}(3 - \sin \phi)} c \quad (104.231)$$

By coinciding Drucker-Prager cone with the inner apexes of the Mohr-Coulomb hexagon locus, we get the tensile cone of Drucker-Prager model, with the constants as

$$\alpha = \frac{2 \sin \phi}{\sqrt{3}(3 + \sin \phi)}, \quad \beta = \frac{6 \cos \phi}{\sqrt{3}(3 + \sin \phi)} c \quad (104.232)$$

We can also get the mean cone of the compressive and tensile cone, with the constants as

$$\alpha = \frac{\sqrt{3} \sin \phi}{9 - \sin^2 \phi}, \quad \beta = \frac{2\sqrt{3} \cos \phi}{9 - \sin^2 \phi} c \quad (104.233)$$

Another inner-tangent cone to the the Mohr-Coulomb pyramid, with the constants as

$$\alpha = \frac{\tan \phi}{\sqrt{9 + 12 \tan^2 \phi}}, \quad \beta = \frac{3c}{\sqrt{9 + 12 \tan^2 \phi}} \quad (104.234)$$

Obviously, in practice α and β are not directly obtained from experiments. They are functions of Mohr-Coulomb parameters, the cohesion c and the friction angle ϕ , which can be determined by experiments. The shape of Drucker-Prager yield surface has different types. They only partially satisfy the above requirements for locus in the π plane: they do not coincide with both compressive and tensile experimental points.

A useful formulation on Equation 104.229 is

$$\frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} = \alpha \delta_{ij} + \frac{s_{ij}}{2\sqrt{J_2}} \quad (104.235)$$

For cohesionless sands, $k = 0$, Drucker-Prager yield function can thus be simplified as

$$f = \alpha I_1 + \sqrt{J_2} = 0 \quad (104.236)$$

or in terms of p and q ,

$$f = q - Mp = 0 \quad (104.237)$$

If Equation 104.231 is adopted, then M can be easily derived as

$$M = \frac{6 \sin \phi}{3 - \sin \phi} \quad (104.238)$$

If the kinematic hardening is taken account, Equation 104.237 can be extended into

$$f = \frac{3}{2}[(s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij})(s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij})] - M^2 p^2 = 0 \quad (104.239)$$

Useful formulations for this yield function are

$$\frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} = 3\bar{s}_{ij} + \left(\bar{s}_{mn}\alpha_{mn} + \frac{2}{3}M^2p \right) \delta_{ij} \quad (104.240)$$

$$\frac{\partial f}{\partial \alpha_{ij}} = -3p\bar{s}_{ij} \quad (104.241)$$

where $\bar{s}_{ij} = s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij}$.

If the plastic flow is assumed associated, $g = f$, then

$$m_{ij} = \frac{\partial g}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} = 3\bar{s}_{ij} + \left(\bar{s}_{mn}\alpha_{mn} + \frac{2}{3}M^2p \right) \delta_{ij} \quad (104.242)$$

the 'deviatoric' plastic flow is therefore

$$m_{eq} = 2Mp \quad (104.243)$$

104.6.7.1 Yield and Plastic Potential Functions: Drucker-Prager Model (form I)

Yield function and related derivatives

$$f = \frac{3}{2} [(s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij})(s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij})] - k^2p^2 = 0 \quad (104.244)$$

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} &= \frac{3}{2} \left[2 \frac{\partial s_{mn}}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} (s_{mn} - p\alpha_{mn}) \right] + \frac{3}{2} \left[-2\alpha_{mn} \frac{\partial p}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} (s_{mn} - p\alpha_{mn}) \right] - 2k^2p \frac{\partial p}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} \\ &= 3 \left(\delta_{mi}\delta_{nj} - \frac{1}{3}\delta_{mn}\delta_{ij} \right) (s_{mn} - p\alpha_{mn}) + 3 \left[\alpha_{mn} \frac{1}{3}\delta_{ij} (s_{mn} - p\alpha_{mn}) \right] + \frac{2}{3}k^2p\delta_{ij} \\ &= 3(s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij}) + \alpha_{mn}(s_{mn} - p\alpha_{mn})\delta_{ij} + \frac{2}{3}k^2p\delta_{ij} \end{aligned} \quad (104.245)$$

$$\frac{\partial f}{\partial \alpha_{ij}} = -3p(s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij}) \quad (104.246)$$

$$\frac{\partial f}{\partial k} = -2kp^2 \quad (104.247)$$

Plastic flow (associated plasticity) and related derivatives

$$m_{ij} = \frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} = 3 (s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij}) + \alpha_{rs} (s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs}) \delta_{ij} + \frac{2}{3} k^2 p \delta_{ij} \quad (104.248)$$

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} &= 3 \left(\left(\delta_{im} \delta_{jn} - \frac{1}{3} \delta_{ij} \delta_{mn} \right) - \frac{1}{3} \delta_{mn} \alpha_{ij} \right) + \alpha_{rs} \frac{\partial (s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} \delta_{ij} + \frac{2}{3} k^2 \frac{\partial p}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} \delta_{ij} \\ &= 3 \delta_{im} \delta_{jn} - \delta_{ij} \delta_{mn} - \delta_{mn} \alpha_{ij} + \alpha_{rs} \left(\delta_{rm} \delta_{sn} - \frac{1}{3} \delta_{rs} \delta_{mn} + \frac{1}{3} \delta_{mn} \alpha_{rs} \right) \delta_{ij} + \frac{2}{3} k^2 \frac{\partial p}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} \delta_{ij} \\ &= 3 \delta_{im} \delta_{jn} - \delta_{ij} \delta_{mn} - \delta_{mn} \alpha_{ij} + \alpha_{mn} \delta_{ij} + \frac{1}{3} \delta_{mn} \alpha_{rs} \alpha_{rs} \delta_{ij} - \frac{2}{9} k^2 \delta_{mn} \delta_{ij} \\ &= 3 \delta_{im} \delta_{jn} + \left(-1 + \frac{1}{3} \alpha_{rs} \alpha_{rs} - \frac{2}{9} k^2 \right) \delta_{ij} \delta_{mn} - \delta_{mn} \alpha_{ij} + \alpha_{mn} \delta_{ij} \end{aligned} \quad (104.249)$$

$$\frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial k} = \frac{4}{3} k p \delta_{ij} \quad (104.250)$$

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} &= -3p \delta_{im} \delta_{jn} + \delta_{rm} \delta_{sn} (s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs}) \delta_{ij} - \alpha_{rs} p \delta_{rm} \delta_{sn} \delta_{ij} \\ &= -3p \delta_{im} \delta_{jn} + (s_{mn} - p\alpha_{mn}) \delta_{ij} - \alpha_{mn} p \delta_{ij} \\ &= -3p \delta_{im} \delta_{jn} + s_{mn} \delta_{ij} - 2p \alpha_{mn} \delta_{ij} \end{aligned} \quad (104.251)$$

104.6.7.2 Yield and Plastic Potential Functions: Drucker-Prager Model (form II)

Yield function and related derivatives

$$f = [(s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij}) (s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij})]^{0.5} - \sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} k p = 0 \quad (104.252)$$

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} &= \left(\frac{\partial s_{mn}}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} - \alpha_{mn} \frac{\partial p}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} \right) (s_{mn} - p\alpha_{mn}) [(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs}) (s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})]^{-0.5} - \sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} k \frac{\partial p}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} \\ &= \left(\delta_{mi} \delta_{nj} - \frac{1}{3} \delta_{mn} \delta_{ij} + \frac{1}{3} \alpha_{mn} \delta_{ij} \right) (s_{mn} - p\alpha_{mn}) [(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs}) (s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})]^{-0.5} + \sqrt{\frac{2}{27}} k \delta_{ij} \\ &= \left[(s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij}) + \frac{1}{3} \alpha_{mn} \delta_{ij} (s_{mn} - p\alpha_{mn}) \right] [(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs}) (s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})]^{-0.5} + \sqrt{\frac{2}{27}} k \delta_{ij} \end{aligned} \quad (104.253)$$

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial f}{\partial \alpha_{ij}} &= -p \delta_{mi} \delta_{nj} (s_{mn} - p\alpha_{mn}) [(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs}) (s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})]^{-0.5} \\ &= -p (s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij}) [(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs}) (s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})]^{-0.5} \end{aligned} \quad (104.254)$$

$$\frac{\partial f}{\partial k} = -\sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} p \quad (104.255)$$

Plastic flow (associated plasticity) and related derivatives

$$m_{ij} = \frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} = \left[(s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij}) + \frac{1}{3}\alpha_{pq}\delta_{ij}(s_{pq} - p\alpha_{pq}) \right] [(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})]^{-0.5} + \sqrt{\frac{2}{27}}k\delta_{ij} \quad (104.256)$$

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} = & \left[\left(\delta_{mi}\delta_{nj} - \frac{1}{3}\delta_{mn}\delta_{ij} + \frac{1}{3}\delta_{mn}\alpha_{ij} \right) + \frac{1}{3}\alpha_{pq}\delta_{ij} \left(\delta_{mp}\delta_{nq} - \frac{1}{3}\delta_{mn}\delta_{pq} + \frac{1}{3}\delta_{mn}\alpha_{pq} \right) \right] \\ & [(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})]^{-0.5} \\ & - \left[(s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij}) + \frac{1}{3}\alpha_{pq}\delta_{ij}(s_{pq} - p\alpha_{pq}) \right] \left(\delta_{mr}\delta_{ns} - \frac{1}{3}\delta_{mn}\delta_{rs} + \frac{1}{3}\delta_{mn}\alpha_{rs} \right) \\ & (s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})[(s_{tu} - p\alpha_{tu})(s_{tu} - p\alpha_{tu})]^{-1.5} \end{aligned} \quad (104.257)$$

$$\frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial k} = \sqrt{\frac{2}{27}}\delta_{ij} \quad (104.258)$$

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} = & \left[-p\delta_{mi}\delta_{nj} + \frac{1}{3}\delta_{mp}\delta_{nq}\delta_{ij}(s_{pq} - p\alpha_{pq}) - \frac{1}{3}p\alpha_{pq}\delta_{ij}\delta_{mp}\delta_{nq} \right] [(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})]^{-0.5} \\ & - \left[(s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij}) + \frac{1}{3}\alpha_{pq}\delta_{ij}(s_{pq} - p\alpha_{pq}) \right] [-p\delta_{rm}\delta_{sn}(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})][(s_{tu} - p\alpha_{tu})(s_{tu} - p\alpha_{tu})]^{-1.5} \end{aligned} \quad (104.259)$$

Plastic flow (non-associated plasticity) and related derivatives

$$m_{ij} = \left(\frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} \right)^{dev} - \frac{1}{3}D\delta_{ij} = (s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij}) [(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})]^{-0.5} - \frac{1}{3}D\delta_{ij} \quad (104.260)$$

where

$$D = \xi \left(\sqrt{\frac{2}{3}}k_d - \frac{\sqrt{s_{mn}s_{mn}}}{p} \right) \quad (104.261)$$

$$\frac{\partial D}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} = -p^{-1}s_{mn}(s_{kl}s_{kl})^{-0.5} - \frac{1}{3}p^{-2}\delta_{mn}(s_{ot}s_{ot})^{0.5} \quad (104.262)$$

Therefore,

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} = & \left(\delta_{mi}\delta_{nj} - \frac{1}{3}\delta_{mn}\delta_{ij} + \frac{1}{3}\delta_{mn}\alpha_{ij} \right) [(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})]^{-0.5} \\ & - (s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij}) \left(\delta_{mr}\delta_{ns} - \frac{1}{3}\delta_{mn}\delta_{rs} + \frac{1}{3}\delta_{mn}\alpha_{rs} \right) \\ & (s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})[(s_{tu} - p\alpha_{tu})(s_{tu} - p\alpha_{tu})]^{-1.5} \\ & + \frac{1}{3}\delta_{ij}s_{mn}p^{-1}(s_{kl}s_{kl})^{-0.5} + \frac{1}{9}\delta_{ij}\delta_{mn}p^{-2}(s_{ot}s_{ot})^{0.5} \end{aligned} \quad (104.263)$$

$$\frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial k} = 0 \quad (104.264)$$

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} = & -p \delta_{mi} \delta_{nj} [(s_{rs} - p \alpha_{rs})(s_{rs} - p \alpha_{rs})]^{-0.5} \\ & - (s_{ij} - p \alpha_{ij}) [-p \delta_{rm} \delta_{sn} (s_{rs} - p \alpha_{rs})] [(s_{tu} - p \alpha_{tu})(s_{tu} - p \alpha_{tu})]^{-1.5} \end{aligned} \quad (104.265)$$

104.6.7.3 Hardening and Softening Functions: Drucker-Prager Model

Note that the linear isotropic and linear kinematic hardening equations for Drucker-Prager model are the same as the ones for von Mises model. Here they are shown again for completeness.

Linear isotropic hardening and related derivatives

$$\bar{k} = H m^{equivalent} = H \left(\frac{2}{3} m_{ij} m_{ij} \right)^{0.5} \quad (104.266)$$

$$\frac{\partial \bar{k}}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} = \frac{2}{3} H m_{pq} \frac{\partial m_{pq}}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} \left(\frac{2}{3} m_{mn} m_{mn} \right)^{-0.5} \quad (104.267)$$

$$\frac{\partial \bar{k}}{\partial k} = \frac{2}{3} H m_{pq} \frac{\partial m_{pq}}{\partial k} \left(\frac{2}{3} m_{mn} m_{mn} \right)^{-0.5} \quad (104.268)$$

$$\frac{\partial \bar{k}}{\partial \alpha_{ij}} = \frac{2}{3} H m_{pq} \frac{\partial m_{pq}}{\partial \alpha_{ij}} \left(\frac{2}{3} m_{mn} m_{mn} \right)^{-0.5} \quad (104.269)$$

Linear kinematic hardening and related derivatives

$$\bar{\alpha}_{ij} = H m_{ij}^{dev} = H \left(m_{ij} - \frac{1}{3} m_{kl} \delta_{kl} \delta_{ij} \right) \quad (104.270)$$

$$\frac{\partial \bar{\alpha}_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} = H \left(\frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} - \frac{1}{3} \frac{\partial m_{kl}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} \delta_{kl} \delta_{ij} \right) \quad (104.271)$$

$$\frac{\partial \bar{\alpha}_{ij}}{\partial k} = H \left(\frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial k} - \frac{1}{3} \frac{\partial m_{kl}}{\partial k} \delta_{kl} \delta_{ij} \right) \quad (104.272)$$

$$\frac{\partial \bar{\alpha}_{ij}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} = H \left(\frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} - \frac{1}{3} \frac{\partial m_{kl}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} \delta_{kl} \delta_{ij} \right) \quad (104.273)$$

Armstrong-Frederick Kinematic Hardening for Drucker-Prager

$$\bar{\alpha}_{ij} = \frac{2}{3} \frac{h_a}{p} m_{ij}^{dev} - c_r \left(\frac{2}{3} m_{rs}^{dev} m_{rs}^{dev} \right)^{0.5} \alpha_{ij} \quad (104.274)$$

where p is pressure of the current stress state. The unit of parameter h_a is Pascal. The parameter c_r is unitless. The α_{ij} in Drucker-Prager is unitless.

The pressure p is introduced for two reasons.

- The center of the yield surface is $p\alpha_{ij}$, not α_{ij} . The kinematic hardening rule is to control the center of the yield surface.
- The unit in equation (104.303) matches after the pressure p is introduced.

When the derivative of backstress $\bar{\alpha}_{ij} = 0$, the tensor α_{ij} reaches the tensor limit.

$$\alpha_{ij}^{lim} = \sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} \frac{h_a}{p c_r} \frac{m_{ij}^{dev}}{\sqrt{m_{rs}^{dev} m_{rs}^{dev}}} \quad (104.275)$$

Some useful tensor derivatives for Drucker-Prager $\bar{\alpha}$.

$$m_{ij}^{dev} = m_{ij} - \frac{1}{3} m_{kl} \delta_{kl} \delta_{ij} \quad (104.276)$$

- Useful tensor derivatives for Drucker-Prager $\bar{\alpha}$ with respect to σ .

$$\frac{\partial \bar{\alpha}_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} = \frac{2}{3} \frac{h_a}{p} \frac{\partial m_{ij}^{dev}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} + \frac{2}{9p^2} h_a m_{ij}^{dev} \delta_{mn} - \frac{2}{3} c_r m_{rs}^{dev} \frac{\partial m_{rs}^{dev}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} \left(\frac{2}{3} m_{kl}^{dev} m_{kl}^{dev} \right)^{-0.5} \alpha_{ij} \quad (104.277)$$

where

$$\frac{\partial m_{ij}^{dev}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} = \frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} - \frac{1}{3} \frac{\partial m_{ot}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} \delta_{ot} \delta_{ij} \quad (104.278)$$

- Useful tensor derivatives for Drucker-Prager $\bar{\alpha}$ with respect to α .

$$\frac{\partial \bar{\alpha}_{ij}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} = \frac{2}{3} \frac{h_a}{p} \frac{\partial m_{ij}^{dev}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} - \frac{2}{3} c_r m_{rs}^{dev} \frac{\partial m_{rs}^{dev}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} \left(\frac{2}{3} m_{kl}^{dev} m_{kl}^{dev} \right)^{-0.5} \alpha_{ij} - c_r \left(\frac{2}{3} m_{pq}^{dev} m_{pq}^{dev} \right)^{0.5} \delta_{im} \delta_{jn} \quad (104.279)$$

where

$$\frac{\partial m_{ij}^{dev}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} = \frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} - \frac{1}{3} \frac{\partial m_{ot}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} \delta_{ot} \delta_{ij} \quad (104.280)$$

- Useful tensor derivatives for Drucker-Prager $\bar{\alpha}$ with respect to k .

$$\frac{\partial \bar{\alpha}_{ij}}{\partial k} = \frac{2}{3} \frac{h_a}{p} \frac{\partial m_{ij}^{dev}}{\partial k} - \sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} c_r \alpha_{ij} (m_{rs}^{dev} m_{rs}^{dev})^{-0.5} \frac{\partial m_{pq}^{dev}}{\partial k} m_{pq}^{dev} \quad (104.281)$$

where

$$\frac{\partial m_{ij}^{dev}}{\partial k} = \frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial k} - \frac{1}{3} \frac{\partial m_{ot}}{\partial k} \delta_{ot} \delta_{ij} \quad (104.282)$$

104.6.7.4 Federico's Description of a Drucker–Prager Kinematic Hardenig Model

Presented is a concise description of nonlinear rotational kinematic hardening (Armstrong-Frederick) Drucker-Prager model ([Lemaitre and Chaboche, 1990](#)).

Elastic behavior The standard Hooke's law has been assumed for the sake of simplicity.

Yield function The yield locus is of the same kind described by [Prevost \(1985a\)](#) and [Manzari and Dafalias \(1997\)](#), i.e. conical and allowed to rotate around its apex (the centre of rotation coincides – for cohesionless materials – with the origin of the principal stress space):

$$f = \sqrt{(s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij})(s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij})} - \sqrt{\frac{2}{3}}kp = 0 \quad (104.283)$$

in which p is the isotropic mean pressure, α_{ij} the back-stress ratio tensor and k a constitutive surface parameter⁶². While this latter governs the opening angle of the cone, α_{ij} is a second-rank deviatoric tensor determining the yield locus rotation.

Plastic flow rule As usual, the incremental plastic strain tensor can be expressed as:

$$\epsilon_{ij}^p = \dot{\lambda} m_{ij} \quad (104.284)$$

where $\dot{\lambda}$ is a scalar plastic multiplier and m_{ij} assigning the direction of the plastic flow. While in the associated version of the model m_{ij} would coincide with the stress gradient of the yield function (104.283), here the following non-associated flow rule has been adopted ([Prevost, 1985a](#); [Manzari and Dafalias, 1997](#)):

$$m_{ij} = \left(\frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} \right)^{dev} - \frac{1}{3} D \delta_{ij} \quad (104.285)$$

where the superscript ^{dev} and δ_{ij} denote the “deviatoric” tensor operator and the Kronecker hydrostatic tensor, respectively, and D is a dilatancy coefficient defined as:

$$D = \xi \left(\sqrt{\frac{2}{3}}k_d - \sqrt{r_{mn}r_{mn}} \right) \quad (104.286)$$

Here, we defined normalized deviatoric stress tensor $r_{ij} = s_{ij}/p$.

⁶²stresses are meant here to be effective

Apparently, the flow rule (104.285) implies the deviatoric plastic strain increment to be associated, while non-associativeness holds for the volumetric component. The definition (104.286) requires two constitutive parameters to be identified, namely k_d and ξ : the former represents the stress obliquity for the transition from contractive to dilative response; the latter quantitatively governs the volumetric plastic strain rate. Specifically, k_d denotes the existence of a “dilatancy surface”, the soil response being contractive for inner stress states and dilative otherwise; this surface – characterized by no volumetric plastic strain – is still a Drucker–Prager conical locus, fixed in the principal stress space and with an opening angle given by k_d .

Armstrong–Frederick kinematic hardening rule The last ingredient in the model formulation is represented by the hardening rule for the internal variable α_{ij} . Here, an Armstrong–Frederick hardening (Armstrong and Frederick, 1966; Lemaitre and Chaboche, 1990) has been introduced:

$$\dot{\alpha}_{ij} = \frac{2}{3} h_a (\epsilon_{ij}^p)^{dev} - c_r \alpha_{ij} \sqrt{\frac{2}{3} (\epsilon_{rs}^p)^{dev} (\epsilon_{rs}^p)^{dev}} \quad (104.287)$$

where h_a and c_r are two hardening constitutive parameters. Equation (104.287) yields a saturation-type evolution under deviatoric plastic straining, up to the achievement of a limit back-stress ratio α_{ij}^{lim} . Starting from (104.287), it could be easily proven that:

$$\|\alpha_{ij}^{lim}\| = \sqrt{\frac{2}{3} \frac{h_a}{c_r}} \quad (104.288)$$

i.e. the norm of the limit tensor α_{ij}^{lim} exclusively depends on the h_a/c_r ratio for any value of the Lode angle. The existence of an outer bound for α_{ij} implies all feasible stress states to lie within a so-called bounding surface, determined both by α_{ij}^{lim} and the opening of the yield locus $f = 0$ (104.283). The bounding surface, governing the shear strength of the material, is in this case a Lode-angle insensitive Drucker–Prager cone: in the simplest case of triaxial loading, the limit stress obliquity M can be shown to equal:

$$M = \left(\frac{q}{p'} \right)_{failure} = k + \frac{h_a}{c_r} \quad (104.289)$$

both in compression and extension. From the above analytical relationships it can be inferred that the material shear strength is ruled by the ratio h_a/c_r , whereas c_r determines the evolution rate of the back-stress tensor α_{ij} .

104.6.7.5 Han's Description of Drucker–Prager Model with Armstrong–Frederick Kinematic Hardening

Presented is a new description of non-associated Drucker-Prager model with nonlinear Armstrong-Frederick kinematic hardening. Compared with the traditional description shown in earlier sections, the main difference in this description is taking into consideration of the symmetry nature of stress and strain tensors. As a result, some of the derivatives of plastic flow and internal variable are different. More importantly, this change leads to a consistent stiffness tensor that has minor symmetry.

Elastic Behavior The elastic behavior is modeled as linear elastic, following classic generalized Hook's law. The elastic stiffness tensor is that for isotropic, linear elastic material (Equation 104.163).

$$E_{ijkl} = \frac{E}{2(1+\nu)} \left(\frac{2\nu}{1-2\nu} \delta_{ij}\delta_{kl} + \delta_{ik}\delta_{jl} + \delta_{il}\delta_{jk} \right) \quad (104.290)$$

Yield Function The yield function and its derivatives remain unchanged.

$$f = [(s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij})(s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij})]^{0.5} - \sqrt{\frac{2}{3}}kp = 0 \quad (104.291)$$

$$\frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} = \left[(s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij}) + \frac{1}{3}\alpha_{mn}\delta_{ij}(s_{mn} - p\alpha_{mn}) \right] [(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})]^{-0.5} + \sqrt{\frac{2}{27}}k\delta_{ij} \quad (104.292)$$

$$\frac{\partial f}{\partial \alpha_{ij}} = -p(s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij}) [(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})]^{-0.5} \quad (104.293)$$

$$\frac{\partial f}{\partial k} = -\sqrt{\frac{2}{3}}p \quad (104.294)$$

Plastic Flow The changes in derivatives of plastic flow, and later in hardening, comes from the clarification of derivative of the stress tensor with respect to itself. According to Park (2018), since the stress tensor is intrinsically symmetric, its derivative with respect to itself should be:

$$\frac{\partial \sigma_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} = \frac{1}{2} (\delta_{im}\delta_{jn} + \delta_{in}\delta_{jm}) \quad (104.295)$$

Then, the derivative of deviatoric stress with respect to stress becomes:

$$\frac{\partial s_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} = \frac{1}{2}\delta_{im}\delta_{jn} + \frac{1}{2}\delta_{in}\delta_{jm} - \frac{1}{3}\delta_{mn}\delta_{ij} \quad (104.296)$$

The non-associated plastic flow still has the same form:

$$m_{ij} = \left(\frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} \right)^{dev} - \frac{1}{3}D\delta_{ij} = (s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij}) [(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})]^{-0.5} - \frac{1}{3}D\delta_{ij} \quad (104.297)$$

where

$$D = \xi \left(\sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} k_d - \frac{\sqrt{s_{mn}s_{mn}}}{p} \right) \quad (104.298)$$

and

$$\frac{\partial D}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} = -\xi \left[p^{-1} s_{mn} (s_{kl}s_{kl})^{-0.5} + \frac{1}{3} p^{-2} \delta_{mn} (s_{ot}s_{ot})^{0.5} \right] \quad (104.299)$$

Therefore,

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} = & \left(\frac{1}{2} \delta_{im} \delta_{jn} + \frac{1}{2} \delta_{in} \delta_{jm} - \frac{1}{3} \delta_{mn} \delta_{ij} + \frac{1}{3} \delta_{mn} \alpha_{ij} \right) [(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})]^{-0.5} \\ & - (s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij}) \left[(s_{mn} - p\alpha_{mn}) + \frac{1}{3} \alpha_{rs} (s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs}) \delta_{mn} \right] [(s_{tu} - p\alpha_{tu})(s_{tu} - p\alpha_{tu})]^{-1.5} \\ & + \frac{1}{3} \xi \left[s_{mn} p^{-1} (s_{kl}s_{kl})^{-0.5} + \frac{1}{3} \delta_{mn} p^{-2} (s_{ot}s_{ot})^{0.5} \right] \delta_{ij} \end{aligned} \quad (104.300)$$

$$\frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial k} = 0 \quad (104.301)$$

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} = & -p \left(\frac{1}{2} \delta_{mi} \delta_{nj} + \frac{1}{2} \delta_{mj} \delta_{ni} \right) [(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})]^{-0.5} \\ & + p (s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij}) (s_{mn} - p\alpha_{mn}) [(s_{tu} - p\alpha_{tu})(s_{tu} - p\alpha_{tu})]^{-1.5} \end{aligned} \quad (104.302)$$

Armstrong-Frederick kinematic hardening for Drucker-Prager

$$\bar{\alpha}_{ij} = \frac{2}{3} \frac{h_a}{p_{atm}} m_{ij}^{dev} - c_r \left(\frac{2}{3} m_{rs}^{dev} m_{rs}^{dev} \right)^{0.5} \alpha_{ij} \quad (104.303)$$

where p_{atm} is the atmospheric pressure of 101.325 kPa. The unit of parameter h_a is Pascal. The parameter c_r is unitless. The α_{ij} in Drucker-Prager is unitless. The atmospheric pressure p_{atm} is introduced so that the unit in equation (104.303) matches.

Notice that

$$m_{rs}^{dev} m_{rs}^{dev} = (s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs}) [(s_{tu} - p\alpha_{tu})(s_{tu} - p\alpha_{tu})]^{-1} = 1 \quad (104.304)$$

This means the hardening equation and related derivatives can be simplified:

$$\bar{\alpha}_{ij} = \frac{2}{3} \frac{h_a}{p_{atm}} m_{ij}^{dev} - \sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} c_r \alpha_{ij} \quad (104.305)$$

When the derivative of backstress $\bar{\alpha}_{ij} = 0$, the tensor α_{ij} reaches the tensor limit:

$$\alpha_{ij}^{lim} = \sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} \frac{h_a}{p_{atm} c_r} m_{ij}^{dev} \quad (104.306)$$

Some useful tensor derivatives for Drucker-Prager $\bar{\alpha}$.

$$m_{ij}^{dev} = (s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij}) [(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})]^{-0.5} \quad (104.307)$$

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial m_{ij}^{dev}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} = & \left(\frac{1}{2} \delta_{im} \delta_{jn} + \frac{1}{2} \delta_{in} \delta_{jm} - \frac{1}{3} \delta_{mn} \delta_{ij} + \frac{1}{3} \delta_{mn} \alpha_{ij} \right) [(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})]^{-0.5} \\ & - (s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij}) \left[(s_{mn} - p\alpha_{mn}) + \frac{1}{3} \alpha_{rs} (s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs}) \delta_{mn} \right] [(s_{tu} - p\alpha_{tu})(s_{tu} - p\alpha_{tu})]^{-1.5} \end{aligned} \quad (104.308)$$

$$\frac{\partial m_{ij}^{dev}}{\partial k} = 0 \quad (104.309)$$

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial m_{ij}^{dev}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} = & -p \left(\frac{1}{2} \delta_{im} \delta_{jn} + \frac{1}{2} \delta_{in} \delta_{jm} \right) [(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})]^{-0.5} \\ & - p (s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij}) (s_{mn} - p\alpha_{mn}) [(s_{tu} - p\alpha_{tu})(s_{tu} - p\alpha_{tu})]^{-1.5} \end{aligned} \quad (104.310)$$

- Tensor derivative of Drucker-Prager $\bar{\alpha}_{ij}$ with respect to σ_{ij} .

$$\frac{\partial \bar{\alpha}_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} = \frac{2h_a}{3p_{atm}} \frac{\partial m_{ij}^{dev}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} \quad (104.311)$$

- Tensor derivative of Drucker-Prager $\bar{\alpha}_{ij}$ with respect to k .

$$\frac{\partial \bar{\alpha}_{ij}}{\partial k} = 0 \quad (104.312)$$

- Tensor derivative of Drucker-Prager $\bar{\alpha}_{ij}$ with respect to α_{ij} .

$$\frac{\partial \bar{\alpha}_{ij}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} = \frac{2h_a}{3p_{atm}} \frac{\partial m_{ij}^{dev}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} - \sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} c_r \left(\frac{1}{2} \delta_{im} \delta_{jn} + \frac{1}{2} \delta_{in} \delta_{jm} \right) \quad (104.313)$$

104.6.8 Hyperbolic Drucker Prager Model

104.6.8.1 Original Yield Function and Hyperbolic Function

The original Drucker-Prager yield function is

$$\Phi(\sigma) = \sqrt{J_2} - \eta p - \xi \quad (104.314)$$

where

$$\eta = \frac{3 \tan \phi}{\sqrt{9 + 12 \tan^2 \phi}} \quad (104.315)$$

$$\xi = \frac{3c}{\sqrt{9 + 12 \tan^2 \phi}} \quad (104.316)$$

where ϕ is the friction ratio, and c is the cohesion. Besides, the constant η is unitless. The unit of constant ξ is *Pascal*. In addition, here we define that p is compression-positive. Namely, $p = -\frac{\sigma_{ii}}{3}$.

Rewrite the yield function (104.314) with p, q such that

$$\Phi(\sigma) = \frac{q}{\sqrt{3}} - \eta p - \xi \quad (104.317)$$

The slope of the yield surface is $\sqrt{3}\eta$, and the hydrostatic cutoff point is at $(-\frac{\xi}{\eta}, 0)$.

104.6.8.2 Hyperbolic Drucker Prager Model

Assume a standard hyperbolic function is

$$\left(\frac{x-d}{a}\right)^2 - \left(\frac{y}{b}\right)^2 = 1 \quad (104.318)$$

In the hyperbolic function, as showed in the Figure 104.9, the distance between the original apex to the rounded hydrostatic cut-off is a , and the corresponding y value is b . The hydrostatic cut off of the asymptotic line is d .

104.6.8.3 Modified Hyperbolic Drucker Prager

Mapping the Hyperbolic Equation. In the modified hyperbolic Drucker Prager yield surface, the asymptotic line is the original yield surface.

The slope of the asymptotic line is

$$\frac{b}{a} = \sqrt{3}\eta \quad (104.319)$$

The hydrostatic cut-off of the asymptotic line is

$$d = \frac{\xi}{\eta} \quad (104.320)$$

The rounded distance a of the hyperbolic line is a new parameter.

The hyperbolic function is

$$\left(\frac{p + \frac{\xi}{\eta}}{a}\right)^2 - \left(\frac{q}{\sqrt{3} a \eta}\right)^2 = 1 \quad (104.321)$$

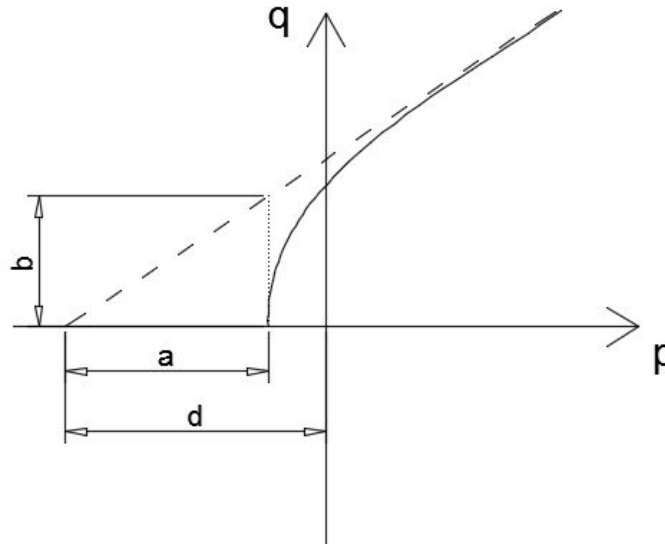


Figure 104.9: The standard hyperbolic function parameters.

Removing the Negative Branch. To remove the negative branch, we need the pressure $(p + \frac{\xi}{\eta})$ always be positive. Therefore,

$$\left(\frac{p + \frac{\xi}{\eta}}{a}\right)^2 = \left(\frac{q}{\sqrt{3} a \eta}\right)^2 + 1 \quad (104.322)$$

Take the root on both sides,

$$\frac{p + \frac{\xi}{\eta}}{a} = \sqrt{\left(\frac{q}{\sqrt{3} a \eta}\right)^2 + 1} \quad (104.323)$$

Inside the hyperbolic To make the yield surface value smaller than zero when the stress state is inside the modified cone, the yield surface is

$$0 = \sqrt{\left(\frac{q}{\sqrt{3} a \eta}\right)^2 + 1} - \frac{p + \frac{\xi}{\eta}}{a} \quad (104.324)$$

Avoiding Zero Denominator. To avoid the zero denominator situation, multiply the equation on both sides by η and a .

$$0 = \sqrt{\left(\frac{q}{\sqrt{3}}\right)^2 + a^2 \eta^2} - \eta p - \xi \quad (104.325)$$

The basic yield function The yield function now has one internal variable η for isotropic hardening.

$$\Phi(\sigma, \eta) = \sqrt{\left(\frac{q}{\sqrt{3}}\right)^2 + a^2\eta^2 - \eta p - \xi} \quad (104.326)$$

Simplify the yield function and substitute $q = \sqrt{\frac{3}{2}s_{ij}s_{ij}}$, we have

$$\Phi(\sigma, \eta) = \sqrt{\frac{1}{2}s_{ij}s_{ij} + a^2\eta^2 - \eta p - \xi} \quad (104.327)$$

Introduce the capability of rotational kinematic hardening by α .

$$\Phi(\sigma, \eta, \alpha) = \sqrt{\frac{1}{2}(s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij})(s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij}) + a^2\eta^2 - \eta p - \xi} \quad (104.328)$$

104.6.8.4 The Non-Associative Plastic Potential Function.

The non-associative plastic flow direction is

$$m_{ij} = \left(\frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}}\right)^{dev} + \frac{1}{3}\bar{\eta}\delta_{ij} \quad (104.329)$$

where $\bar{\eta}$ controls the plastic flow direction. When $\bar{\eta} = 0$, the material has the deviatoric plastic flow only.

The relation between the dilatancy angle and $\bar{\eta}$ is similar to the relation between the friction angle and η .

$$\bar{\eta} = \frac{3\tan\psi}{\sqrt{9 + 12\tan^2\psi}} \quad (104.330)$$

where ψ is the dilatancy angle.

Numerical Issues in the Non-Associative Plastic Potential Function. The non-associative plastic flow rule will have asymmetric stiffness matrix, which requires a asymmetric solver. The non-associative requires smaller subincrements for convergence. One important non-associative plastic potential is the purely deviatoric plastic flow.

The purely deviatoric plastic flow may have the numerical issues for the convergence. For example, in Fig 104.10, the purely deviatoric plastic flow direction can never return back to the yield surface. Subincrements can solve this problem.

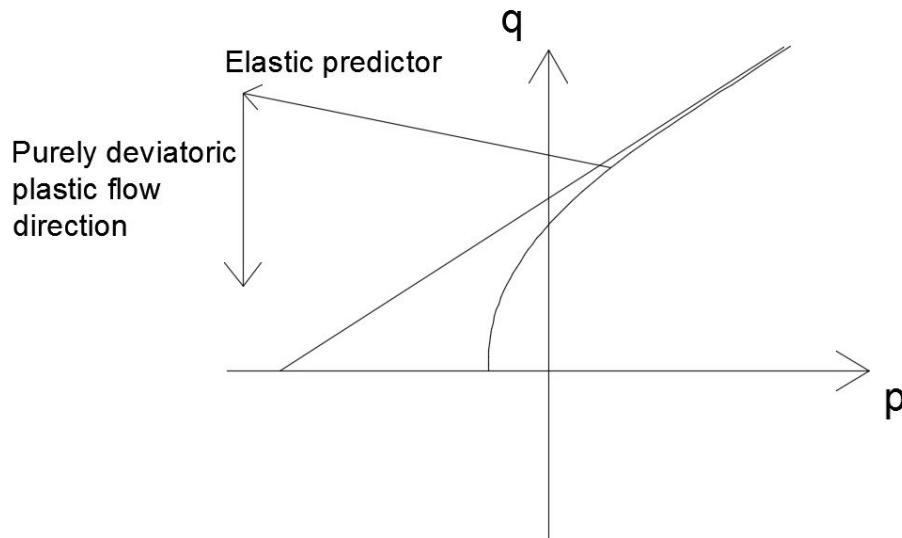


Figure 104.10: The inconvergence situation for purely deviatoric plastic flow.

104.6.8.5 Han's Description of Hyperbolic Drucker–Prager Model with Armstrong–Frederick Kinematic Hardening

Presented is a new description of non-associated hyperbolic Drucker-Prager model with nonlinear Armstrong-Frederick kinematic hardening. It's intended to keep the same theoretical framework and the same set of material parameters as the Drucker-Prager material model shown in section 104.6.7.5.

Classic Drucker–Prager Yield Function with Cohesion This is the yield function shown in Equation 104.237, extended to considering cohesion

$$f = q - Mp - \sqrt{3}\beta \quad (104.331)$$

where

$$M = \frac{6 \sin \phi}{3 - \sin \phi} \quad \text{and} \quad \beta = \frac{6 \cos \phi_0}{\sqrt{3} (3 - \sin \phi_0)} c \quad (104.332)$$

Note that ϕ is the friction angle, which can evolve if hardening is present in the model, and ϕ_0 is the initial friction angle.

Rewrite Equation 104.333 using the parameters in Real-ESSI implementation

$$f = \sqrt{(s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij})(s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij})} - \sqrt{\frac{2}{3}}kp - \sqrt{2}\beta \quad (104.333)$$

Hyperbolic Drucker–Prager Yield Function Assume the same generic hyperbolic function shown in Equation 104.318, the hyperbolic Drucker-Prager yield function considering isotropic and kinematic

hardening is given as

$$f = \sqrt{(s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij})(s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij}) + \frac{2}{3}k^2a^2} - \sqrt{\frac{2}{3}}kp - \sqrt{2}\beta \quad (104.334)$$

where a is the rounded distance shown in Figure 104.9.

Derivatives of the yield function Equation 104.334 are shown below.

$$\frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} = \left[(s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij}) + \frac{1}{3}\alpha_{kl}(s_{kl} - p\alpha_{kl})\delta_{ij} \right] \left[(s_{mn} - p\alpha_{mn})(s_{mn} - p\alpha_{mn}) + \frac{2}{3}k^2a^2 \right]^{-0.5} + \sqrt{\frac{2}{27}}k\delta_{ij} \quad (104.335)$$

$$\frac{\partial f}{\partial \alpha_{ij}} = -p(s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij}) \left[(s_{mn} - p\alpha_{mn})(s_{mn} - p\alpha_{mn}) + \frac{2}{3}k^2a^2 \right]^{-0.5} \quad (104.336)$$

$$\frac{\partial f}{\partial k} = \frac{2}{3}ka^2 \left[(s_{mn} - p\alpha_{mn})(s_{mn} - p\alpha_{mn}) + \frac{2}{3}k^2a^2 \right]^{-0.5} - \sqrt{\frac{2}{3}}p \quad (104.337)$$

Plastic Flow The non-associated plastic flow is defined as

$$m_{ij} = \left(\frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} \right)^{dev} - \frac{1}{3}D\delta_{ij} = (s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij}) \left[(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs}) + \frac{2}{3}k^2a^2 \right]^{-0.5} - \frac{1}{3}D\delta_{ij} \quad (104.338)$$

where

$$D = \xi \left(\sqrt{\frac{2}{3}}k_d - \frac{\sqrt{s_{mn}s_{mn}}}{p} \right) \quad (104.339)$$

The derivatives of the plastic flow are shown below.

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} = & \left(\frac{1}{2}\delta_{im}\delta_{jn} + \frac{1}{2}\delta_{in}\delta_{jm} - \frac{1}{3}\delta_{mn}\delta_{ij} + \frac{1}{3}\delta_{mn}\alpha_{ij} \right) \left[(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs}) + \frac{2}{3}k^2a^2 \right]^{-0.5} \\ & - (s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij}) \left[(s_{mn} - p\alpha_{mn}) + \frac{1}{3}\alpha_{rs}(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})\delta_{mn} \right] \left[(s_{tu} - p\alpha_{tu})(s_{tu} - p\alpha_{tu}) + \frac{2}{3}k^2a^2 \right]^{-1.5} \\ & + \frac{1}{3}\xi \left[s_{mn}p^{-1}(s_{kl}s_{kl})^{-0.5} + \frac{1}{3}\delta_{mn}p^{-2}(s_{ot}s_{ot})^{0.5} \right] \delta_{ij} \end{aligned} \quad (104.340)$$

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} = & -p \left(\frac{1}{2}\delta_{mi}\delta_{nj} + \frac{1}{2}\delta_{mj}\delta_{ni} \right) \left[(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs}) + \frac{2}{3}k^2a^2 \right]^{-0.5} \\ & + p(s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij})(s_{mn} - p\alpha_{mn}) \left[(s_{tu} - p\alpha_{tu})(s_{tu} - p\alpha_{tu}) + \frac{2}{3}k^2a^2 \right]^{-1.5} \end{aligned} \quad (104.341)$$

$$\frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial k} = -\frac{2}{3}ka^2(s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij})(s_{mn} - p\alpha_{mn}) \left[(s_{tu} - p\alpha_{tu})(s_{tu} - p\alpha_{tu}) + \frac{2}{3}k^2a^2 \right]^{-1.5} \quad (104.342)$$

Linear Isotropic Hardening Linear isotropic hardening is used for this material model. The evolution of the internal variable k is defined as

$$\bar{k} = Hm^{equi} \quad , \quad m^{equi} = \left(\frac{2}{3} m_{ij} m_{ij} \right)^{0.5} \quad (104.343)$$

where H is a material constant.

The derivatives of the internal variable k are shown below.

$$\frac{\partial \bar{k}}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} = \frac{2H}{3} m_{kl} \frac{\partial m_{kl}}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} \left(m^{equi} \right)^{-1} \quad (104.344)$$

$$\frac{\partial \bar{k}}{\partial \alpha_{ij}} = \frac{2H}{3} m_{kl} \frac{\partial m_{kl}}{\partial \alpha_{ij}} \left(m^{equi} \right)^{-1} \quad (104.345)$$

$$\frac{\partial \bar{k}}{\partial k} = \frac{2H}{3} m_{kl} \frac{\partial m_{kl}}{\partial k} \left(m^{equi} \right)^{-1} \quad (104.346)$$

Armstrong-Frederick kinematic hardening for Hyperbolic Drucker-Prager

$$\bar{\alpha}_{ij} = \frac{2}{3} \frac{h_a}{p_{atm}} m_{ij}^{dev} - c_r \left(\frac{2}{3} m_{rs}^{dev} m_{rs}^{dev} \right)^{0.5} \alpha_{ij} \quad (104.347)$$

where p_{atm} is the atmospheric pressure of 101.325 kPa. The unit of parameter h_a is Pascal. The parameter c_r is unitless. The α_{ij} in Drucker-Prager is unitless.

Some useful tensor derivatives for Drucker-Prager $\bar{\alpha}$.

$$m_{ij}^{dev} = (s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij}) \left[(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs}) + \frac{2}{3} k^2 a^2 \right]^{-0.5} \quad (104.348)$$

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial m_{ij}^{dev}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} = & \left(\frac{1}{2} \delta_{im} \delta_{jn} + \frac{1}{2} \delta_{in} \delta_{jm} - \frac{1}{3} \delta_{mn} \delta_{ij} + \frac{1}{3} \delta_{mn} \alpha_{ij} \right) \left[(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs}) + \frac{2}{3} k^2 a^2 \right]^{-0.5} \\ & - (s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij}) \left[(s_{mn} - p\alpha_{mn}) + \frac{1}{3} \alpha_{rs} (s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs}) \delta_{mn} \right] \left[(s_{tu} - p\alpha_{tu})(s_{tu} - p\alpha_{tu}) + \frac{2}{3} k^2 a^2 \right]^{-1.5} \end{aligned} \quad (104.349)$$

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial m_{ij}^{dev}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} = & -p \left(\frac{1}{2} \delta_{im} \delta_{jn} + \frac{1}{2} \delta_{in} \delta_{jm} \right) \left[(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs}) + \frac{2}{3} k^2 a^2 \right]^{-0.5} \\ & - p (s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij}) (s_{mn} - p\alpha_{mn}) \left[(s_{tu} - p\alpha_{tu})(s_{tu} - p\alpha_{tu}) + \frac{2}{3} k^2 a^2 \right]^{-1.5} \end{aligned} \quad (104.350)$$

$$\frac{\partial m_{ij}^{dev}}{\partial k} = -\frac{2}{3}ka^2 (s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij}) (s_{mn} - p\alpha_{mn}) \left[(s_{tu} - p\alpha_{tu}) (s_{tu} - p\alpha_{tu}) + \frac{2}{3}k^2a^2 \right]^{-1.5} \quad (104.351)$$

Tensor derivative of Drucker-Prager $\bar{\alpha}_{ij}$ with respect to σ_{ij} .

$$\frac{\partial \bar{\alpha}_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} = \frac{2h_a}{3p_{atm}} \frac{\partial m_{ij}^{dev}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} - \frac{2}{3}c_r m_{kl}^{dev} \frac{\partial m_{kl}^{dev}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} \left(\frac{2}{3}m_{rs}^{dev} m_{rs}^{dev} \right)^{-0.5} \alpha_{ij} \quad (104.352)$$

Tensor derivative of Drucker-Prager $\bar{\alpha}_{ij}$ with respect to α_{ij} .

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial \bar{\alpha}_{ij}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} &= \frac{2h_a}{3p_{atm}} \frac{\partial m_{ij}^{dev}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} - \frac{2}{3}c_r m_{kl}^{dev} \frac{\partial m_{kl}^{dev}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} \left(\frac{2}{3}m_{rs}^{dev} m_{rs}^{dev} \right)^{-0.5} \alpha_{ij} \\ &\quad - c_r \left(\frac{2}{3}m_{rs}^{dev} m_{rs}^{dev} \right)^{0.5} \left(\frac{1}{2}\delta_{mi}\delta_{nj} + \frac{1}{2}\delta_{mj}\delta_{ni} \right) \end{aligned} \quad (104.353)$$

Tensor derivative of Drucker-Prager $\bar{\alpha}_{ij}$ with respect to k .

$$\frac{\partial \bar{\alpha}_{ij}}{\partial k} = \frac{2h_a}{3p_{atm}} \frac{\partial m_{ij}^{dev}}{\partial k} - \frac{2}{3}c_r m_{kl}^{dev} \frac{\partial m_{kl}^{dev}}{\partial k} \left(\frac{2}{3}m_{rs}^{dev} m_{rs}^{dev} \right)^{-0.5} \alpha_{ij} \quad (104.354)$$

104.6.9 Rounded Mohr-Coulomb Model

DSL COMMANDS for the rounded Mohr-Coulomb material models are given in section 205.3 on page 827.

The model consists of a smooth conical yield surface. This conical yield surface has an apex that is located at the zero of stress coordinate system or to the extension side, depending on the cohesion characteristic of material in question. The yield surface is defined by:

$$F(p, q, \theta, \kappa_{cone}) = q \left(1 + \frac{q}{q_a} \right)^m g(\theta) - \eta_{cone}(\kappa_{cone}) (p - p_c) \quad (104.355)$$

where q_a is a (positive) reference deviator stress, m is a material constant such that $0 \leq m \leq 1$, controlling the curvature of the cone in the meridian (p, q) planes, η_{cone} represents the angle of internal friction, and p_c represents the cohesion. η_{cone} is a function of the hardening variable κ_{cone} which, in turn, is a function of the plastic work. Moreover, an asymmetric trace of the yield surface in the deviatoric plane is generated through the introduction of $g(\theta)$ according to the expression by Willam and Warnke (1974):

$$g(\theta) = \frac{4(1 - e^2) \cos^2 \theta + (2e - 1)^2}{2(1 - e^2) \cos \theta + (2e - 1) \sqrt{4(1 - e^2) \cos^2 \theta + 5e^2 - 4e}} \quad (104.356)$$

and e is an eccentricity parameter that satisfies the condition $1/2 < e \leq 1$. From eqn. (104.356) we conclude that $g(0) = 1/e$ and $g(\pi/3) = 1$. For $e = 1 \Rightarrow g(\theta) = 1$, so the influence of the third stress

invariant via θ is dropped and the conical surface represents a curved cone⁶³. For $e \rightarrow 1/2$ the triangular cone⁶⁴ is obtained. A nice pictorial representation of function $1/g(\theta)$ is presented in the Figure (104.6.9), showing material model traces in the deviatoric plane.

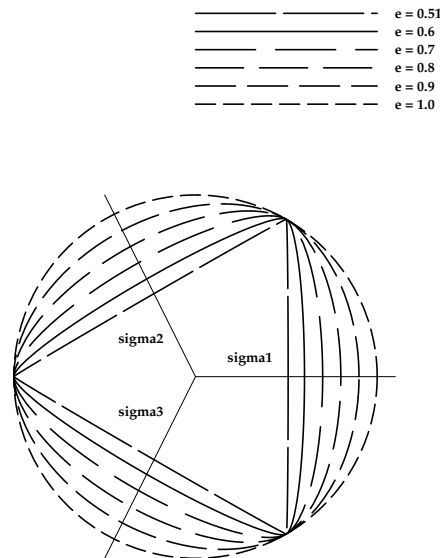


Figure 104.11: Willam Warnke function $1/g$ for different values of e ($e = 0.51, 0.6, 0.7, 0.8, 0.9, 1.0$) representing traces of rounded Mohr-Coulomb model in deviatoric space.

104.6.10 Modified Cam-Clay Model

DSL COMMANDS for the Modified Cam Clay material models are given in section 205.3 on page 827.

The pioneering research work on the critical state soil mechanics by the researchers at Cambridge University (Roscoe et al., 1958), (Roscoe and Burland, 1968), (Muir Wood, 1990)) has made great contribution on the modern soil elastoplastic models. The original Cam Clay model (Roscoe et al., 1963), and later the modified Cam Clay model (Schofield and Wroth, 1968) were within the critical state soil mechanics framework. We focus on only the modified Cam Clay model and herein the word 'modified' is omitted to shorten writing.

⁶³extended Drucker Prager cone.

⁶⁴extended Rankine yield criteria.

104.6.10.1 Critical State

The critical state line (CSL) takes the form

$$e_c = e_{c,r} - \lambda_c \ln p_c \quad (104.357)$$

where e_c is the critical void ratio at the critical mean effective stress p_c ⁶⁵, $e_{c,r}$ is the reference critical void ratio, λ_c is the normal consolidation slope.

The critical state soil mechanics assumes that the normal consolidation line (NRL) is parallel to the CSL, which is expressed by

$$e = e_\lambda - \lambda \ln p \quad (104.358)$$

where e_λ is the intercept on the NRL at $p = 1$. λ is the normal consolidation slope or the elastoplastic slope of $e - \ln p$ relation, and $\lambda_c = \lambda$.

The unloading-reloading line (URL) take the similar form but with different slope by

$$e = e_\kappa - \kappa \ln p \quad (104.359)$$

where e_κ is the intercept on the URL at $p = 1$. λ_c is the normal consolidation slope or the elastoplastic slope of $e - \ln p$ relation.

104.6.10.2 Elasticity

The elastic bulk modulus K can be directly derived from the Equation 104.359 and takes the form

$$K = \frac{(1+e)p}{\kappa} \quad (104.360)$$

If a constant Poisson's ratio ν is assumed, since the isotropic elasticity needs only two material constants, the shear elastic modulus can be obtained in terms of K and ν by

$$G = \frac{3(1-2\nu)}{2(1+\nu)} K = \frac{3(1-2\nu)(1+e)}{2(1+\nu)\kappa} p \quad (104.361)$$

Alternatively, a constant shear elastic modulus G can be assumed and then the Poisson's ratio ν is expressed in terms of K and G as

$$\nu = \frac{3K - 2G}{2(G + 3K)} \quad (104.362)$$

⁶⁵In this chapter, only single-phase (dry phase) is studied, the total and effective stresses are thus identical, e.g. $p'_c = p_c$.

104.6.10.3 Yield Function

The yield function of the Cam Clay model is defined by

$$f = q^2 - M_c^2 [p(p_0 - p)] = 0 \quad (104.363)$$

where M_c is the critical state stress ratio in the $q-p$ plane, and the p_0 is the initial internal scalar variable, which is controlled by the change of the plastic volumetric strain.

The gradient of the yield surface to the stress can be obtained as

$$\frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} = 2q \frac{\partial q}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} - M_c^2 (2p - p_0) \frac{\partial p}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} = 3s_{ij} + \frac{1}{3} M_c^2 (p_0 - 2p) \delta_{ij} \quad (104.364)$$

where $\partial q / \partial \sigma_{ij}$ and $\partial p / \partial \sigma_{ij}$ are independent of the yield function.

The gradient of the yield surface to p_0 will be used in the integration algorithm, and can be expressed by

$$\frac{\partial f}{\partial p_0} = M_c^2 p \quad (104.365)$$

104.6.10.4 Plastic Flow

The plastic flow of the Cam Clay model is associated with its yield function, in other words, the plastic flow is defined by the potential function, g , which is assumed the same as the yield function, f .

$$g = f = q^2 - M_c^2 [p(p_0 - p)] = 0 \quad (104.366)$$

The stress gradient to the yield surface can be obtained as

$$m_{ij} = \frac{\partial g}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} = 2q \frac{\partial q}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} + M_c^2 (2p - p_0) \frac{\partial p}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} = 3s_{ij} + \frac{1}{3} M_c^2 (p_0 - 2p) \delta_{ij} \quad (104.367)$$

It can define the plastic dilation angle β , which is related to the ratio of plastic volumetric and deviatoric strain (Muir Wood, 1990), by

$$\tan \beta = -\frac{\Delta \epsilon_v^p}{\Delta \epsilon_q^p} = \frac{M_c^2 (p_0 - 2p)}{2q} \quad (104.368)$$

It is interesting to find that from Equation 104.368, when $p < p_0/2$, the plastic dilation angle is positive; when $p > p_0/2$, the plastic dilation angle is negative. If $p = p_0/2$, the plastic dilation angle is zero, which is corresponding to the critical state. This is evidently more realistic than Drucker-Prager model, whose associated plastic flow always gives positive plastic dilation angle.

104.6.10.5 Evolution Law

The evolution law of the Cam Clay model is a scalar one, which can be expressed by

$$\dot{p}_0 = \frac{(1+e)p_0}{\lambda - \kappa} \dot{\epsilon}_v^p \quad (104.369)$$

With this scalar evolution law, the change of p_0 is decided by the change of plastic volumetric strain. When it reaches the critical state, or when there is no plastic volumetric strain, the evolution of p_0 will cease. From Equation 104.369, one gets

$$\dot{p}_0 = \dot{\lambda} \frac{(1+e)p_0}{\lambda - \kappa} m_{ii} \quad (104.370)$$

so if using Equation 104.367 further, one obtains

$$h = \frac{(1+e)p_0}{\lambda - \kappa} M_c^2 (2p - p_0) \quad (104.371)$$

or using dilation angle,

$$h = \frac{2(1+e)p_0 q}{\lambda - \kappa} \tan \beta \quad (104.372)$$

104.6.10.6 Yield and Plastic Potential Functions: Cam-Clay Model

Yield function and related derivatives

$$f = q^2 - M_c^2 [p(p_0 - p)] = 0 \quad (104.373)$$

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} &= 2q \frac{\partial q}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} - M_c^2 (2p - p_0) \frac{\partial p}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} \\ &= 3s_{ij} + \frac{1}{3} M_c^2 (p_0 - 2p) \delta_{ij} \end{aligned} \quad (104.374)$$

$$\frac{\partial f}{\partial p_0} = -M_c^2 p \quad (104.375)$$

Plastic flow (associated plasticity) and related derivatives

$$m_{ij} = \frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} = 3s_{ij} + \frac{1}{3} M_c^2 (p_0 - 2p) \delta_{ij} \quad (104.376)$$

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} &= 3 \frac{\partial s_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} - \frac{2}{3} M_c^2 \delta_{ij} \frac{\partial p}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} \\ &= 3\delta_{im}\delta_{jn} - \delta_{ij}\delta_{mn} + \frac{2}{9} M_c^2 \delta_{ij}\delta_{mn} \\ &= 3\delta_{im}\delta_{jn} + \left(\frac{2}{9} M_c^2 - 1 \right) \delta_{ij}\delta_{mn} \end{aligned} \quad (104.377)$$

$$\frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial p_0} = \frac{1}{3} M_c^2 \delta_{ij} \quad (104.378)$$

Isotropic Hardening and related derivatives (CC_Ev) Note the due to the current definition of p (i.e. $p = -\frac{1}{3}\sigma_{ii}$), a minus sign appears in from of the evolution of p_0 as follows:

$$\bar{p}_0 = -\frac{(1+e)p_0}{\lambda - \kappa} m_{ii} \quad (104.379)$$

$$= \frac{(1+e)p_0}{\lambda - \kappa} M_c^2 (2p - p_0) \quad (104.380)$$

$$\frac{\partial \bar{p}_0}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} = \frac{(1+e)p_0}{\lambda - \kappa} M_c^2 \left(-\frac{2}{3} \delta_{ij} \right) \quad (104.381)$$

$$\frac{\partial \bar{p}_0}{\partial p_0} = \frac{2(1+e)}{\lambda - \kappa} M_c^2 (p - p_0) \quad (104.382)$$

104.6.11 SaniSand2004 (aka Dafalias-Manzari) Model

DSL COMMANDS for the Dafalias-Manzari material models are given in section 205.3 on page 827.

Within the critical state soil mechanics framework, [Manzari and Dafalias \(1997\)](#) proposed a two-surface sand model. This model considered the effects of the state parameter on the behaviors of the dense or loose sands. The features of this model include successfully predicting the softening at the dense state in drained loading, and also softening at the loose state but in the undrained loading. [Dafalias and Manzari \(2004a\)](#) later presented an improved version. This version introduced the fabric dilatancy tensor which has a significant effect on the contraction unloading response. It is also considered the Lode's angle effect on the bounding surface, which produces more realistic responses in non-triaxial conditions. Here only the new version is summarized. The compression stress is assumed negative here, which is different from the original reference by [Dafalias and Manzari \(2004a\)](#).

104.6.11.1 Critical State

Instead of using the most common linear line of critical void ration vs. logarithmic critical mean effective stress, the power relation recently suggested by [Li and Wang \(1998\)](#) was used:

$$e_c = e_{c,r} - \lambda_c \left(\frac{p_c}{P_{at}} \right)^\xi \quad (104.383)$$

where e_c is the critical void ratio at the critical man effective stress p'_c , $e_{c,r}$ is the reference critical void ratio, λ_c and ξ (for most sands, $\xi = 0.7$) are material constants, and P_{at} is the atmospheric pressure for normalization.

104.6.11.2 Elasticity

The elastic incremental moduli of shear and bulk, are following [Richart et al. \(1970\)](#):

$$G = G_0 \frac{(2.97 - e)^2}{(1 + e)} \left(\frac{p}{P_{at}} \right)^{0.5} P_{at} ; K = \frac{2(1 + \nu)}{3(1 - 2\nu)} G \quad (104.384)$$

where G_0 is a material constant, e is the void ratio, and ν is the Poisson's ratio.

The isotropic hypoelasticity is then defined by

$$\dot{e}_{ij}^e = \frac{\dot{s}_{ij}}{2G}, \quad \dot{e}_v^e = \frac{\dot{p}}{K} \quad (104.385)$$

104.6.11.3 Yield Function

The yield function is defined by

$$f = |\Lambda| - \sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} m p = 0 \quad (104.386)$$

where s_{ij} is the deviatoric stress tensor, α_{ij} is the deviatoric back stress-ratio tensor, m is a material constant, and

$$|\Lambda| = \|s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij}\| = [(s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij})(s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij})]^{0.5} \quad (104.387)$$

The gradient of the yield surface to the stress can be obtained as

$$\frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} = n_{ij} + \frac{1}{3}(\alpha_{pq} n_{pq} + \sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} m) \delta_{ij} \quad (104.388)$$

where $r_{ij} = s_{ij}/p$ is the normalized deviatoric stress tensor, and n_{ij} is the unit gradient tensor to the yield surface defined by

$$n_{ij} = \frac{s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij}}{|\Lambda|} \quad (104.389)$$

It is evident that $n_{ii} \equiv 0$ and $n_{ij}n_{ij} \equiv 1$.

The gradient of the yield surface to α_{ij} can be easily obtained as

$$\frac{\partial f}{\partial \alpha_{ij}} = -p n_{ij} \quad (104.390)$$

The tensor of n_{ij} is to defined θ_n , the Lode's angle of the yield gradient, by the equation

$$\cos 3\theta_n = -\sqrt{6} n_{ij} n_{jk} n_{ki} \quad (104.391)$$

where $0 \leq \theta_n \leq \pi/6$ and $\theta_n = 0$ at triaxial compression and $\theta_n = \pi/6$ at triaxial extension.

The critical stress ratio M at any stress state can be interpolated between M_c , the triaxial compression critical stress ratio, and M_e , the triaxial extension critical stress ratio.

$$M = M_c g(\theta_n, c), \quad g(\theta_n, c) = \frac{2c}{(1+c) - (1-c) \cos 3\theta_n}, \quad c = \frac{M_e}{M_c} \quad (104.392)$$

The line from the origin of the π plane parallel to n_{ij} will intersect the bounding, critical and dilation surfaces at three 'image' back-stress ratio tensor α_{ij}^b , α_{ij}^c , and α_{ij}^d respectively (Figure 104.12), which are expressed as

$$\alpha_{ij}^b = \sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} [M \exp(-n^b \psi) - m] n_{ij} = \left(\sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} \alpha_{\theta}^b \right) n_{ij} \quad (104.393)$$

$$\alpha_{ij}^c = \sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} [M - m] n_{ij} = \left(\sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} \alpha_{\theta}^c \right) n_{ij} \quad (104.394)$$

$$\alpha_{ij}^d = \sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} [M \exp(n^d \psi) - m] n_{ij} = \left(\sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} \alpha_{\theta}^d \right) n_{ij} \quad (104.395)$$

where $\psi = e - e_c$ is the state parameter; n^b and n^d are material constants.

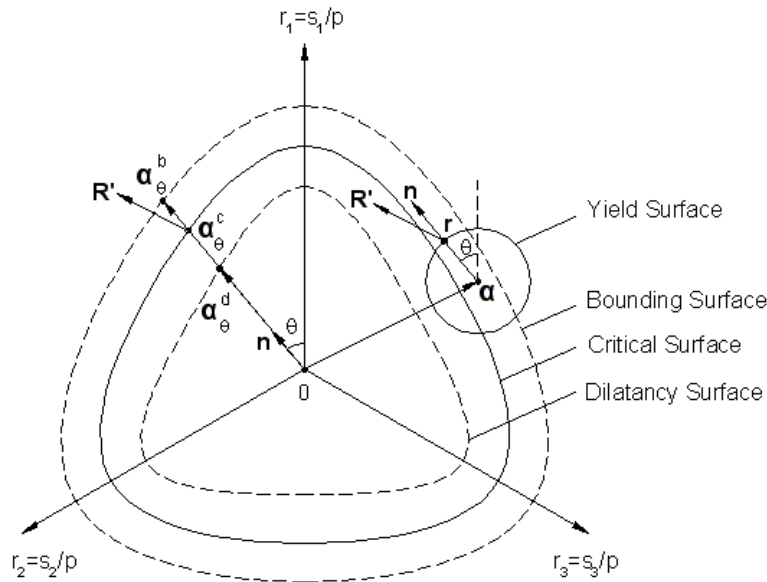


Figure 104.12: Schematic illustration of the yield, critical, dilatancy, and bounding surfaces in the π -plane of deviatoric stress ratio space (after Dafalias and Manzari 2004).

104.6.11.4 Plastic Flow

The plastic strain is given by

$$\dot{\epsilon}_{ij}^p = \dot{\lambda} R_{ij} = \dot{\lambda} (R'_{ij} + \frac{1}{3} D \delta_{ij}) \quad (104.396)$$

The deviatoric plastic flow tensor is

$$R'_{ij} = B n_{ij} + C (n_{ik} n_{kj} - \frac{1}{3} \delta_{ij}) \quad (104.397)$$

where

$$B = 1 + \frac{3}{2} \frac{1-c}{c} g \cos 3\theta_n, \quad C = 3 \sqrt{\frac{3}{2}} \frac{1-c}{c} g \quad (104.398)$$

The volumetric plastic flow part is

$$D = -A_d (\alpha_{ij}^d - \alpha_{ij}) n_{ij} = -A_d \left(\sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} \alpha_{\theta}^d - \alpha_{ij} n_{ij} \right) \quad (104.399)$$

where

$$A_d = A_0 (1 + \langle z_{ij} n_{ij} \rangle) \quad (104.400)$$

A_0 is a material constant, and z_{ij} is the fabric dilation tensor. The Macauley brackets $\langle \rangle$ is defined that $\langle x \rangle = x$, if $x > 0$ and $\langle x \rangle = 0$, if $x \leq 0$.

104.6.11.5 Evolution Laws

This model has two tensorial evolution internal variable, namely, the back stress-ratio tensor α_{ij} and the fabric dilation tensor z_{ij} .

The evolution law for the back stress-ratio tensor α_{ij} is

$$\dot{\alpha}_{ij} = \dot{\lambda} \left[\frac{2}{3} h (\alpha_{ij}^b - \alpha_{ij}) \right] \quad (104.401)$$

with

$$h = \frac{b_0}{(\alpha_{ij} - \tilde{\alpha}_{ij}) n_{ij}} \quad (104.402)$$

where $\tilde{\alpha}_{ij}$ is the initial value of α_{ij} at initiation of a new loading process and is updated to the new value when the denominator of Equation 104.402 becomes negative. b_0 is expressed by

$$b_0 = G_0 h_0 (1 - c_h e) \left(\frac{p}{P_{at}} \right)^{-0.5} \quad (104.403)$$

where h_0 and c_h are material constants.

The evolution law for the fabric dilation tensor z_{ij} is

$$\dot{z}_{ij} = -c_z \langle \dot{D} \rangle (z_{max} n_{ij} + z_{ij}) \quad (104.404)$$

where c_z and z_{max} are material constants.

104.6.11.6 Analytical Derivatives for the Implicit Algorithm

When implemented into an implicit algorithm for the Dafalias-Manzari model, some complicated additional analytical derivatives are needed. This section gives the analytical derivatives expressions based on the tensor calculus.

Analytical expression of $\frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{kl}}$:

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} = & B \frac{\partial n_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} + n_{ij} \frac{\partial B}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} + C \frac{\partial n_{ik}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} n_{kj} + (n_{ik} n_{kj} - \frac{1}{3} \delta_{ij}) \frac{\partial C}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} \\ & + \frac{1}{3} \delta_{ij} \frac{\partial D}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} \end{aligned} \quad (104.405)$$

where

$$\frac{\partial n_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} = \frac{1}{|\Lambda|} \left[I_{ijmn}^s - \frac{1}{3} \delta_{ij} \delta_{mn} + \frac{1}{3} \alpha_{ij} \delta_{mn} - n_{ij} n_{mn} - \frac{1}{3} (\alpha_{ab} n_{ab}) n_{ij} \delta_{mn} \right] \quad (104.406)$$

$$\frac{\partial D}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} = -\frac{\partial A_d}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} \left(\sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} \alpha_{\theta}^d - \alpha_{ab} n_{ab} \right) - A_d \left(\sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} \frac{\partial \alpha_{\theta}^d}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} - \alpha_{ab} \frac{\partial n_{ab}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} \right) \quad (104.407)$$

and

$$\frac{\partial B}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} = \frac{3}{2} \left(\frac{1-c}{c} \right) \left(\frac{\partial g}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} \cos 3\theta + g \frac{\partial \cos 3\theta}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} \right) \quad (104.408)$$

$$\frac{\partial C}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} = 3 \sqrt{\frac{3}{2}} \left(\frac{1-c}{c} \right) \frac{\partial \alpha_{\theta}^d}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} \quad (104.409)$$

$$\frac{\partial \alpha_{\theta}^d}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} = M_c \exp(n^d \psi) \left(g n^d \frac{\partial \psi}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} + \frac{\partial g}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} \right) \quad (104.410)$$

$$\frac{\partial \psi}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} = -\frac{\xi \lambda_c}{3 P_{at}} \left(\frac{p}{P_{at}} \right)^{(\xi-1)} \delta_{mn} \quad (104.411)$$

$$\frac{\partial g}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} = g^2 \left(\frac{1-c}{2c} \right) \frac{\partial \cos 3\theta}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} \quad (104.412)$$

$$\frac{\partial \cos 3\theta}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} = -3\sqrt{6} \frac{\partial n_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} (n_{jk} n_{ki}) \quad (104.413)$$

$$\frac{\partial A_d}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} = A_0 z_{ab} \frac{\partial n_{ab}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} \{ \overline{z_{ab} n_{ab}} \} \quad (104.414)$$

and define $\{\overline{X}\} = 1$ if $X > 0$, and $\{\overline{X}\} = 0$ if $X \leq 0$.

Analytical expression of $\frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial \alpha_{kl}}$:

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} = & B \frac{\partial n_{ij}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} + n_{ij} \frac{\partial B}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} + C \frac{\partial n_{ik}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} n_{kj} + (n_{ik} n_{kj} - \frac{1}{3} \delta_{ij}) \frac{\partial C}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} \\ & + \frac{1}{3} \delta_{ij} \frac{\partial D}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} \end{aligned} \quad (104.415)$$

where

$$\frac{\partial n_{ij}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} = \frac{p}{|\Lambda|} (n_{ij} n_{mn} - I_{ijmn}^s) \quad (104.416)$$

$$\frac{\partial D}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} = -\frac{\partial A_d}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} \left(\sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} \alpha_{\theta}^d - \alpha_{ab} n_{ab} \right) - A_d \left(\sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} \frac{\partial \alpha_{\theta}^d}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} - n_{mn} - \alpha_{ab} \frac{\partial n_{ab}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} \right) \quad (104.417)$$

and

$$\frac{\partial B}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} = \frac{3}{2} \left(\frac{1-c}{c} \right) \left(\frac{\partial g}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} \cos 3\theta + g \frac{\partial \cos 3\theta}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} \right) \quad (104.418)$$

$$\frac{\partial C}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} = 3 \sqrt{\frac{3}{2}} \left(\frac{1-c}{c} \right) \frac{\partial \alpha_{\theta}^d}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} \quad (104.419)$$

$$\frac{\partial \alpha_{\theta}^d}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} = M_c \exp(n^d \psi) \frac{\partial g}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} \quad (104.420)$$

$$\frac{\partial g}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} = g^2 \left(\frac{1-c}{2c} \right) \frac{\partial \cos 3\theta}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} \quad (104.421)$$

$$\frac{\partial \cos 3\theta}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} = -3\sqrt{6} \frac{\partial n_{ij}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} (n_{jk} n_{ki}) \quad (104.422)$$

$$\frac{\partial A_d}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} = A_0 z_{ab} \frac{\partial n_{ab}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} \{ \overline{z_{ab} n_{ab}} \} \quad (104.423)$$

Analytical expression of $\frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial z_{mn}}$:

$$\frac{\partial m_{ij}}{\partial z_{mn}} = \frac{1}{3} \delta_{ij} \frac{\partial D}{\partial z_{mn}} \quad (104.424)$$

where

$$\frac{\partial D}{\partial z_{mn}} = -\frac{\partial A_d}{\partial z_{mn}} \left(\sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} \alpha_{\theta}^d - \alpha_{ab} n_{ab} \right) \quad (104.425)$$

and

$$\frac{\partial A_d}{\partial z_{mn}} = A_0 n_{mn} \{\overline{z_{ab} n_{ab}}\} \quad (104.426)$$

Analytical expression of $\frac{\partial A_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}}$:

$$\frac{\partial A_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} = \frac{2}{3} \left[\frac{\partial h}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} \left(\sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} \alpha_{\theta}^b n_{ij} - \alpha_{ij} \right) + \sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} h \left(n_{ij} \frac{\partial \alpha_{\theta}^b}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} + \alpha_{\theta}^b \frac{\partial n_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} \right) \right] \quad (104.427)$$

where

$$\frac{\partial \alpha_{\theta}^b}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} = M_c \exp(-n^b \psi) \left(\frac{\partial g}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} - n^b g \frac{\partial \psi}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} \right) \quad (104.428)$$

$$\frac{\partial h}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} = \frac{1}{(\alpha_{ab} - \alpha_{ab}^{in}) n_{ab}} \left[\frac{\partial b_0}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} - h(\alpha_{pq} - \alpha_{pq}^{in}) \frac{\partial n_{pq}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} \right] \quad (104.429)$$

and

$$\frac{\partial b_0}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} = \frac{b_0}{6p} \delta_{mn} \quad (104.430)$$

Analytical expression of $\frac{\partial A_{ij}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}}$:

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial A_{ij}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} = \frac{2}{3} \left[\left(\sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} \alpha_{\theta}^b n_{ij} - \alpha_{ij} \right) \frac{\partial h}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} \right. \\ \left. + \sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} h \left(n_{ij} \frac{\partial \alpha_{\theta}^b}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} + \alpha_{\theta}^b \frac{\partial n_{ij}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} - I_{ijmn}^s \right) \right] \end{aligned} \quad (104.431)$$

where

$$\frac{\partial \alpha_{\theta}^b}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} = M_c \exp(-n^b \psi) \frac{\partial g}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} \quad (104.432)$$

$$\frac{\partial h}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} = -\frac{h}{(\alpha_{ab} - \alpha_{ab}^{in}) n_{ab}} \left[n_{mn} + (\alpha_{pq} - \alpha_{pq}^{in}) \frac{\partial n_{pq}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} \right] \quad (104.433)$$

Analytical expression of $\frac{\partial A_{ij}}{\partial z_{mn}}$:

$$\frac{\partial A_{ij}}{\partial z_{mn}} = \emptyset \quad (104.434)$$

Analytical expression of $\frac{\partial Z_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}}$:

$$\frac{\partial Z_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} = -c_z \left[(z_{max} n_{ij} + z_{ij}) \frac{\partial D}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} + z_{max} D \frac{\partial n_{ij}}{\partial \sigma_{mn}} \right] \{ \bar{D} \} \quad (104.435)$$

Analytical expression of $\frac{\partial Z_{ij}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}}$:

$$\frac{\partial Z_{ij}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} = -c_z \left[(z_{max} n_{ij} + z_{ij}) \frac{\partial D}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} + z_{max} D \frac{\partial n_{ij}}{\partial \alpha_{mn}} \right] \{ \bar{D} \} \quad (104.436)$$

Analytical expression of $\frac{\partial Z_{ij}}{\partial z_{mn}}$:

$$\frac{\partial Z_{ij}}{\partial z_{mn}} = -c_z \left(D I_{ijmn}^s + z_{max} n_{ij} \frac{\partial D}{\partial z_{mn}} \right) \{ \bar{D} \} \quad (104.437)$$

104.6.12 SaniSand2008 (aka SANISAND) Model

Taiebat and Dafalias (2008)

104.6.13 SANICLAY Model

Dafalias et al. (2006)

104.6.14 G/G_{max} Modeling

Modeling of stiffness reduction using G/G_{max} curves is frequently used. It is important to note that such modeling is essentially using linear elastic stiffness, reduced stiffness, secant stiffness to model an inelastic, nonlinear process. As such, some important simplifying assumptions are made. As noted by Pecker et al. (2022), using G/G_{max} models is appropriate if certain conditions are met, as shown in Figure 104.13.

104.6.15 Pisanò Elastic-Plastic Model with Vanishing Elastic Region (for G/G_{max} Modeling)

A more recent description of this model is available by Pisanò and Jeremić (2014).

Modeling the mechanical behavior of soils under cyclic/dynamic loading is crucial in most Geotechnical Earthquake Engineering (GEE) applications, including site response analysis and soil structure interaction (SSI) problems. In the last decades, a number of experimental studies (Ishihara, 1996; di Prisco and Wood, 2012) pointed out the complexity of such behavior – especially in the presence of pore

CYCLIC SHEAR STRAIN AMPLITUDE γ		BEHAVIOUR	ELASTICITY and PLASTICITY	CYCLIC DEGRADATION in SATURATED SOILS	MODELLING
Very small	$0 \leq \gamma \leq \gamma_s$	Practically linear	Practically elastic	Non degradable	Linear elastic
Small	$\gamma_s \leq \gamma \leq \gamma_v$	Non-linear	Moderately elasto-plastic	Practically non-degradable	Viscoelastic Equivalent linear
Moderate to large	$\gamma \geq \gamma_v$	Non-linear	Elasto-plastic	Degradable	Non-linear

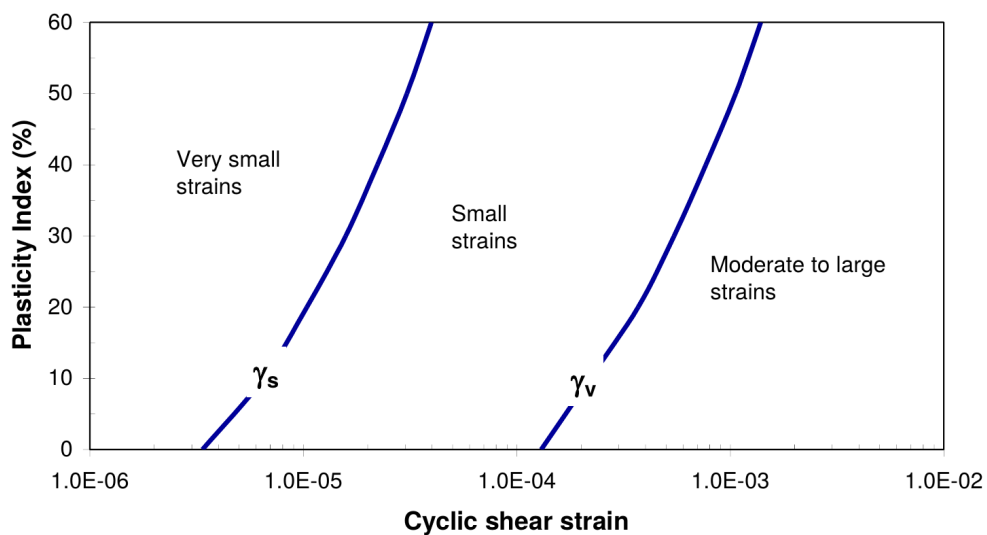


Figure 104.13: Pecker thresholds for G/G_{max} modeling.

fluid(s) – characterized by non-linearity, irreversibility, anisotropy, barotropy, picnotropy, rate-sensitivity, etc. In principle, a comprehensive soil model should be capable of reproducing all the aspects of the mechanical response for any loading condition, as well as predicting the occurrence of liquefaction and cyclic mobility, distinguishing the conditions for shakedown or ratcheting under repeated loads and so forth. However, such an ideal model would probably require too many data for calibration, along with a cumbersome numerical treatment.

Traditionally, many GEE problems are still tackled in the frequency domain through 1D (equivalent) linear models, mainly because of their computational convenience and straightforward calibration. In the light of a Kelvin-Voigt visco-elastic idealization, the dynamic soil behavior is fully described in terms of strain-dependent stiffness degradation (G/G_{max}) and damping (ζ) ratios (Kramer, 1996a). As it holds in

the linear regime, the shear and the volumetric responses are assumed to be decoupled, so that G/G_{max} and ζ curves are derived from the experimental cyclic shear tests (triaxial, simple shear or torsional) as a function of the cyclic shear strain amplitude.

Owing to the availability of computer programs for 1D site response analysis (SHAKE (Schnabel et al., 1972), EERA (Bardet et al., 2000), DEEPSOIL (Hashash and Park, 2001)) and SSI problems (SASSI (Lysmer, 1988)), the visco-elastic approach has become more and more popular among practitioners, regardless of drawbacks:

- despite a non-negligible rate-sensitiveness, most energy dissipation in soils derives from frictional inter-granular mechanisms rather than viscous flow (as it is implicitly assumed by using G/G_{max} and damping approaches);
- G/G_{max} and ζ curves do not allow to evaluate irreversible deformations, nor the influence of pore fluid(s);
- adopting 1D shear constitutive relationships has poor mechanical soundness, since soil behavior exhibits a pronounced deviatoric-volumetric multiaxial coupling;
- the meaning of cyclic shear strain amplitude for the choice of G/G_{max} and ζ values is not evident in the presence of irregular seismic loads.

The above observations justify the need for alternative approaches and more physically consistent soil models. From this standpoint, the incremental elastic-plastic theory represents the main modeling framework, within which significant efforts have been spent in the last decades to simulate the response of cyclically loaded soils. Several approaches have been explored and gradually refined, including e.g. “multi-surface plasticity”, “bounding surface plasticity”, “generalized plasticity” and “hypoplasticity”. Comprehensive overviews on cyclic elasto-plasticity modeling can be found in Lemaitre and Chaboche (1990) and, with specific reference to soils, Prevost and Popescu (1996), Zienkiewicz et al. (1999b) and di Prisco and Wood (2012). In most cases, rotational kinematic hardening formulations have been adopted in conjunction with increasingly accurate flow rules and hardening laws; a number of valuable contributions are worth citing, such as – to mention only a few – Mróz et al. (1978); Prevost (1985a); Borja and Amies (1994); Manzari and Dafalias (1997); Papadimitriou and Bouckovalas (2002); Elgamal et al. (2002); Taiebat and Dafalias (2008); recently, it has been also shown how a good simulation of dynamic properties can be achieved by means of even elastic-perfectly plastic models, as long as formulated in a probabilistic elastic-plastic framework (Sett et al., 2011b). The major issues about the practical use of elastic-plastic models concern the complexity of the mathematical formulations, the computer implementation and the possible high number of material parameters. For a model to appeal

to practicing engineers, a tradeoff is needed between the overall accuracy and the number of parameters to be calibrated, particularly provided the frequent lack of detailed *in situ* or laboratory data.

Among the aforementioned models, the one by [Borja and Amies \(1994\)](#) is here taken into special consideration. These authors proposed a total-stress von Mises-type model in the framework of kinematic-hardening bounding surface plasticity, then successfully applied to the seismic simulation of fine-grained deposits at Lotung site in Taiwan ([Borja et al., 1999, 2000](#)). Based on work by [Dafalias and Popov \(1977\)](#) and [Dafalias \(1979\)](#), the multiaxial model is characterized by the assumption of vanishing elastic domain, thus implying soil plastification under any load level and a redefinition of the standard loading/unloading criterion. Apart from the mathematical aspects, the model possesses sufficient flexibility to reproduce the undrained dynamic properties of clayey/silty soils, while keeping a minimum number of physically-based parameters.

In this paper similar bounding surface approach with vanishing elastic region is adopted to derive a Drucker-Prager effective-stress model, incorporating pressure sensitivity and non-associativeness, essential ingredients for material modeling of granular materials. As a result, the following constitutive relationship is suitable for the effective-stress time-domain analysis of even liquefiable soils. In addition, the dissipative model performance is here explored in combination with a further viscous mechanism, which can be wisely exploited to improve the simulation of the experimental damping. Although numerical convenience often motivates the embedment of viscous dissipation into elastic-plastic computations, it has a *de facto* physical origin, coming from rate-dependent processes occurring at both inter-granular contacts and grain/pore fluid interfaces.

104.6.15.1 Frictional and viscous dissipative mechanisms

The time-domain finite element (FE) solution of dynamic problems is usually carried out by solving an incremental discrete system of the following form ([Bathe, 1982](#); [Zienkiewicz and Taylor, 1991a](#)):

$$\mathbf{M}\Delta\ddot{\mathbf{U}} + \mathbf{C}\Delta\dot{\mathbf{U}} + \mathbf{K}^t\Delta\mathbf{U} = \Delta\mathbf{F}^{ext} \quad (104.438)$$

where Δ and dots stand respectively for step increment and time derivative, \mathbf{U} is the generalized DOF vector (nodal displacement for example), \mathbf{F}^{ext} the nodal external force vector and \mathbf{M} , \mathbf{C} , \mathbf{K}^t are the mass, damping and (tangent) stiffness matrices, respectively.

In system (104.438) two dissipative sources are readily recognizable, namely the viscous (velocity-proportional) and the frictional (displacement-proportional) terms ([Argyris and Mlejnek, 1991](#)). While the latter is given by the variation of the elastic-plastic tangent stiffness \mathbf{K}^t , the viscous term related to the damping matrix \mathbf{C} can represent interaction of solid skeleton and pore fluid, and constitutive time-sensitiveness of the soil skeleton. The above combination of frictional and viscous dissipation can

be interpreted in terms of two distinct effective stress components acting on the soil skeleton:

$$\sigma_{ij} = \sigma_{ij}^f + \sigma_{ij}^v \quad (104.439)$$

where the effective stress tensor σ_{ij} has been split into frictional (elastic-plastic) and viscous stresses⁶⁶. From a rheological point of view, the resulting scheme can be defined as visco-elastic-plastic – not elastic-viscoplastic – as the elastic-plastic response is rate-independent and accompanied by a parallel viscous resisting mechanism. In what follows, the frictional component is first specified via the formulation of the bounding surface model with vanishing elastic domain; then, the role and the calibration of the linear viscous term is discussed.

Index tensor notation is used, along with the standard Einstein convention for repeated indices; the norm of any second-order tensor x_{ij} is defined as $\|x_{ij}\| = \sqrt{x_{ij}x_{ij}}$, whereas the deviatoric component can be extracted as $x_{ij}^{dev} = x_{ij} - x_{kk}\delta_{ij}/3$ (δ_{ij} is the Kronecker delta). In accordance with usual Solid Mechanics conventions, positive tensile stresses/strains are considered, whereas – as is done in Fluid Mechanics – only the isotropic mean pressure is positive if compressive.

104.6.15.2 Bounding surface frictional model with vanishing elastic domain

The formulated constitutive model represents the frictional effective-stress version of the previous work by [Borja and Amies \(1994\)](#); for the sake of clarity, the presentation sequence of the former publication is here maintained, highlighting both differences and similarities. As was expected, the introduction of pressure-dependence into the constitutive equations implies somewhat more involved derivations, so that the analytical details skipped in this section are reported toward the end in section [104.6.15.7](#); the superscript f referring to the frictional component of the global effective stress (Equation (104.439)) is avoided for the sake of brevity.

Elastic relationship Provided the usual additive (incremental) strain split into elastic and plastic components $d\epsilon_{ij} = d\epsilon_{ij}^e + d\epsilon_{ij}^p$, the incremental linear elastic Hooke's law is expressed as follows:

$$d\sigma_{ij} = D_{ijhk}^e (d\epsilon_{hk} - d\epsilon_{hk}^p) \quad (104.440)$$

where d stands for a differentially small increment of strain and D_{ijhk}^e is the fourth-order elastic stiffness tensor. Under the elastic deviatoric/volumetric decoupling, the deviatoric and volumetric counterparts of Equation (104.440) can be also given:

$$ds_{ij} = 2G_{max} (de_{hk} - de_{hk}^p) \quad (104.441)$$

⁶⁶Henceforth, effective stresses are exclusively accounted for

$$dp = -K (d\epsilon_{vol} - d\epsilon_{vol}^p) \quad (104.442)$$

in which $p = -\sigma_{kk}/3$ is the mean stress, $\epsilon_{vol} = \epsilon_{kk}$ is the volumetric strain, $s_{ij} = \sigma_{ij}^{dev}$ is the stress deviator, and $e_{ij} = \epsilon_{ij}^{dev}$ is the strain deviator. The shear modulus $G_{max} = E/2(1 + \nu)$ and the bulk modulus $K = E/3(1 - 2\nu)$ are derived from the Young modulus E and the Poisson's ratio ν . Henceforth, G_{max} will be always used for the elastic small-strain shear modulus, whereas the secant cyclic shear stiffness will be referred to as G .

Drucker-Prager yield and bounding loci A conical Drucker-Prager type yield locus is first introduced, similar to what is used by [Prevost \(1985a\)](#) and [Manzari and Dafalias \(1997\)](#):

$$f_y = \frac{3}{2} (s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij}) (s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij}) - k^2 p^2 = 0 \quad (104.443)$$

where α_{ij} is the so called deviatoric back-stress ratio ($\alpha_{kk} = 0$) governing the kinematic hardening of the yield surface; k is a parameter determining the opening angle of the cone. It is also important to note that the variation of the back-stress ratio α_{ij} in (104.443) determines a rigid rotation of the yield locus and, therefore, a rotational kinematic hardening.

The stress derivative of the yield function is also reported for the following developments:

$$\frac{\partial f_y}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} = \left(\frac{\partial f_y}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} \right)^{dev} + \left(\frac{\partial f_y}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} \right)^{vol} = 3 (s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij}) + \left[\alpha_{hk} (s_{hk} - p\alpha_{hk}) + \frac{2}{3} k^2 p \right] \delta_{ij} \quad (104.444)$$

The yield locus must always reside within the so called bounding surface, here assumed to be a further Drucker-Prager cone (non kinematically hardening, fixed in size):

$$f_B = \frac{3}{2} s_{ij} s_{ij} - M^2 p^2 = 0 \quad (104.445)$$

where M provides the bounding cone opening and, as a consequence, the material shear strength (as a function of the mean effective pressure p).

Plastic flow and translation rule When dealing with granular materials, a non-associated plastic flow rule is needed ([Nova and Wood, 1979](#)), allowing for plastic contractancy or dilatancy depending on whether loose or dense materials are analyzed. Here, the plastic flow rule is borrowed from [Manzari and Dafalias \(1997\)](#):

$$d\epsilon_{hk}^p = d\lambda \left(n_{ij}^{dev} - \frac{1}{3} D \delta_{ij} \right) \quad (104.446)$$

where $d\lambda$ is the plastic multiplier, n_{ij}^{dev} is a deviatoric unit tensor ($\|n_{ij}^{dev}\| = 1$) and D is a dilatancy coefficient defined as (Manzari and Dafalias, 1997):

$$D = \xi \left(\alpha_{ij}^d - \alpha_{ij} \right) n_{ij}^{dev} = \xi \left(\sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} k_d n_{ij}^{dev} - \alpha_{ij} \right) n_{ij}^{dev} \quad (104.447)$$

in which ξ and k_d are two positive constitutive parameters. While the former controls the amount of volumetric plastic strain, the latter determines the position of the so called “dilatancy surface” and rules the transition from contractive ($D > 0$) to dilative ($D < 0$) behavior.

The kinematic hardening evolution of the yield locus is imposed via the standard Prager translation rule for the (deviatoric) back-stress ratio (Borja and Amies, 1994):

$$d\alpha_{ij} = \|d\alpha_{ij}\| n_{ij}^{dev} \quad (104.448)$$

with both n_{ij}^{dev} and the norm $\|d\alpha_{ij}\|$ to be determined.

Vanishing elastic region and consistency condition As previously mentioned, the most notable feature of the present model concerns the vanishing elastic domain, corresponding with the limit $k \rightarrow 0$ in Equation (104.443). Accordingly, the Drucker-Prager cone reduces to its symmetry axis, so that:

$$\lim_{k \rightarrow 0} f_y = 0 \Rightarrow \lim_{k \rightarrow 0} s_{ij} = p\alpha_{ij} \Rightarrow ds_{ij} = d\alpha_{ij}p + \alpha_{ij}dp \quad (104.449)$$

and, after substituting the Prager rule (104.448) (for more detailed derivation, see section 104.6.15.7):

$$n_{ij}^{dev} = \frac{ds_{ij} - \alpha_{ij}dp}{\|ds_{ij} - \alpha_{ij}dp\|} \quad (104.450)$$

The direction of the deviatoric plastic strain increment n_{ij}^{dev} depends on the variation of both the stress deviator and the mean pressure, which differs from the cohesive version by Borja and Amies (1994). It is also worth noting that purely hydrostatic stress increments ($ds_{ij} = 0$) from initial hydrostatic states ($\alpha_{ij} = 0$) yield $n_{ij}^{dev} = 0$ and thus generates no deviatoric plastic strains.

From a theoretical standpoint, since the direction of the deviatoric plastic strain increment n_{ij}^{dev} depends on $d\sigma_{ij}$, the resulting constitutive formulation can be properly defined as “hypoplastic”, this being a spontaneous outcome of the limit operation applied on the elastic region (Dafalias, 1986).

The norm of the back-stress increment in Equation (104.448) is obtained by imposing the standard consistency condition, that is the fulfillment of $df_y = 0$ during plastic loading (section 104.6.15.7):

$$df_y = 0 \Leftrightarrow \frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} d\sigma_{ij} + \frac{\partial f}{\partial \alpha_{ij}} d\alpha_{ij} = 0 \quad (104.451)$$

whence:

$$\|d\alpha_{ij}\| = \frac{1}{pN^{dev}} \frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} d\sigma_{ij} \quad (104.452)$$

and $N^{dev} = \|(\partial f_y / \partial \sigma_{ij})^{dev}\| = 3\|s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij}\|$. From Equation (104.452), the norm of $d\alpha_{ij}$ can be further specified for the case of radial loading paths in the deviatoric plane, characterized by the nullity of dp and the coaxiality of s_{ij} , α_{ij} and their increments. After simple manipulations (see section 104.6.15.7) this results in:

$$\|d\alpha_{ij}\| = \sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} \frac{dq}{p} \quad (104.453)$$

where $q = \sqrt{3/2}\|s_{ij}\|$ stands for the usual deviatoric stress invariant.

Hardening relationship and plastic multiplier An incremental hardening relationship is directly established (Borja and Amies, 1994):

$$dq = \sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} H \|de_{ij}^p\| \quad (104.454)$$

where H is the hardening modulus. Then, the substitution of both the flow rule (104.446) and the hardening relationship (104.454) into (104.453) leads to:

$$\|d\alpha_{ij}\| = \frac{2}{3} \frac{H d\lambda}{p} \quad (104.455)$$

By equating the right-hand sides of Equations (104.441) and (104.449) the following relationship is obtained:

$$2G_{max} (de_{ij} - d\lambda n_{ij}^{dev}) = \|d\alpha_{ij}\| n_{ij}^{dev} p + \alpha_{ij} dp = \frac{2}{3} \frac{H d\lambda}{p} n_{ij}^{dev} p - \alpha_{ij} K (d\epsilon_{vol} + d\lambda D) \quad (104.456)$$

whence:

$$d\lambda = \frac{2G_{max}\|de_{ij}\| + Kd\epsilon_{vol}\alpha_{ij}n_{ij}^{dev}}{2G + \frac{2}{3}H - KD\alpha_{ij}n_{ij}^{dev}} \quad (104.457)$$

Equation (104.457) represents the consistent "frictional" generalization of Equation (18) in [Borja and Amies \(1994\)](#), as well as the limit of Equation (12) in [Manzari and Dafalias \(1997\)](#)⁶⁷ for a vanishing yield locus size.

Stress projection, hardening modulus and unloading criterion The bounding surface plasticity theory relies on the basic concept that the plastic modulus explicitly depends on the distance between the current stress state and an *ad hoc* stress projection onto the bounding surface. While [Borja and Amies \(1994\)](#) defined a purely deviatoric projection operator, here the whole stress state is involved:

$$\bar{\sigma}_{ij} = \sigma_{ij} + \beta \left(\sigma_{ij} - \sigma_{ij}^0 \right) \quad (104.458)$$

where β is a scalar distance coefficient and σ_{ij}^0 embodies the stress state at the last stress reversal (Figure 104.14). The coefficient β must be such that the projected stress $\bar{\sigma}_{ij}$ lies on the bounding surface (Equation (104.445)):

$$\frac{3}{2}\bar{s}_{ij}\bar{s}_{ij} = M^2\bar{p}^2 \quad (104.459)$$

whence, after substituting (104.458) into (104.459), β can be obtained as the positive root of the following second-order algebraic equation:

$$\begin{aligned} & \left[\left\| s_{ij} - s_{ij}^0 \right\|^2 - \frac{2}{3}M^2(p - p_0)^2 \right] \beta^2 + \\ & 2 \left[\left(s_{ij} - s_{ij}^0 \right) s_{ij} - \frac{2}{3}M^2p(p - p_0) \right] \beta + \\ & \left[\left\| s_{ij} \right\|^2 - \frac{2}{3}M^2p^2 \right] = 0 \end{aligned} \quad (104.460)$$

Apparently, the limit situations $\beta = 0$ and $\beta \rightarrow \infty$ correspond with the current stress state being right on the bounding locus or at instantaneous unloading (stress reversal).

In principle, any analytical relationship can be adopted to relate H and β , as long as two fundamental requirements are satisfied, i.e. $H(\beta = 0) = 0$ and $H(\beta \rightarrow \infty) \rightarrow \infty$: the former ensures the material shear strength to be fully mobilized when the bounding surface is attained; the latter guarantees an

⁶⁷Different signs result because of the opposite sign conventions adopted by these authors

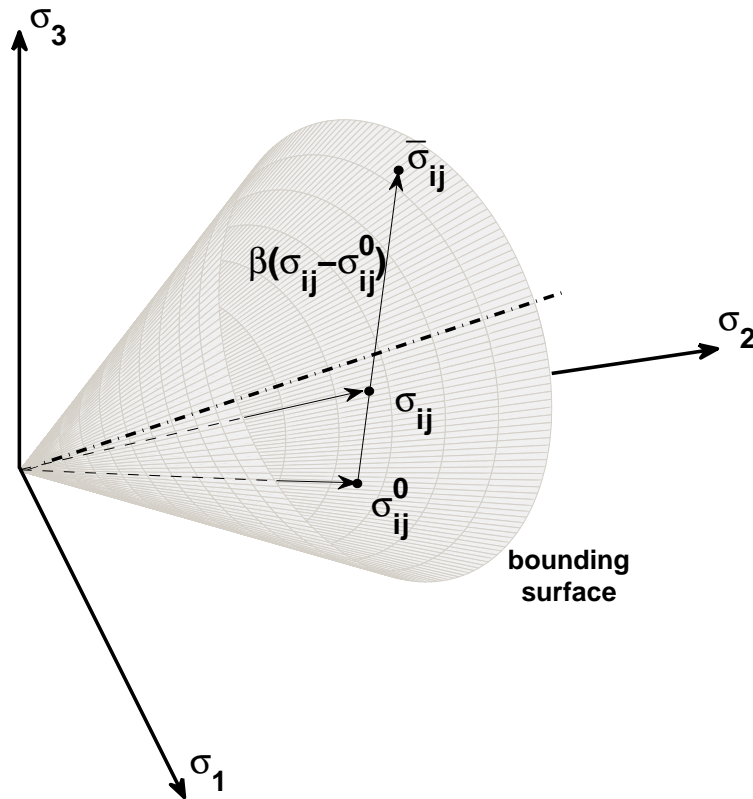


Figure 104.14: Representation of the stress projection onto the bounding surface.

instantaneous elastic stiffness upon any stress reversal, as is explained next. In this case, the expression by [Borja and Amies \(1994\)](#) has been extended to frictional media by accounting for the influence of the mean pressure:

$$H = ph\beta^m \quad (104.461)$$

in which h and m are two additional constitutive parameters.

The last element of the model formulation is the unloading criterion, which in this case is ill-defined due to the lack of the elastic region and the yield surface. The same multiaxial unloading criterion suggested by [Borja and Amies \(1994\)](#) is employed, based on the observation that the hardening modulus H increases at the onset of unloading. Accordingly, as long as $H(\beta)$ is a monotonically increasing function, instantaneous unloading is assumed to occur whenever $dH > 0$, i.e. $d\beta > 0$. The variation of β (and thus its sign) can be readily derived by substituting (104.458) into (104.459), and then

differentiating the latter with respect to β :

$$d\beta = -(1 + \beta) \frac{\bar{s}_{ij} ds_{ij} - \frac{2}{3} M^2 \bar{p} dp}{\bar{s}_{ij} (s_{ij} - s_{ij}^0) - \frac{2}{3} M^2 \bar{p} (p - p^0)} > 0 \quad (104.462)$$

It is worth noting that the variation of β , $d\beta$, plays here the same role of the scalar product $(\partial f / \partial \sigma_{ij}) d\sigma_{ij}$ in standard elastic-plastic models, i.e. it defines the alternatives of elastic-plastic loading ($d\beta < 0$), neutral loading ($d\beta = 0$) or elastic unloading ($d\beta > 0$). The last key point concerns the update of the stress σ_{ij}^0 in Equation (104.458), which must be set equal to the current stress state when $d\beta > 0$ is instantaneously found.

Possible refinements The frictional model has been developed trying to keep the number of material parameters as low as possible, even with a non-associated flow rule. However, it is worth mentioning which kind of improvements might be introduced if required by the problem under examination.

It should be first noted that, as a Drucker-Prager type bounding surface has been adopted, the material shear strength is unaffected by the Lode angle, so that for instance the same failure obliquity is predicted for triaxial compression and extension. This drawback could be easily remedied by modifying the deviatoric cross-section of the bounding surface itself, e.g. by adopting the well known Mohr-Coulomb deviatoric locus or other smooth loci (Matsuoka and Nakai, 1974; Willam and Warnke, 1974; Lade, 1977). A change in the deviatoric cross-section would negligibly influence the overall formulation, as just the evaluation of the projection distance β and of its increment should be modified (Equations (104.459)-(104.460) and (104.462)).

Secondly, the present version of the model cannot predict a possible brittle behavior of the soil, usually taking place in the case of dense materials. Constitutive brittleness could be accounted for by incorporating a further isotropic hardening mechanism at the bounding surface level, allowing for a gradual shrinkage of the outer surface during plastifications.

Another relevant point is about the fact that different parameters must be calibrated for different relative densities of the same granular material, as if distinct materials were indeed considered. As a matter of fact, continuous transitions from loose to dense states (and vice versa) spontaneously take place during straining: this aspect has been successfully addressed and reproduced via the concept of “state parameter” (Been and Jefferies, 1985; Wood et al., 1994; Manzari and Dafalias, 1997), which could be also introduced into a critical-state version of the proposed model.

The above and further refinements – related for instance to non-linear elastic behavior, anisotropy, fabric effects, delayed plastic response, etc. – might result in a more accurate soil model, implying though higher difficulties in terms of calibration, implementation and, as a consequence, practical employment.

104.6.15.3 The role of linear viscous damping

An additional viscous mechanism (Equation (104.439)) can be usually exploited in finite element (FE) analysis, even though it is not directly included in the constitutive model. Indeed, many numerical codes solve discrete systems with a viscous damping term (Equation (104.438)), usually assembled as a linear combination of the mass and the (elastic) stiffness matrices (Rayleigh formulation (Argyris and Mlejnek, 1991; Chopra, 2000)):

$$\mathbf{C} = a_0 \mathbf{M} + a_1 \mathbf{K}^e \quad (104.463)$$

where a_0 and a_1 are two constant parameters, related to the n^{th} modal damping ratio ζ_n of the discrete structural system.

It could be easily shown that a constitutive viscosity of the form:

$$\sigma_{ij}^v = D_{ijk}^v \dot{\epsilon}_{hk} \quad (104.464)$$

gives rise to a stiffness-proportional damping matrix, which can be equivalently reproduced through the following calibration of the Rayleigh damping parameters (Borja et al., 2000; Hashash and Park, 2002):

$$a_0 = 0 \quad a_1 = \frac{2\zeta_0}{\omega} \quad (104.465)$$

The calibration (104.465) establishes the same ratio between tangential/bulk elastic and the viscous moduli, that is $G_{max}^e/G_{max}^v = K^e/K^v$. More importantly, a damping ratio ζ_0 is ensured for a given circular frequency ω , as long as the parallel resisting mechanism (σ_{ij}^f) is purely elastic; as a consequence, provided the a_1 value at the beginning of the analysis, modal frequencies and the corresponding damping ratios are linearly related.

It is also worth remarking some further points about the implications of linear viscous damping in conjunction with non-linear soil models. If a soil element undergoes an imposed shear strain history, the overall shear stress/strain cycles $\tau - \gamma$ differ from the purely frictional component $\tau^f - \gamma$, this difference being due to the viscous shear stress τ^v . As will be shown in next section, the viscous component implies smoother cycles and avoid the sharp transitions at stress reversal usually exhibited by purely elastic-plastic responses (Borja et al., 2000). However, the overall G/G_{max} ratio between the average cyclic stiffness and the elastic shear modulus is unaffected by viscosity.

As far as the damping ratio is concerned, its standard definition (Kramer, 1996a) can be easily adapted to point out the frictional/viscous splitting of the energy ΔW dissipated in a loading cycle:

$$\zeta = \frac{\Delta W}{2\pi G \gamma_{max}^2} = \frac{\Delta W^f + \Delta W^v}{2\pi G \gamma_{max}^2} = \zeta^f + \zeta^v \quad (104.466)$$

where γ_{max} is the imposed cyclic shear strain amplitude and G the corresponding (secant) cyclic shear stiffness. As γ_{max} approaches zero, the plastic dissipation tends to zero as well, so that $\zeta = \zeta^v$; therefore, the Rayleigh parameter a_1 can be calibrated to obtain $\zeta(\gamma_{max} \rightarrow 0) = \zeta_0$ for a given circular frequency ω (see Equation (104.465)). This is a desirable feature of the model, as natural soils are well known to dissipate energy at even very small strain amplitudes.

At progressively larger strains, both the frictional and viscous components contribute to the global damping, although the relative quantitative significance is hard to assess *a priori*. In addition, the viscous component of the ζ - γ_{max} curve is not constant, since ζ^v depends on the strain-dependent secant modulus $G(\gamma_{max})$ and, implicitly, on the strain rate. This is different to what has been argued by Borja et al. (2000).

As an example, consider the response of an elastic-perfectly plastic model with additional viscosity under a sinusoidal shear excitation $\gamma(t) = \gamma_{max} \sin(\omega t)$. The simplicity of the elastic-perfectly plastic response allows derivation of instructive analytical formulas for the G/G_{max} and the damping ratios, even in the presence of viscous dissipation. While $\gamma_{max} < \gamma_y$ (yielding shear strain), the material behavior is linear elastic, so that $G/G_{max} = 1$ and ζ equals the purely viscous contribution at $\gamma_{max} = 0$, i.e. $\zeta = \zeta_0$; γ_y depends on the elastic stiffness and the shear strength of the material, $\gamma_y = \tau_{lim}/G_{max}$, where τ_{lim} is the limit (frictional) shear stress for a given confining pressure. For $\gamma_{max} > \gamma_y$ plastifications take place with a flat elastic-perfectly plastic $\tau^f - \gamma$ branch, and the following expressions can be easily derived:

$$\frac{G}{G_{max}} = \frac{\tau_{lim}}{G_{max}\gamma_{max}} \quad (104.467)$$

$$\zeta = \frac{\Delta W^f + \Delta W^v}{2\pi G \gamma_{max}^2} = \underbrace{\frac{2}{\pi} \left(1 - \frac{\tau_{lim}}{G_{max}\gamma_{max}} \right)}_{\zeta^f} + \underbrace{\zeta_0 \frac{G_{max}\gamma_{max}}{\tau_{lim}}}_{\zeta^v} \quad (104.468)$$

In Figure 104.15 the G/G_{max} and ζ ratios are plotted for increasing ζ_0 values. As γ_{max} increases, the frictional damping tends to $2/\pi \approx 0.63$, while the viscous one keeps increasing because of the reduction in the secant stiffness and the increase in the shear strain rate (depending on the strain amplitude). Hence, the value of ζ_0 is to be carefully chosen, in order to avoid excessive dissipation when medium/large strains are induced by the loading process.

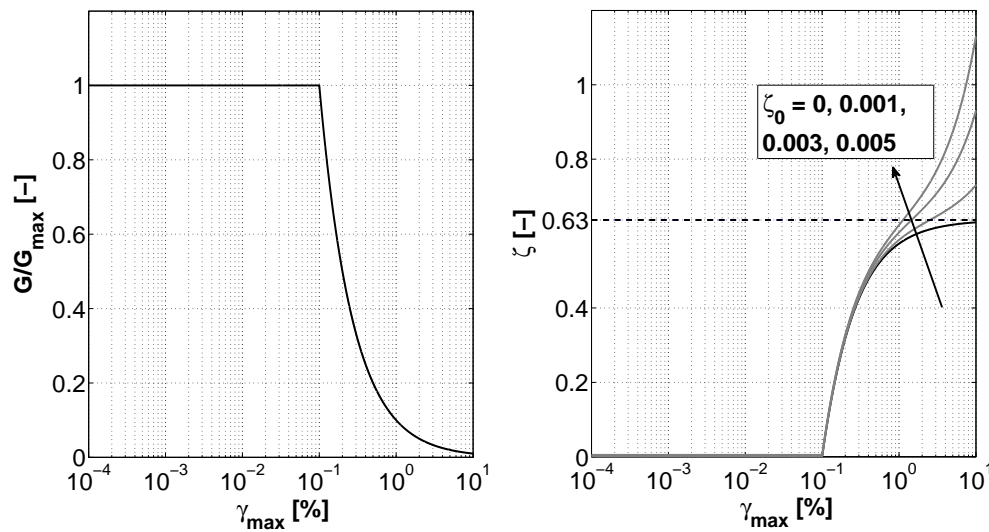


Figure 104.15: G/G_{max} and damping curves for a elastic-perfectly plastic model with linear viscous damping at varying ζ_0 ($\tau_{lim}=100$ kPa, $G_{max}=100$ MPa)

The fact that the viscous mechanism can modify the purely frictional $\zeta - \gamma_{max}$ curve without altering the cyclic stiffness degradation can be fruitfully exploited to remedy the (frequent) cases in which the experimental-numerical agreement is not satisfactory in terms of energy dissipation properties.

104.6.15.4 Model performance and calibration

The frictional mechanism of the above model is characterized by a rather low number of material parameters, namely the following seven:

- two elastic parameters, the Young modulus E (or the shear modulus G_{max}) and the Poisson's ratio ν ;
- the shear strength parameter M for the definition of the bounding surface (Equation (104.445));
- the flow rule parameters, ξ and k_d , governing the increment of the volumetric plastic strain under shearing and the size of the dilatancy surface, respectively (Equation (104.446));
- the hardening parameters h and m for the dependence of the hardening modulus on the distance coefficient β (Equation (104.461)), affecting the pre-failure deformational behavior and, in overall, the resulting dynamic properties (G/G_{max} and damping curves).

Provided a reasonable value for the Poisson's ratio (usually in the range 0.25 – 0.3), the small-strain elastic stiffness can be evaluated from dynamic laboratory (RC tests) or *in situ* (seismic geophysical

surveys) tests. As far as the shear strength is concerned, the parameter M can be related to the friction angle ϕ as follows:

$$M = \frac{6 \sin \phi}{3 \pm \sin \phi} \quad (104.469)$$

depending on whether triaxial compression (sign – in (104.469)) or extension (sign + in (104.469)) failure conditions are to be reproduced (a change in the deviatoric section of the bounding surface would allow to capture both compressive and extensive limits).

The calibration of the flow rule parameters, ξ and k_d , requires at least a triaxial test to be performed, in order to obtain some information about the volumetric behavior. Figure 104.16 shows the predicted triaxial response for three different values of k_d (and fixed ξ), that is by varying the opening angle of the dilatancy surface (the employed parameters are reported in the figure caption, where p_0 stands for the initial mean pressure).

While the limit stress deviator q is exclusively given by M , the pre-failure behavior is influenced by the plastic deformability and therefore by k_d . The model possesses sufficient flexibility to reproduce contractive, dilative or contractive/dilative behavior; also, such a feature is necessary to reproduce undrained conditions (liquefying and non-liquefying responses), this being a further motivation for non-associativeness when dealing with sandy materials.

Figure 104.17 exemplifies the response predicted under pure shear (PS) cyclic loading, applied as a sinusoidal shear strain history ($\gamma_{max} = 0.2\%$, 20% , period $T=2\pi$ s) at constant normal stresses (and thus constant mean pressure p_0 as well. This corresponds with a radial loading path on the deviatoric plane); for the sake of clarity, the volumetric plastic response has been inhibited ($\xi=0$), in order to evaluate the deviatoric mechanism exclusively. Both purely frictional (solid line) and frictional/viscous (dashed line) responses are plotted.

Owing to the kinematic hardening of the vanished yield locus, the model is capable of reproducing both the Bauschinger and the Masing effects, the latter implying the stabilization of the cyclic response to take place after more than one loading cycle. As expected, the additional viscous damping increases the area of the cyclic loop and therefore the overall dissipated energy; however, the effect of the viscous dissipation becomes significant only at medium-high shear strains, corresponding – for a given loading frequency – with higher strain rates. Further, viscosity causes the aforementioned “smoothing” of stress reversals, as it can be readily noticed in Figure 104.18 by comparing the purely frictional and the frictional/viscous responses.

Given the elastic stiffness and the strength of the soil, the shape of the resulting loading cycles is totally governed by the hardening properties, by h and m in Equation (104.461): this directly affects the simulation of experimental G/G_{max} and damping curves, which can be therefore exploited for the

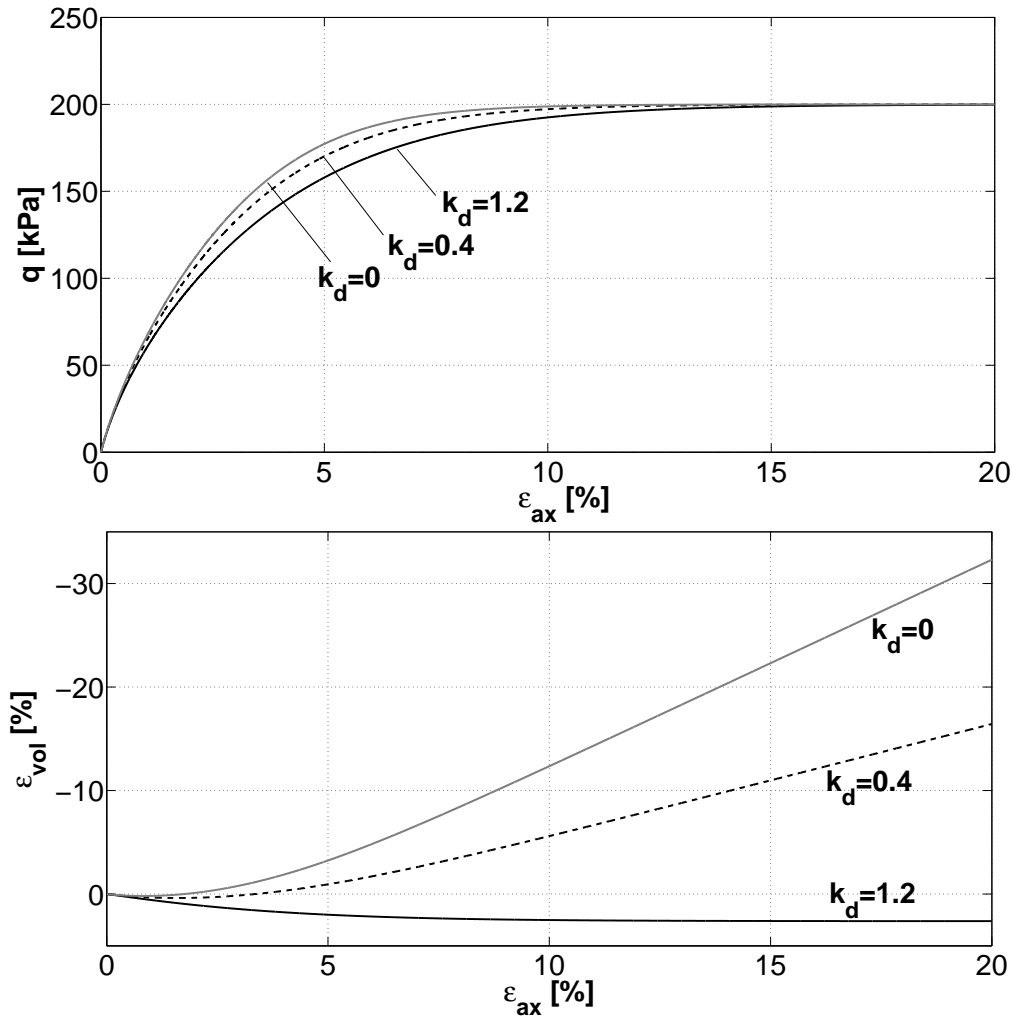


Figure 104.16: Predicted triaxial responses for different dilatancy surfaces ($p_0=100$ kPa, $G_{max} = 4$ MPa, $\nu=0.25$, $M=1.2$, $\xi=1$, $h=G/(1.5p_0)$, $m=1$)

calibration of both h and m . As can be easily demonstrated (the proof is given in section 104.6.15.7), the following equality holds under PS loading conditions, i.e. under constant pressure shearing:

$$1 = \frac{G}{G_{max}} \left[1 + \frac{6G_{max}}{hp_0\gamma_{max}} \int_0^{\gamma_{max}} \left(\frac{\gamma}{\tau_{lim}/G - 2\gamma + \gamma_{max}} \right)^m d\gamma \right] \quad (104.470)$$

where $\tau_{lim} = Mp_0/\sqrt{3}$. Relationship (104.470) has been obtained by integrating the constitutive equations over the first loading cycle, and represents the frictional counterpart of Equation (6) in Borja et al. (2000) – as is testified by the explicit influence of the confining pressure p_0 . The proper use of Equation (104.470) requires first the choice of two meaningful points on the G/G_{max} experimental curve, i.e. two $(\gamma_{max}, G/G_{max})$ couples; then, the unknowns h and m are obtained by solving the integral system arising

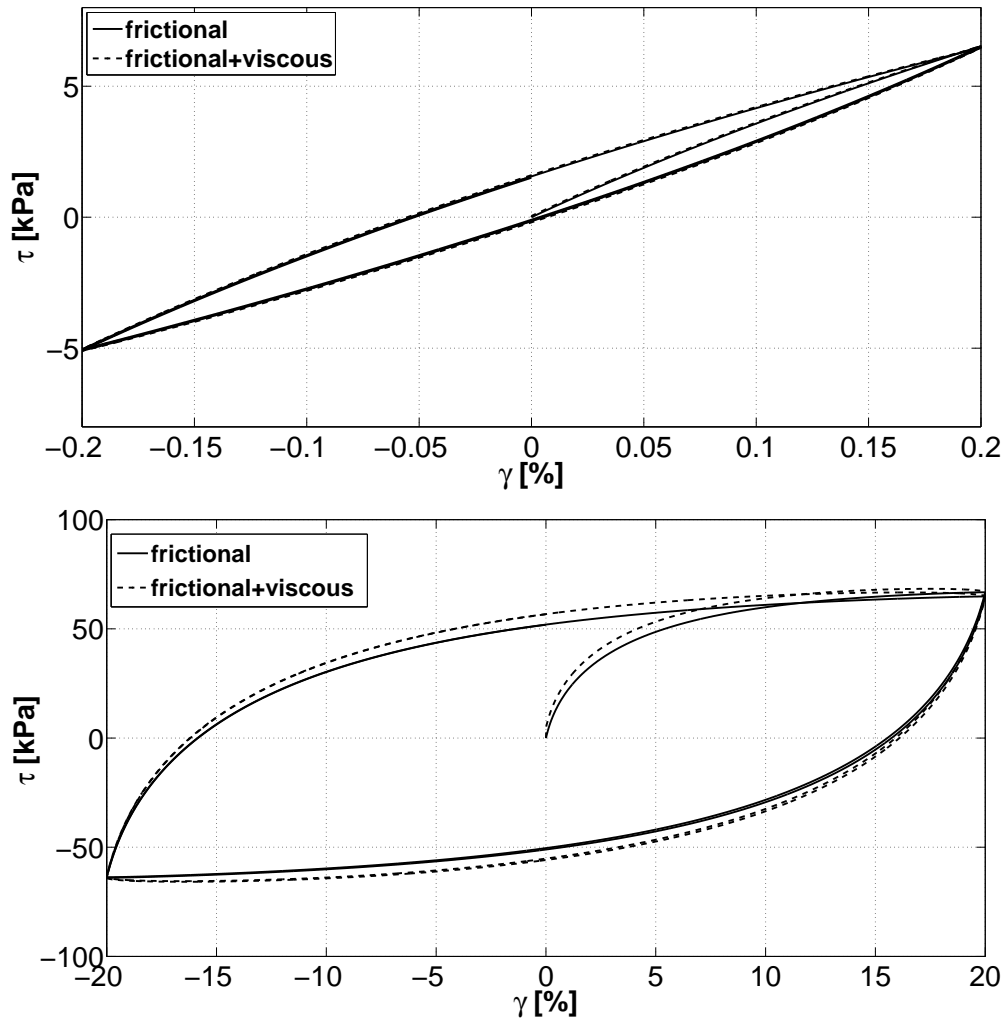


Figure 104.17: Predicted pure shear response at two different shear strain amplitudes ($p_0=100$ kPa, $T=2\pi$ s, $\zeta_0 = 0.003$, $G_{max}= 4$ MPa, $\nu=0.25$, $M=1.2$, $k_d=\xi=0$, $h=G/(1.5p_0)$, $m=1$)

from the specification of Equation (104.470) for both selected $(\gamma_{max}, G/G_{max})$ couples.

Figure 104.19 illustrates the result of the above calibration procedure, applied on the G/G_{max} and ζ curves for sands implemented into the code EERA (Bardet et al., 2000) and formerly obtained by Seed and Idriss (1970b).

Since Equation (104.470) exclusively accounts for the G/G_{max} curve, the very satisfactory agreement in terms of stiffness degradation (viscosity has no effect on it) should not surprise. On the other hand, once h and m are set, the predicted damping curve may or may not match the experimental outcome irrespective of the calibration procedure. In this respect, Figure 104.19 also presents the comparison between the damping curve by Seed and Idriss and the model prediction. The frictional ζ curve lies in the same experimental range, even though the accuracy at $\gamma_{max} = 0.03 - 1\%$ is not as good as for the

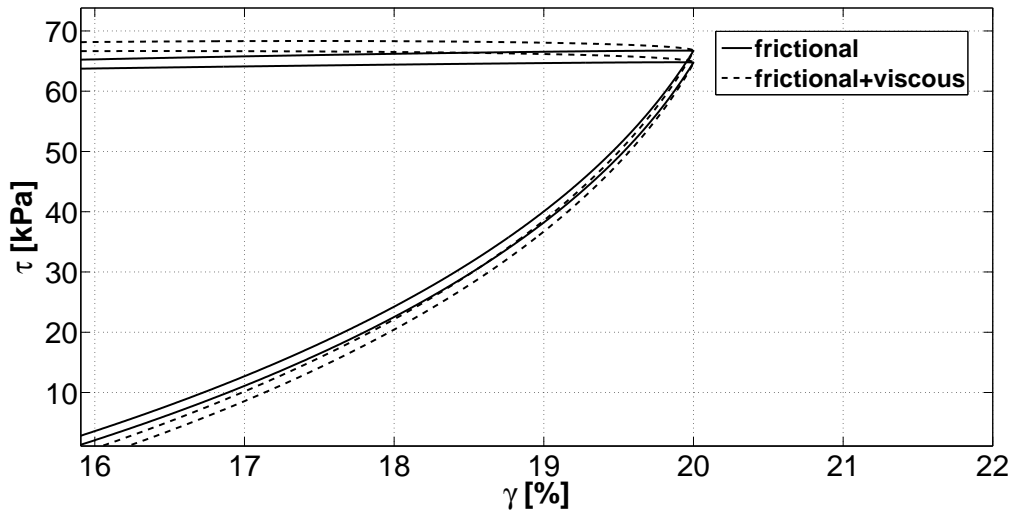


Figure 104.18: Detail of stress reversals for the pure shear response in Figure 104.17 ($\gamma_{max} = 20\%$)

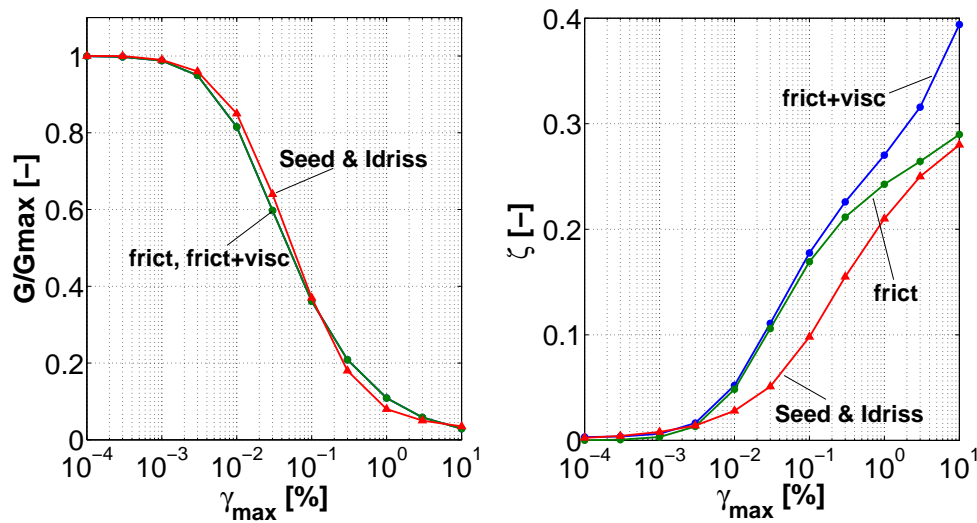


Figure 104.19: Comparison between experimental and simulated G/G_{max} and damping curves ($p_0=100$ kPa, $T=2\pi$ s, $\zeta = 0.003$, $G_{max} = 4$ MPa, $\nu=0.25$, $M=1.2$, $k_d=\xi=0$, $h=G/(112p_0)$, $m=1.38$)

G/G_{max} ratio. In this case, the contribution of the viscous mechanism is practically non-existent, as it only increases the total ζ ratio for $\gamma_{max} > 0.1\%$.

Depending on the specific application, a “trial and error” calibration might be preferable, sacrificing some of the accuracy in terms of G/G_{max} ratio to improve the damping performance. A possible outcome of a manual calibration is plotted in Figure 104.20: apparently, while the simulation of the stiffness curve is still acceptable, the damping curve appears to be much better than the previous one. The use of the viscous mechanism seems to be highly beneficial, since it remedies the lack of accuracy in the frictional

curve at medium/large cyclic strains.

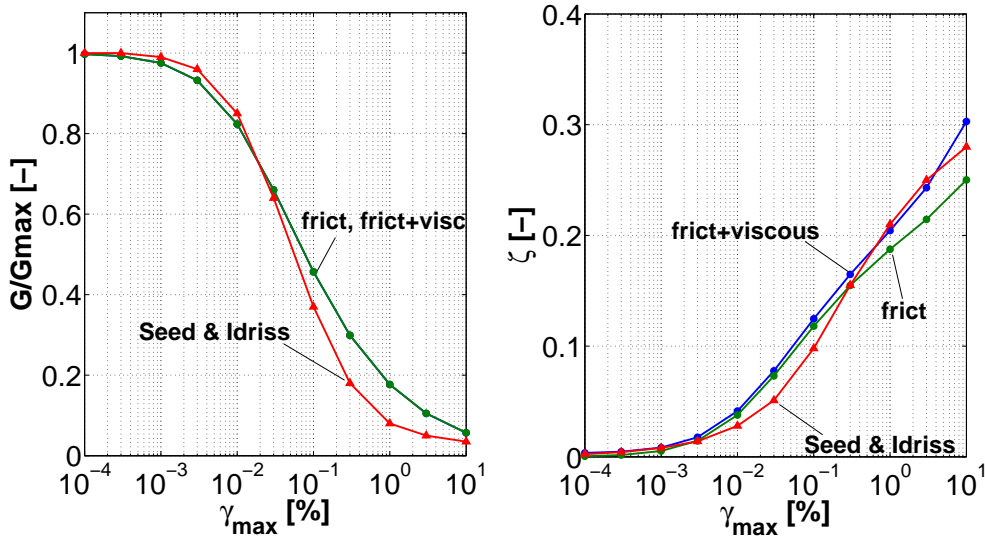


Figure 104.20: Comparison between experimental and simulated G/G_{max} and damping curves ($p_0=100$ kPa, $T=2\pi$ s, $\zeta = 0.003$, $G_{max} = 4$ MPa, $\nu=0.25$, $M=1.2$, $k_d=\xi=0$, $h=G_{max}/(15p_0)$, $m=1$)

It is also worth noting that the experimental/numerical agreement is good up to $\gamma_{max} = 10\%$, this being a rather high cyclic strain level, for equivalent elastic modeling of soil. In fact, even though the interpretation of experimental cyclic tests is questionable when substantial plasticity occurs, the proposed model produces, within a different framework, the same mechanical response incorporated into traditional equivalent-linear approaches. Besides, if the experimental data under examination are unsatisfactorily reproduced for any h and m combination, the user still has the chance of substituting the interpolation function (104.461) with no further changes in the model formulation.

104.6.15.5 Parametric analysis

In this section the sensitivity of the model predictions to some relevant input parameters is parametrically investigated.

Influence of the confining pressure Figure 104.21 illustrates the sensitivity, under PS loading, of both G/G_{max} and damping frictional curves to the initial confining pressure. As can be noticed, increasing p_0 does enlarge the “pseudo-elastic” range, that is the strain interval within which the deviation by the elastic behavior is negligible even with a vanishing yield locus. It is also noted that the variations in the confining pressure do not imply appreciable changes in the shape of the curves.

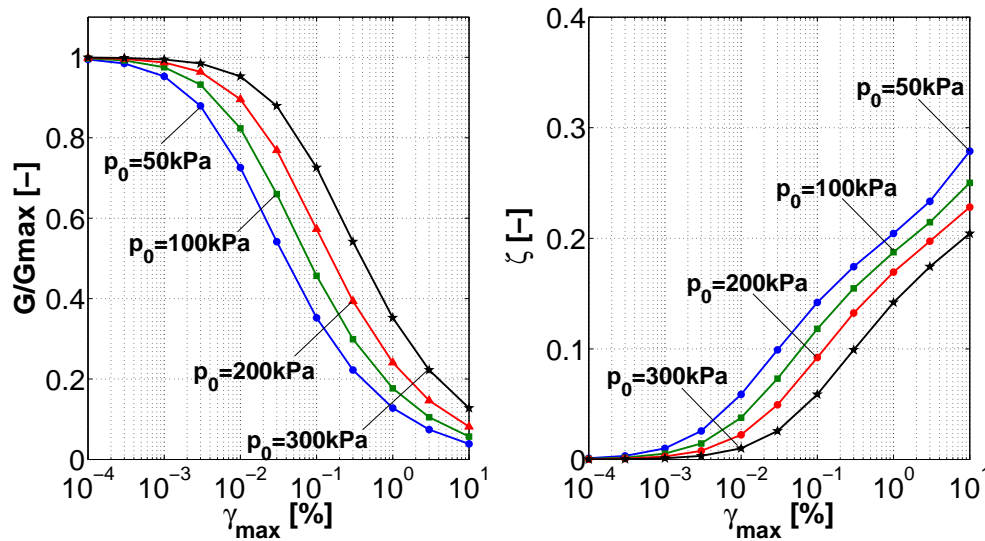


Figure 104.21: Simulated G/G_{max} and damping curves at varying confining pressure ($T=2\pi$ s, $G_{max} = 4$ MPa, $\nu=0.25$, $M=1.2$, $k_d=\xi=0$, $h=G/(15p_0)$, $m=1$)

Influence of the hardening parameters Figures 104.22 and 104.23 show the influence of the hardening parameters h and m on the predicted cyclic properties. As the material strain-hardening is accelerated by decreasing either h or m , the pseudo-elastic range tends to disappear, so that $G/G_{max} < 1$ and $\zeta > 0$ at even $\gamma_{max} = 10^{-4}$ %; conversely, an extended pseudo-elastic behavior can be obtained over a large strain range by increasing the hardening parameters. Apparently, the model ensures high flexibility in terms of cyclic curve shapes, so that the response of standard elastic-plastic models (i.e. with non-vanishing elastic region) can be smoothly approximated (compare for instance the $m = 3$ curves in Figure 104.23 and the analytical elastic-perfectly plastic frictional curves in Figure 104.15).

Influence of the viscous mechanism The influence of the viscous parameter ζ_0 on the resulting frictional/viscous damping curve is illustrated in Figure 104.24 (the G/G_{max} is not affected by the parallel viscous mechanism). As was expected, an increase in ζ_0 induce larger values of ζ ($\gamma_{max} \rightarrow 0$), as well as a faster increase of the ζ curve at medium/high cyclic strains. Figure 104.24 confirms the suitability of the viscous mechanism, as an additional degree of freedom for reproducing the cyclic dissipative soil behavior.

Influence of the volumetric behavior in constrained problems So far, all the simulations have been performed by inhibiting the elastic-plastic soil dilatancy ($\xi = 0$), which in most cases cannot be done to represent real soil behavior. As previously shown for triaxial loading conditions (Figure 104.16), in the absence of kinematic boundary constraints, a variation in the volumetric behavior slightly affects only the

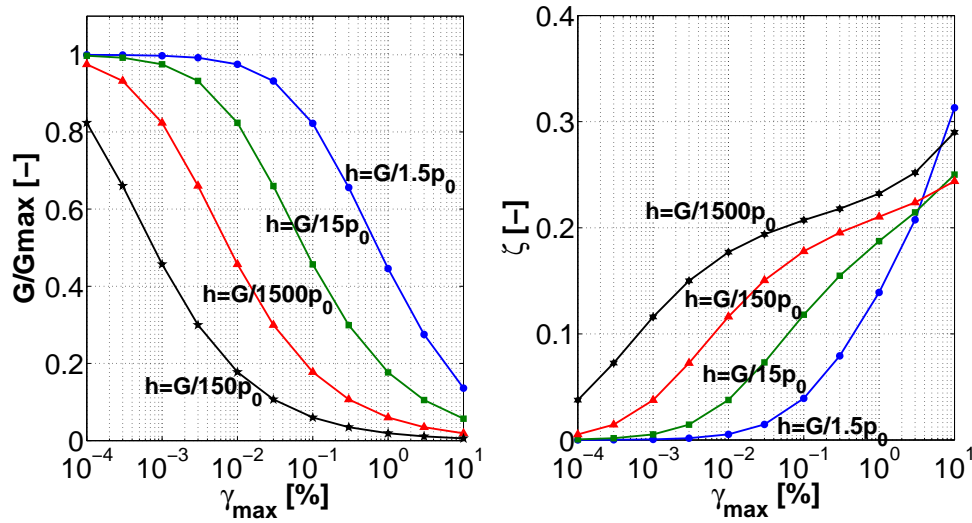


Figure 104.22: Simulated G/G_{max} and damping curves at varying h ($p_0=100$ kPa, $T=2\pi$ s, $G_{max} = 4$ MPa, $\nu=0.25$, $M=1.2$, $k_d=\xi=0$, $m=1$)

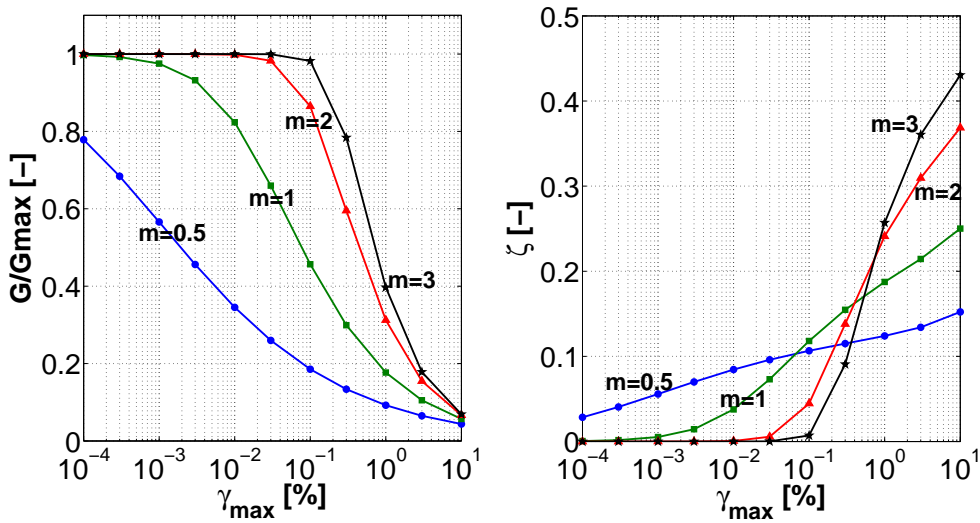


Figure 104.23: Simulated G/G_{max} and damping curves at varying m ($p_0=100$ kPa, $T=2\pi$ s, $G_{max} = 4$ MPa, $\nu=0.25$, $M=1.2$, $k_d=\xi=0$, $h=G_{max}/(15p_0)$)

hardening evolution of the stress-strain response toward the limit shear strength; a similar consideration applies to PS loading conditions, since even in this case the normal confinement is statically determined.

However, computational (FE) models contain kinematic constraints arising from certain symmetries (consider plane strain or one-dimensional schemes) (Prevost, 1989; Borja et al., 1999; di Prisco et al., 2012). In addition, for SSI problems, where soil interacts with a (stiff) structural foundations and wall, the soil volume change plays an important role. The presence of kinematic constraints implies that some

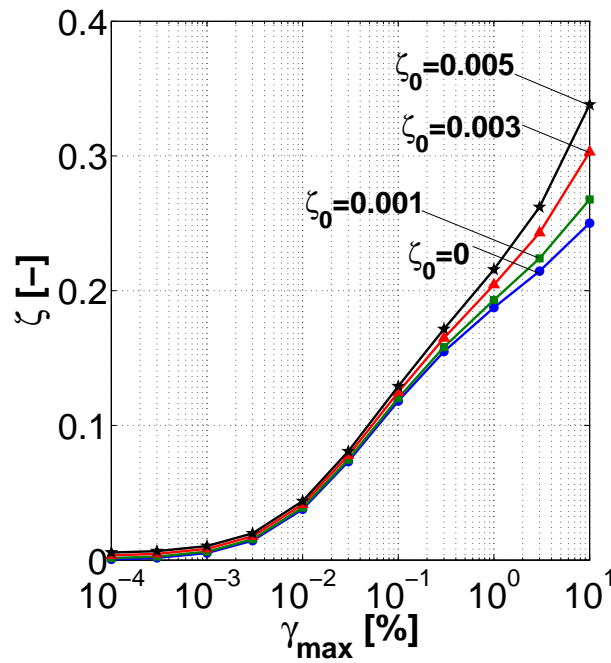


Figure 104.24: Damping curves simulated at varying ζ_0 ($p_0=100$ kPa, $T=2\pi$ s, $G_{max} = 4$ MPa, $\nu=0.25$, $M=1.2$, $k_d=\xi=0$, $h=G_{max}/(15p_0)$, $m=1$)

stress components are to be derived through compatibility conditions (e.g. prevented lateral expansion). That means that the local mean confinement is directly affected by the tendency of the material to dilate or contract. In particular, dilative frictional materials will increase the limit shear stress (with respect to unconfined conditions), while compactive frictional materials will decrease the limit shear stress. Further, not only the limit shear stress, but also the whole pre-failure response depends on the plastic flow rule whenever kinematic constraints are imposed (di Prisco and Pisanò, 2011; di Prisco et al., 2012).

The above considerations suggest that both experimental and numerical results are certainly affected by the kinematics of the system, even though this effect is not easy to be *a priori* quantified in terms of, for instance, G/G_{max} and damping curves. The kinematic conditions of an infinite soil layer during 1D shear wave propagation are experimentally approximated through the well known “simple shear (SS) apparatus” (Wood, 2004), in which the soil specimen is cyclically sheared with no lateral expansion allowed. In order to assess how the kinematic confinement influences the cyclic response, stiffness degradation and damping curves are hereafter simulated under SS conditions by varying the volumetric response of the soil; in particular, three different calibrations of the plastic flow rule (104.446) are considered, namely (i) isochoric ($k_d = \xi = 0$), (ii) compactive ($k_d = M$, $\xi = 1$) and (iii) dilative ($k_d = 0.4$, $\xi = 1$)

The results reported in Figure 104.25 provide an insight into the possible effect of the volumetric

response in combination with constrained loading conditions. In the isochoric case, the PS and the SS curves perfectly match (compare e.g. with the $p_0 = 100$ kPa curves in Figure 104.21), as, with no plastic expansion (or contraction), the lateral constraints do not affect the mean pressure during the shear loading; conversely, non-negligible SS-PS differences arise when dilative or contractive materials are considered. As is evident in Figure 104.25, the discrepancy between isochoric and non-isochoric curves becomes evident at medium/high cyclic strains, i.e. at the onset of significant plastifications. Indeed, while the mechanical response is barely inelastic, the deviatoric and the volumetric responses are practically decoupled, so that no variation of the normal confinement takes place.

Apparently, the quantitative significance of the above effects is strictly related to the actual dilational properties and confinement conditions. It can be in general concluded that the cyclic properties are expected to vary depending on specific loading conditions (triaxial, biaxial, simple shear, torsional shear, etc), so that, when numerical models are calibrated, this aspect should be always explicitly considered.

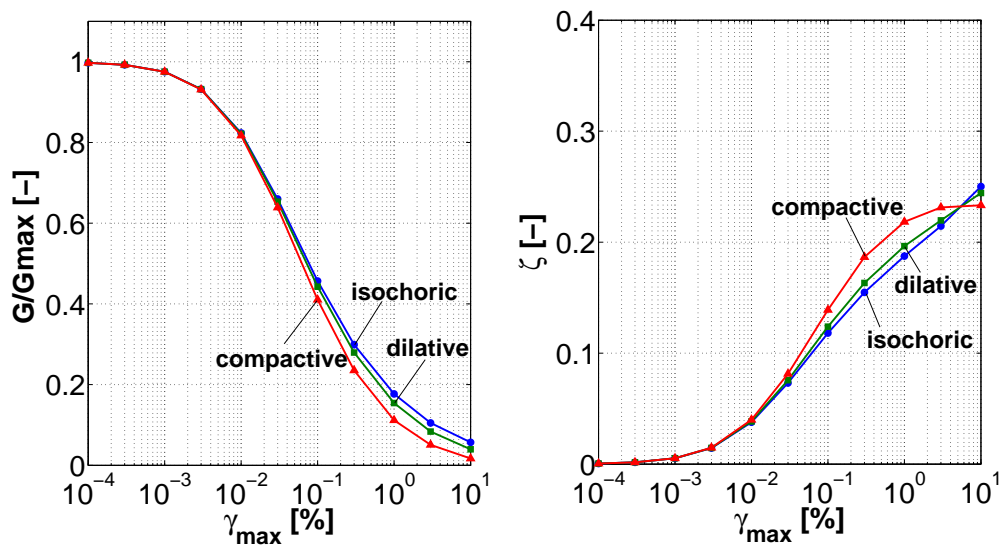


Figure 104.25: G/G_{max} and damping curves simulated under SS conditions and different volumetric responses ($p_0=100$ kPa, $T=2\pi$ s, $G_{max} = 4$ MPa, $\nu=0.25$, $M=1.2$, $k_d=[1.2, 0.4]$, $\xi=[0,1]$, $h=G_{max}/(15p_0)$, $m=1$)

104.6.15.6 Concluding remarks

An incremental 3D elastic-plastic constitutive model was developed to reproduce the mechanical response of soils under cyclic/dynamic loading. The model is based on an effective-stress formulation with two parallel dissipative mechanisms, purely frictional (elastic-plastic) and viscous.

As far as the frictional mechanism is concerned, a bounding surface formulation with vanishing elastic

region was adopted, extending to the case of pressure-sensitive non-associative soils the previous cohesive model by [Borja and Amies \(1994\)](#) for total-stress analysis. Notable features of the frictional model are: (i) the vanishing yield locus implies an elastic-plastic response at any load levels, as is observed in real experiments; (ii) a minimum number of physically meaningful parameters, which can be easily calibrated on the basis of a few experimental data; (iii) excellent performance and flexibility in reproducing in the elasto-plastic framework the standard stiffness degradation and damping curves. With reference to these latter, the parallel viscous mechanism – easy to be introduced in FE computations – was shown to provide an additional degree of freedom to improve the simulation of the cyclic energy dissipation, as long as the viscous parameter is properly calibrated. As a matter of fact, the viscous mechanism, used here, does physically exist in the form of viscous interaction between the soil solid skeleton and the pore fluid(s), and needs to be taken into account (as for example done here).

Future work will concern the investigation of the model performance in dynamic problems with pronounced hydro-mechanical coupling (cyclic mobility and liquefaction), as well as the comparison of the present model and traditional equivalent-linear approaches in seismic site response and SSI analysis. Further research is also needed to evaluate the accuracy of the model under non-symmetric loading conditions, these being particularly important in seismic slope stability applications.

104.6.15.7 Derivations of Various Equations

Derivation for Equation (104.449) The vanishing size of the yield locus implies:

$$\lim_{k \rightarrow 0} s_{ij} = p\alpha_{ij} \Rightarrow ds_{ij} = d\alpha_{ij}p + \alpha_{ij}dp = \|d\alpha_{ij}\|n_{ij}^{dev}p + \alpha_{ij}dp \quad (104.471)$$

and, after substituting the Prager translation rule (104.448):

$$n_{ij}^{dev} = \frac{ds_{ij} - \alpha_{ij}dp}{\|d\alpha_{ij}\|p} = \frac{ds_{ij} - \alpha_{ij}dp}{\|ds_{ij} - \alpha_{ij}dp\|} \quad (104.472)$$

In this last equality the property $\|n_{ij}^{dev}\| = 1$ has been exploited.

Derivations for Equations (104.452) – (104.453) The consistency condition:

$$df_y = 0 \Leftrightarrow \frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}}d\sigma_{ij} + \frac{\partial f}{\partial \alpha_{ij}}d\alpha_{ij} = 0 \quad (104.473)$$

results in the following equality chain

$$\frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}}d\sigma_{ij} = 3p(s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij})\|d\alpha_{ij}\|n_{ij}^{dev} = 3p(s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij})\|d\alpha_{ij}\|\frac{3(s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij})}{N^{dev}} = 0 \quad (104.474)$$

leading to:

$$\|d\alpha_{ij}\| = \frac{\frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} d\sigma_{ij}}{pN^{dev}} \quad (104.475)$$

where $N^{dev} = \|(\partial f / \partial \sigma_{ij})^{dev}\| = 3\|s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij}\|$. The above equation can be further simplified for the case of radial loading paths in the deviatoric plane, characterized by $d\sigma_{ij} = ds_{ij}$ and coaxiality between the current stress state and its increment:

$$\|d\alpha_{ij}\| = \frac{\frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} d\sigma_{ij}}{pN^{dev}} = \frac{\frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} ds_{ij}}{pN^{dev}} = \frac{\frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}}^{dev} ds_{ij}}{pN^{dev}} = \frac{n_{ij}^{dev} ds_{ij}}{p} = \frac{s_{ij} ds_{ij}}{p\|s_{ij}\|} \quad (104.476)$$

The final relationship can be re-expressed in terms of standards invariants $q = \sqrt{3/2}\|s_{ij}\|$ and p :

$$\|d\alpha_{ij}\| = \sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} \frac{dq}{p} \quad (104.477)$$

Derivation for Equation (104.470) Under PS loading conditions (constant mean pressure), Equation (104.458) can be reduced to a simpler scalar form:

$$\beta = \frac{\tau_{lim} - \tau}{\tau - \tau_0} \quad (104.478)$$

where $\tau_{lim} = Mp_0/\sqrt{3}$. By exploiting the previous definitions of deviatoric stress and strain invariants, the elastic-plastic response can be expressed as:

$$d\epsilon_d = \frac{dq}{3G_{max}} + \left(\frac{\tau - \tau_0}{\tau_{lim} - \tau} \right)^m \frac{dq}{hp_0} \quad (104.479)$$

and specialized to the case of PS loading:

$$\frac{d\gamma}{\sqrt{3}} = \frac{\sqrt{3}d\tau}{3G_{max}} + \left(\frac{\tau - \tau_0}{\tau_{lim} - \tau} \right)^m \frac{\sqrt{3}d\tau}{hp_0} \quad (104.480)$$

Integration over a strain interval between two stress reversals ($\gamma \in [-\gamma_{max}; \gamma_{max}]$) yields:

$$2\gamma_{max} = \frac{2\tau}{G_{max}} + \frac{3}{hp_0} \int_{-\tau}^{\tau} \left(\frac{\tau' + \tau}{\tau_{lim} - \tau'} \right)^m d\tau' \quad (104.481)$$

where $\tau_0 = -\tau$ has been set. Straightforward variable changes lead to:

$$1 = \frac{G}{G_{max}} + \frac{3}{2hp_0\gamma_{max}} \int_0^{2G\gamma_{max}} \left(\frac{\tau''}{\tau_{lim} - \tau'' + G\gamma_{max}} \right)^m d\tau'' \quad (104.482)$$

$$1 = \frac{G}{G_{max}} \left[1 + \frac{6G_{max}}{hp_0\gamma_{max}} \int_0^{\gamma_{max}} \left(\frac{\gamma}{\tau_{lim}/G - 2\gamma + \gamma_{max}} \right)^m d\gamma \right] \quad (104.483)$$

It is worth highlighting that two approximations are implicitly contained in Equation (104.483): (i) the integration over the first loading cycle does not exactly reproduce the stabilized cyclic response (because of the aforementioned Masing effect); (ii) a symmetric loading cycle in terms of shear strain does not in general ensure the symmetry of the corresponding shear stress range (as it is assumed in Equation (104.481)). However, such approximations do not prevent reasonable values for the hardening parameters h and m to be obtained.

104.6.16 Cosserat Elastoplasticity

Four components of the classical elastoplasticity.

- Elasticity law, E_{ijkl} and C_{ijkl} .
- Yield surface, $f(\sigma, t, \kappa)$
- Plastic flow direction, $m_{ij}^{force} = \frac{\partial Q(\sigma, t, \kappa)}{\partial \sigma_{ij}}$ and $m_{ij}^{curvature} = \frac{\partial Q(\sigma, t, \kappa)}{\partial t}$.
- Hardening law for internal variables, $\kappa = d\lambda h(\sigma, t)$.

where σ is the stress, and t is the couple-stress.

104.6.16.1 Elasticity Law

$$\begin{aligned} E_{ijkl} &= \lambda \delta_{ij} \delta_{kl} + \mu \delta_{ik} \delta_{jl} + (\mu + \chi) \delta_{jk} \delta_{il} \\ C_{ijkl} &= \pi_1 \delta_{ij} \delta_{kl} + \pi_2 \delta_{ik} \delta_{jl} + \pi_3 \delta_{jk} \delta_{il} \end{aligned} \quad (104.484)$$

104.6.16.2 Yield Criterion

Hencky (1924) provided a physical interpretation of von Mises criterion suggesting that yielding begins when the elastic energy of distortion reaches a critical value.[4] So von Mises is called maximum distortion strain energy yield criterion.

In the von-Mises plasticity for the classical elasticity, the distortion extent is measured by

$$J_2 = \frac{1}{2} s_{ij} s_{ij} \quad (104.485)$$

where,

$$s_{ij} = \sigma_{ij} + p\delta_{ij} \quad (104.486)$$

In the von-Mises plasticity for the Cosserat elasticity, the distortion extent [de Borst \(1993\)](#) can be measured by

$$J_2 = \frac{1}{2}(h_1 s_{ij}s_{ij} + h_2 s_{ij}s_{ji} + h_3 t_{kl}t_{kl}/l^2) \quad (104.487)$$

where, $h_1 = 3/4$, $h_2 = -1/4$, and $h_3 = 1/8$. The length l is the characteristic length. The yield strength is

$$\sigma_y = \sqrt{3J_2} \quad (104.488)$$

such that the yield criterion is

$$f(\sigma, t) = \sqrt{3J_2} - k = \sqrt{\frac{3}{2}(h_1 s_{ij}s_{ij} + h_2 s_{ij}s_{ji} + h_3 t_{kl}t_{kl}/l^2)} - k \quad (104.489)$$

where k is a constant for perfectly plasticity, and k is a function of stress and couple-stress for hardening materials.

104.6.16.3 Plastic Flow

The plastic flow direction is

$$\begin{aligned} m_{ij}^{force} &= \frac{\partial Q(\sigma, t, \kappa)}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} \quad , \quad d\sigma_{ij} = d\lambda m_{ij}^{force} \\ m_{ij}^{curvature} &= \frac{\partial Q(\sigma, t, \kappa)}{\partial t} \quad , \quad dt_{ij} = d\lambda m_{ij}^{curvature} \end{aligned} \quad (104.490)$$

In the conventional elastoplasticity, the plastic potential function Q is a function of stress σ and the internal variables κ .

In the Cosserat elastoplasticity, the plastic potential function Q is a function of stress σ , couple-stress t , and the internal variables κ .

104.6.16.4 Hardening Rule

The hardening rule describes how to update the internal variables with the plastic multiplier.

$$dq = d\lambda h(\sigma, t, \kappa) \quad (104.491)$$

In the conventional elastoplasticity, the hardening rule is a function of stress σ and the internal variables κ .

In the Cosserat elastoplasticity, the hardening rule is a function for stress σ , couple-stress t , and the internal variables κ .

104.6.16.5 Forward Euler Algorithm

Forward Euler Algorithm uses the cross point on the yield surface as the starting point to calculate the plastic flow direction and the normal to the yield surface.

104.6.16.6 Explicit Formulation

The governing equation of the forward Euler, explicit algorithm is

$$\begin{aligned}
 {}^{n+1}\boldsymbol{\sigma} + \lambda \mathbf{C}^{force} \mathbf{m}({}^{cross}\boldsymbol{\sigma}, {}^{cross}\mathbf{t}, {}^{cross}\boldsymbol{\kappa}) &= {}^n\boldsymbol{\sigma} + \mathbf{C}^{force} \Delta\boldsymbol{\epsilon} \\
 {}^{n+1}\mathbf{t} + \lambda \mathbf{C}^{curvature} \mathbf{m}({}^{cross}\boldsymbol{\sigma}, {}^{cross}\mathbf{t}, {}^{cross}\boldsymbol{\kappa}) &= {}^n\mathbf{t} + \mathbf{C}^{curvature} \Delta\boldsymbol{\omega} \\
 {}^{n+1}\boldsymbol{\kappa} - \lambda \mathbf{h}({}^{cross}\boldsymbol{\sigma}, {}^{cross}\mathbf{t}, {}^{cross}\boldsymbol{\kappa}) &= {}^n\boldsymbol{\kappa} \\
 F({}^{cross}\boldsymbol{\sigma}, {}^{cross}\mathbf{t}, {}^{cross}\boldsymbol{\kappa}) &= 0
 \end{aligned} \tag{104.492}$$

where ${}^n\boldsymbol{\sigma}$, ${}^n\mathbf{t}$, $\Delta\boldsymbol{\epsilon}$, $\Delta\boldsymbol{\omega}$, and ${}^n\boldsymbol{\kappa}$ are known, which represents the stress state, couple-stress state, total strain increment, and internal variables state in the previous step. The four unknowns are ${}^{n+1}\boldsymbol{\sigma}$, ${}^{n+1}\mathbf{t}$, ${}^{n+1}\boldsymbol{\kappa}$ and λ , which represents the stress state, internal variables state, and plastic multiplier in the current step.

Continuum Stiffness Tensor The explicit algorithm is derived by starting from the first order Taylor expansion about the starting point (σ_{ij}, t, κ) .

$$f^{new} = f^{old} + \frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} d\sigma_{ij} + \frac{\partial f}{\partial t_{kl}} dt_{kl} + \frac{\partial f}{\partial \kappa} d\kappa \tag{104.493}$$

Since both yield surface values should be zeroes, the Taylor expansion is simplified to

$$\begin{aligned}
 \frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} d\sigma_{ij} + \frac{\partial f}{\partial t_{kl}} dt_{kl} + \frac{\partial f}{\partial \kappa} d\kappa &= 0 \\
 \frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} (E_{ijkl} d\epsilon - E_{ijkl} d\lambda m_{kl}^s) + \frac{\partial f}{\partial t_{kl}} (C_{ijkl} d\omega - C_{ijkl} d\lambda m_{kl}^c) + \xi_* h_* d\lambda &= 0 \\
 d\lambda &= \frac{\frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} E_{ijkl} d\epsilon + \frac{\partial f}{\partial t_{kl}} C_{ijkl} d\omega}{\frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} E_{ijkl} m_{kl}^s + \frac{\partial f}{\partial t_{kl}} C_{ijkl} m_{kl}^c - \xi_* h_*}
 \end{aligned} \tag{104.494}$$

Simplify the $d\lambda$ expression by $n_{ij}^s = \frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}}$ and $n_{ij}^c = \frac{\partial f}{\partial t_{ij}}$. So we have

$$d\lambda = \frac{n_{ij}^s E_{ijkl} d\epsilon + n_{ij}^c C_{ijkl} d\omega}{n_{ij}^s E_{ijkl} m_{kl}^s + n_{ij}^c C_{ijkl} m_{kl}^c - \xi_* h_*} \tag{104.495}$$

104.6.16.7 Backward Euler, Implicit Algorithm

Forward Euler Algorithm uses the final stress state to calculate the plastic flow direction and the normal to the yield surface.

Iterations are required to find the final stress state.

Implicit Formulation The governing equations of the backward Euler, implicit algorithm

$$\begin{aligned}
 {}^{n+1}\boldsymbol{\sigma} + \lambda \mathbf{E} \mathbf{m}^s({}^{n+1}\boldsymbol{\sigma}, {}^{n+1}\mathbf{t}, {}^{n+1}\boldsymbol{\kappa}) &= {}^n\boldsymbol{\sigma} + \mathbf{E} \Delta \boldsymbol{\epsilon} \\
 {}^{n+1}\mathbf{t} + \lambda \mathbf{C} \mathbf{m}^c({}^{n+1}\boldsymbol{\sigma}, {}^{n+1}\mathbf{t}, {}^{n+1}\boldsymbol{\kappa}) &= {}^n\mathbf{t} + \mathbf{C} \Delta \boldsymbol{\omega} \\
 {}^{n+1}\boldsymbol{\kappa} - \lambda \mathbf{h}({}^{n+1}\boldsymbol{\sigma}, {}^{n+1}\mathbf{t}, {}^{n+1}\boldsymbol{\kappa}) &= {}^n\boldsymbol{\kappa} \\
 F({}^{n+1}\boldsymbol{\sigma}, {}^{n+1}\mathbf{t}, {}^{n+1}\boldsymbol{\kappa}) &= 0
 \end{aligned} \tag{104.496}$$

where ${}^n\boldsymbol{\sigma}$, ${}^n\mathbf{t}$, $\Delta \boldsymbol{\epsilon}$, $\Delta \boldsymbol{\omega}$, and ${}^n\boldsymbol{\kappa}$ are known, which represents the stress state, couple-stress state, total strain increment, and internal variables state in the previous step. The four unknowns are ${}^{n+1}\boldsymbol{\sigma}$, ${}^{n+1}\mathbf{t}$, ${}^{n+1}\boldsymbol{\kappa}$ and λ , which represents the stress state, internal variables state, and plastic multiplier in the current step.

Consistent Stiffness Tensor The consistent stiffness tensor for a Cosserat elastoplastic algorithm is extended from the classic elastoplastic algorithm Pérez-Foguet et al. (2001). The Jacobian of the backward algorithm can be written as

$${}^{n+1}\mathbf{J} = \begin{pmatrix} (\mathbf{I} + \lambda \mathbf{E} \frac{\partial \mathbf{m}^s}{\partial \boldsymbol{\sigma}}) & (\frac{\partial \boldsymbol{\sigma}}{\partial \mathbf{t}} + \lambda \mathbf{E} \frac{\partial \mathbf{m}^s}{\partial \mathbf{t}}) & \lambda \mathbf{E} \frac{\partial \mathbf{m}^s}{\partial \boldsymbol{\kappa}} & \mathbf{E} \mathbf{m}^s \\ (\frac{\partial \mathbf{t}}{\partial \boldsymbol{\sigma}} + \lambda \mathbf{C} \frac{\partial \mathbf{m}^c}{\partial \boldsymbol{\sigma}}) & (\mathbf{I} + \lambda \mathbf{C} \frac{\partial \mathbf{m}^c}{\partial \mathbf{t}}) & \lambda \mathbf{C} \frac{\partial \mathbf{m}^c}{\partial \boldsymbol{\kappa}} & \mathbf{C} \mathbf{m}^c \\ -\lambda \frac{\partial \mathbf{h}}{\partial \boldsymbol{\sigma}} & -\lambda \frac{\partial \mathbf{h}}{\partial \mathbf{t}} & (\mathbf{I} - \lambda \frac{\partial \mathbf{h}}{\partial \boldsymbol{\kappa}}) & -\mathbf{h} \\ \mathbf{n}_s^T & \mathbf{n}_c^T & \boldsymbol{\xi}^T & 0 \end{pmatrix} \tag{104.497}$$

104.6.17 Cosserat von-Mises Elastoplastic Model

Following the fundamental Cosserat elastoplastic material model defined above, an full Cosserat von-Mises plastic model is defined below.

104.6.17.1 Cosserat Plastic Model

Cosserat von-Mises Yield Surface :

$$f(\sigma, t) = \left(\frac{1}{2}s_{ij}s_{ij} + \frac{1}{2}s_{ij}s_{ji} + \frac{1}{2l_p^2}(t_{ij}t_{ij} + t_{ij}t_{ji}) \right)^{1/2} - \sqrt{\frac{2}{3}}k \quad (104.498)$$

The normal to the yield surface with respect to the force

$$\begin{aligned} n^f &= \frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma} \\ &= \frac{1}{2}(s_{ij} + s_{ji}) \left(\frac{1}{2}s_{ij}s_{ij} + \frac{1}{2}s_{ij}s_{ji} + \frac{1}{2l_p^2}(t_{ij}t_{ij} + t_{ij}t_{ji}) \right)^{-1/2} \end{aligned} \quad (104.499)$$

The normal to the yield surface with respect to the curvature

$$\begin{aligned} n^c &= \frac{\partial f}{\partial t} \\ &= \frac{1}{2l_p^2}(t_{ij} + t_{ji}) \left(\frac{1}{2}s_{ij}s_{ij} + \frac{1}{2}s_{ij}s_{ji} + \frac{1}{2l_p^2}(t_{ij}t_{ij} + t_{ij}t_{ji}) \right)^{-1/2} \end{aligned} \quad (104.500)$$

Plastic Flow :

$$\begin{aligned} m^f &= n^f \\ m^c &= n^c \end{aligned} \quad (104.501)$$

Hardening Law:

$$\bar{k} = Hm_{equiv} = H \left(\frac{1}{3}m_{ij}^f m_{ij}^f + \frac{1}{3}m_{ij}^f m_{ji}^f + \frac{1}{3}l_p^2(m_{ij}^c m_{ij}^c + m_{ij}^c m_{ji}^c) \right)^{0.5} \quad (104.502)$$

Calculation of $d\lambda$: The algorithm is derived by starting from the first order Taylor expansion about the starting point (σ_{ij}, t, κ) .

$$f^{new} = f^{old} + \frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} d\sigma_{ij} + \frac{\partial f}{\partial t_{kl}} dt_{kl} + \frac{\partial f}{\partial \kappa} d\kappa \quad (104.503)$$

Since both yield surface values should be zeros, the Taylor expansion is simplified to

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} d\sigma_{ij} + \frac{\partial f}{\partial t_{kl}} dt_{kl} + \frac{\partial f}{\partial \kappa} d\kappa &= 0 \\ \frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} (E_{ijkl} d\epsilon - E_{ijkl} d\lambda m_{kl}^s) + \frac{\partial f}{\partial t_{kl}} (C_{ijkl} d\omega - C_{ijkl} d\lambda m_{kl}^c) + \xi_* h_* d\lambda &= 0 \\ d\lambda &= \frac{\frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} E_{ijkl} d\epsilon + \frac{\partial f}{\partial t_{kl}} C_{ijkl} d\omega}{\frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} E_{ijkl} m_{kl}^s + \frac{\partial f}{\partial t_{kl}} C_{ijkl} m_{kl}^c - \xi_* h_*} \end{aligned} \quad (104.504)$$

Simplify the $d\lambda$ expression by $n_{ij}^s = \frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}}$ and $n_{ij}^c = \frac{\partial f}{\partial \tau_{ij}}$. So we have

$$d\lambda = \frac{n_{ij}^s E_{ijkl} d\epsilon + n_{ij}^c C_{ijkl} d\omega}{n_{ij}^s E_{ijkl} m_{kl}^s + n_{ij}^c C_{ijkl} m_{kl}^c - \xi_* h_*} \quad (104.505)$$

For this Cosserat von-Mises isotropic hardening case,

$$\xi_* = \frac{\partial f}{\partial k} = -\sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} \quad (104.506)$$

$$h_* = \bar{k} = H m_{equiv} \quad (104.507)$$

104.6.17.2 Analysis of Cosserat Elastoplastic Solids

For the elastoplastic analysis, a rectangular plate of 10 m width and 20 m height is horizontally fixed at one end while the other end is subjected to a given horizontal displacement. The geometry and boundary conditions used for the plate are shown in Fig.104.26. In addition, the upper left corner of the plate is vertically fixed. The elastic material constants are $\lambda = 20MPa$, $\mu = 10MPa$, $\chi = 0$, $\pi_1 = 10MN$, $\pi_2 = 0$, $\pi_3 = 1kN$, and the plastic constants are internal length $l_p = 1E - 6m$, von-Mises radius $k = 50kPa$, and hardening (softening) rate $H = -500kPa$. For the sake of comparison, the geometry, material properties and loadings used in this problem are the same as the ones used where classical elasticity is employed.

Fig.104.27 illustrates the plastic zone obtained for the problem when the classical and Cosserat theories with different discretization are used. As it is expected, the plastic zone obtained for the classical theory becomes narrowed as the discretization refines. In fact, the plastic zone is two elements wide for all discretization which shows the mesh-dependency of the results based on the classical theory. On the other hand, the plastic zone obtained for the Cosserat theory approximately remains the unchanged when discretization refines.

104.6.18 Accelerated Constitutive Models

One of the concerns of elastic-plastic analysis is the computational effort. In this section developed are closed form elastic-plastic stress increments and elastic-plastic tangent stiffness matrices for commonly used elastic-plastic models. This is achieved by multiplying, in closed form, explicit, forward Euler elastic-plastic stress incremental solution and explicit, tangent elastic-plastic stiffness tensor, as developed in section 104.3 on page 206.

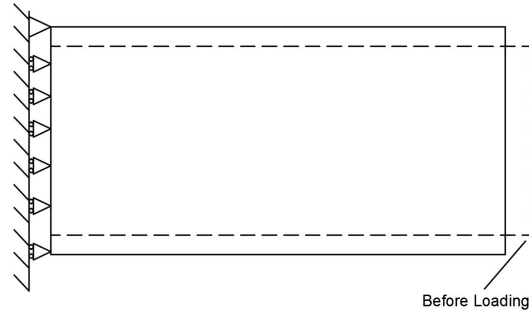


Figure 104.26: Loading Condition and Boundary Conditions of the Cosserat Elastoplastic Model.

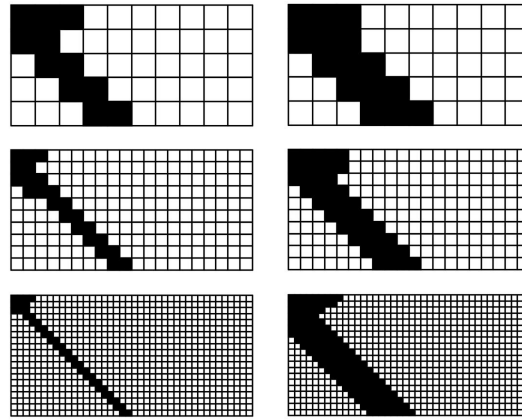


Figure 104.27: Comparison of the Plastic Zone of the Cosserat Elastoplastic Model. Left side is the classical elastoplastic material model, where the mesh refinement leads to localization of the plastic zone. Right side is the Cosserat elastoplastic material model, where the plastic zone is independent of the mesh sizes.

Relation between stress increment $d\sigma_{ij}$ and strain increments $d\epsilon_{kl}$ can be written for linear isotropic elasticity as:

$$d\sigma_{ij} = E_{ijkl}d\epsilon_{kl} \quad (104.508)$$

where E_{ijkl} is the fourth order elastic stiffness tensor. The elastic stiffness tensor features both minor symmetry $E_{ijkl} = E_{jikl} = E_{ijlk}$ and major symmetry $E_{ijkl} = E_{klij}$ (Jeremić and Sture (1997)). The elastic stiffness tensor for isotropic material can be written as:

$$E_{ijkl} = \lambda\delta_{ij}\delta_{kl} + \mu(\delta_{ik}\delta_{jl} + \delta_{il}\delta_{jk}) \quad (104.509)$$

where λ and μ are the Lamé constants and E and ν are Young's Modulus and Poisson's ratio, respectively:

$$\lambda = \frac{\nu E}{(1 + \nu)(1 - 2\nu)} \quad ; \quad \mu = \frac{E}{2(1 + \nu)} \quad (104.510)$$

The relation between the stress tensor increment $d\sigma_{ij}$ and strain tensor increment $d\epsilon_{kl}$ is:

$$d\epsilon_{kl} = D_{klpq} d\sigma_{pq} \quad (104.511)$$

where D_{klpq} is the elastic compliance fourth order tensor, defined as:

$$D_{klpq} = \frac{-\lambda}{2\mu(3\lambda + 2\mu)} \delta_{kl}\delta_{pq} + \frac{1}{4\mu} (\delta_{kp}\delta_{lq} + \delta_{kq}\delta_{lp}) \quad (104.512)$$

104.6.18.1 Elasto-plasticity

Using developments from section 104.3 on page 206, one can write

$$d\sigma_{ij} = E_{ijkl} d\epsilon_{kl}^e \quad (104.513)$$

$$d\epsilon_{ij}^p = d\lambda \frac{\partial Q}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} = d\lambda m_{ij}(\sigma_{ij}, q) \quad (104.514)$$

$$d\epsilon_{ij} = d\epsilon_{ij}^e + d\epsilon_{ij}^p \quad (104.515)$$

$$dq_* = d\lambda h(\tau_{ij}, q) \quad (104.516)$$

where, ϵ_{ij} , ϵ_{ij}^e , and ϵ_{ij}^p are total, elastic, and plastic strain tensors respectively, σ_{ij} is stress tensor, and q_* represents internal variables. Moreover, m_{ij} is the plastic flow direction, h is the plastic moduli, and $d\lambda$ is a plastic consistency parameter that is to be determined. Equation (104.513) is the Hooke's law that relates stress to elastic strain using the stiffness tensor E_{ijkl} . Equation (104.514) shows relations of plastic strains to the associated or non-associated plastic flow rule. Equation (104.515) represents the additive decomposition of strain increment into elastic strain increment and plastic strain increments, that is applicable for small deformation analysis. Equation (104.516) represents evolution law for internal variables.

104.6.18.2 Elastic-Plastic Constitutive Models

For each elastic-plastic constitutive model, there are four components to be specified. Those components are (a) elasticity relation, (b) yield function, (c) plastic flow function, and (d) hardening and/or softening laws.

Once those four components are chosen, specified, elastic-plastic stiffness tensor, developed earlier in section 104.3 on page 206, can be developed for each model, by analytically multiplying functions and tensor equations for each component. In following sections this is done for von Mises, Drucker-Prager, and Cam-Clay material models.

The tangent elastic-plastic tensor is written as

$$E_{pqmn}^{el-pl} = E_{pqmn} - \frac{E_{pqkl} n_{kl} n_{ij} E_{ijmn}}{n_{ot} E_{otrs} n_{rs} - \xi_* h_*} \quad (104.517)$$

For perfectly plastic materials ξ_* and h_* would be zero while for the cases with evolution laws, the appropriate evolution laws should be used in derivation of tangent stiffness E_{pqmn}^{el-pl} . Elastic modulus tensor is written as:

$$E_{ijkl} = \lambda \delta_{ij} \delta_{kl} + \mu (\delta_{ik} \delta_{jl} + \delta_{il} \delta_{jk}) \quad (104.518)$$

where $\lambda = \nu E / (1 + \nu)(1 - 2\nu)$, $\mu = E / 2(1 + \nu)$.

104.6.18.3 von Mises Model

von Mises yield criteria can be written as

$$f = [(s_{ij} - \alpha_{ij})(s_{ij} - \alpha_{ij})]^{0.5} - \sqrt{\frac{3}{2}} k = 0 \quad (104.519)$$

where k is the scalar internal variable where initial value is related to the uniaxial tension strength, α_{ij} is the tensorial internal variable, the so called back stress that controls translational kinematic hardening.

The stress derivative of the yield function is

$$n_{ij} = \frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{(s_{ij} - \alpha_{ij})(s_{ij} - \alpha_{ij})}} (s_{ij} - \alpha_{ij}) \quad (104.520)$$

In case of associated plastic flow rule where the plastic potential function is considered to be the same of yield function, stress derivative of plastic flow function is:

$$m_{ij} = \frac{\partial g}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{(s_{ij} - \alpha_{ij})(s_{ij} - \alpha_{ij})}} (s_{ij} - \alpha_{ij}) \quad (104.521)$$

In order to find the closed form equation for elastic-plastic modulus for case of perfectly-plastic, Equation (104.519) is used for both yield surface and plastic potential and no evolution law is considered. Relevant stress derivatives are:

$$n_{ij} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{s_{ij}s_{ij}}} s_{ij} \quad ; \quad m_{ij} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{s_{ij}s_{ij}}} s_{ij} \quad (104.522)$$

Base on obtained stress derivatives, plastic consistency parameter is derived as

$$d\lambda = \frac{n_{ij}E_{ijpq}d\epsilon_{pq}}{n_{ij}E_{ijkl}m_{kl}} = \frac{n_{ij}d\sigma_{ij}}{2\mu} \quad (104.523)$$

The elastic-plastic tangent tensor is then

$$\begin{aligned} E_{pqmn}^{pl} &= \frac{E_{pqkl}n_{kl}m_{ij}E_{ijmn}}{n_{ab}E_{abcd}m_{cd}} = 2\mu n_{pq}n_{mn} \\ &= 2\mu \frac{1}{\sqrt{s_{kl}s_{kl}}} s_{pq} \frac{1}{\sqrt{s_{ij}s_{ij}}} s_{mn} = 2\mu \frac{1}{s_{kl}s_{kl}} s_{pq}s_{mn} \end{aligned} \quad (104.524)$$

In case isotropic hardening, ξ and h are not zero anymore, since k is scalar internal variable that is updated in each increment. Hardening/softening functions, scalar functions in this case. ξ and h can be calculated as

$$\xi = -\sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} \quad (104.525)$$

$$h = \sqrt{\frac{2}{3} m_{ij}m_{ij}k} = \sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} k \quad (104.526)$$

Therefore, plastic parameter ($d\lambda$) and tangent elastic-plastic tensor (E_{pqmn}^{pl}) can be written as:

$$d\lambda = \frac{n_{ij}E_{ijpq}d\epsilon_{pq}}{n_{ij}E_{ijkl}m_{kl} - \xi h} = \frac{n_{ij}d\sigma_{ij}}{2\mu + \frac{2}{3}k} \quad (104.527)$$

$$\begin{aligned} E_{pqmn}^{pl} &= \frac{E_{pqkl}n_{kl}m_{ij}E_{ijmn}}{n_{ab}E_{abcd}m_{cd} - \xi h} = \frac{4\mu^2 n_{pq}n_{mn}}{2\mu + \frac{2}{3}k} \\ &= \frac{4\mu^2 \frac{1}{\sqrt{s_{kl}s_{kl}}} s_{pq} \frac{1}{\sqrt{s_{ij}s_{ij}}} s_{mn}}{2\mu - \frac{2}{3}k} = \frac{4\mu^2 \frac{1}{s_{kl}s_{kl}} s_{pq}s_{mn}}{2\mu + \frac{2}{3}k} \end{aligned} \quad (104.528)$$

The value of k should be updated at each step using the following equation:

$$k^{updated} = k + dk = k + h d\lambda = k + \sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} k d\lambda = k(1 + \sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} d\lambda) \quad (104.529)$$

For case the of von Mises with kinematic hardening, α_{ij} is the tensorial internal variable to be updated at each step of analysis, while tensor functions ξ_{ab} and h_{ab} can be calculated from the following equations using Armstrong-Frederick saturation-type kinematic hardening rule (Armstrong and Frederick (1966); Lemaitre and Chaboche (1990)) :

$$\xi_{ab} = \frac{\partial F}{\partial \alpha_{ab}} = -\frac{1}{\sqrt{(s_{ab} - \alpha_{ab})(s_{ab} - \alpha_{ab})}}(s_{ab} - \alpha_{ab}) \quad (104.530)$$

Recall that $dq_{ij} = d\alpha_{ij} = d\lambda h_{ij}$, and $d\epsilon_{ij}^{pl} = d\lambda m_{ij}$ and that the Armstrong-Frederic kinematic hardening rule for the internal variable α_{ij} is given as:

$$d\alpha_{ij} = \frac{2}{3} h_a \left(d\epsilon_{ij}^p \right)^{dev} - c_r \alpha_{ij} \sqrt{\frac{2}{3} \left(d\epsilon_{st}^p \right)^{dev} \left(d\epsilon_{st}^p \right)^{dev}} \quad (104.531)$$

so that

$$h_{st} = \frac{2}{3} h_a m_{st} - \alpha_{st} c_r \sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} \quad (104.532)$$

since $\sqrt{m_{ij} m_{ij}} = 1$.

Plastic consistency parameter ($d\lambda$) and tangent elastic-plastic tensor (E_{pqmn}^{pl}) can be expressed as:

$$d\lambda = \frac{n_{ij} E_{ijpq} d\epsilon_{pq}}{n_{ij} E_{ijkl} m_{kl} - \xi h} = \frac{n_{ij} d\sigma_{ij}}{2\mu - \xi_{ab} h_{ab}} \quad (104.533)$$

$$E_{pqmn}^{pl} = \frac{E_{pqkl} n_{kl} m_{ij} E_{ijmn}}{n_{ab} E_{abcd} m_{cd} - \xi h} = \frac{4\mu^2 n_{pq} n_{mn}}{2\mu - \xi_{ij} h_{ij}} \quad (104.534)$$

Full, developed form of tangent elastic-plastic stiffness can be written as

$$E_{pqmn}^{pl} = \frac{E_{pqkl} \left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{(s_{ab} - \alpha_{ab})(s_{ab} - \alpha_{ab})}} (s_{kl} - \alpha_{kl}) \right) \left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{(s_{ab} - \alpha_{ab})(s_{ab} - \alpha_{ab})}} (s_{ij} - \alpha_{ij}) \right) E_{ijmn}}{\left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{(s_{mn} - \alpha_{mn})(s_{mn} - \alpha_{mn})}} (s_{ab} - \alpha_{ab}) \right) E_{abcd} \left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{(s_{mn} - \alpha_{mn})(s_{mn} - \alpha_{mn})}} (s_{cd} - \alpha_{cd}) \right) - \left(-\frac{1}{\sqrt{(s_{ab} - \alpha_{ab})(s_{ab} - \alpha_{ab})}} (s_{rs} - \alpha_{rs}) \right) \left(\frac{2}{3} h_a m_{ab} - \frac{2}{3} \alpha_{rs} c_r \right)} \quad (104.535)$$

Above equation can be simplified, written in a shorter form by using a substitution

$$\mathbb{A} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{(s_{ab} - \alpha_{ab})(s_{ab} - \alpha_{ab})}} \quad (104.536)$$

it can be written as:

$$E_{pqmn}^{pl} = \frac{E_{pqkl} (\mathbb{A} (s_{kl} - \alpha_{kl})) (\mathbb{A} (s_{ij} - \alpha_{ij})) E_{ijmn}}{(\mathbb{A} (s_{ab} - \alpha_{ab})) E_{abcd} (\mathbb{A} (s_{ab} - \alpha_{ab})) - (-\mathbb{A}) \left(\frac{2}{3} h_a (\mathbb{A} (s_{cd} - \alpha_{cd})) - \sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} \alpha_{cd} c_r \right) (s_{cd} - \alpha_{cd})} \quad (104.537)$$

Finally the full elastic-plastic tangent stiffness tensor can be written as:

$$\begin{aligned} E_{pqmn}^{el-pl} &= \\ E_{pqmn}^{el} - E_{pqmn}^{pl} &= \\ E_{pqmn}^{el} - \frac{E_{pqkl} (\mathbb{A} (s_{kl} - \alpha_{kl})) (\mathbb{A} (s_{ij} - \alpha_{ij})) E_{ijmn}}{(\mathbb{A} (s_{ab} - \alpha_{ab})) E_{abcd} (\mathbb{A} (s_{cd} - \alpha_{cd})) - (-\mathbb{A}) \left(\frac{2}{3} h_a (\mathbb{A} (s_{cd} - \alpha_{cd})) - \sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} \alpha_{cd} c_r \right) (s_{cd} - \alpha_{cd})} & \end{aligned} \quad (104.538)$$

104.6.18.4 Nonlinear Elastic Model in 1D based on Armstrong Frederick Equation

$$d\sigma_{ij} = d\alpha_{ij} = \frac{2}{3} h_a \left(d\epsilon_{ij}^p \right)^{dev} - c_r \sigma_{ij} \sqrt{\frac{2}{3} \left(d\epsilon_{st}^p \right)^{dev} \left(d\epsilon_{st}^p \right)^{dev}} \quad (104.539)$$

104.6.18.5 Drucker-Prager Model

Drucker-Prager model yield surface, including rotational kinematic hardening can be written as

$$f = \alpha I_1 + \left[\frac{1}{2} (s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij})(s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij}) \right]^{\frac{1}{2}} - \beta = 0 \quad (104.540)$$

where α and β are material constants.

By coinciding Drucker-Prager cone with the outer apexes of the Mohr-Coulomb hexagon locus, the constants for compressive cone of Drucker-Prager can be evaluated as shown in Equation (104.541) by knowing the soil strength parameters of cohesion (c) and friction angle (ϕ):

$$\alpha = \frac{2 \sin \phi}{\sqrt{3}(3 - \sin \phi)}, \quad \beta = \frac{6 \cos \phi}{\sqrt{3}(3 - \sin \phi)} c \quad (104.541)$$

Drucker-Prager yield function for cohesionless sands ($k = 0$) can be obtained as:

$$f = \alpha I_1 + \sqrt{J_2} = 0 \quad (104.542)$$

or in $p - q$ space:

$$f = q - Mp = 0 \quad (104.543)$$

which then M can be obtained as:

$$M = \frac{6 \sin \phi}{3 - \sin \phi} \quad (104.544)$$

By considering kinematic hardening, Equation (104.543) can be expressed as:

$$f = [(s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij})(s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij})]^{0.5} - \sqrt{\frac{2}{3}}kp = 0 \quad (104.545)$$

which then stress derivative of yield function and plastic potential function in case of associated plasticity can be defined as:

$$\begin{aligned} n_{ij} &= m_{ij} = \frac{\partial f}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} = \frac{\partial g}{\partial \sigma_{ij}} \\ &= \left[(s_{ij} - p\alpha_{ij}) + \frac{1}{3}\alpha_{pq}\delta_{ij}(s_{pq} - p\alpha_{pq}) \right] [(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})(s_{rs} - p\alpha_{rs})]^{-0.5} \\ &\quad + \sqrt{\frac{2}{27}}k\delta_{ij} \end{aligned} \quad (104.546)$$

To find the closed form equation of elastic-plastic modulus for case of perfectly-plastic, Equation (104.545) is used for associated plasticity rule with no hardening. By these assumptions stress derivative is calculated as:

$$n_{ij} = m_{ij} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{s_{ij}s_{ij}}}s_{ij} + \sqrt{\frac{2}{27}}k\delta_{ij} \quad (104.547)$$

Splitting plastic modulus to different parts:

$$\begin{aligned} Hq_{ij} &= E_{ijkl}m_{kl} = \{\lambda\delta_{ij}\delta_{kk} + \mu(\delta_{ik}\delta_{jl} + \delta_{il}\delta_{jk})\} \left\{ \frac{1}{\sqrt{s_{mn}s_{mn}}}s_{kl} + \sqrt{\frac{2}{27}}k\delta_{kl} \right\} \\ &= 2\mu \frac{1}{\sqrt{s_{mn}s_{mn}}}s_{ij} + \delta_{ij} \left\{ \frac{1}{\sqrt{s_{mn}s_{mn}}} \lambda(s_{pq}\delta_{pq}) + \sqrt{\frac{2}{27}}k(3\lambda + 2\mu) \right\} \\ &= 2\mu \frac{1}{\sqrt{s_{mn}s_{mn}}}s_{ij} + B\delta_{ij} \end{aligned} \quad (104.548)$$